













Q. o. angl.

394 ib - 2 Spenser





THE  
WORKS OF EDMUND SPENSER  
IN FIVE VOLUMES  
VOL. II.



<36640378960010

<36640378960010

Bayer. Staatsbibliothek



THE  
WORKS OF  
HOMER

IN FIVE VOLUMES

VOLUME II

THE  
ILLIAD



THE WORKS OF

dmund penser

EDITED BY

J. PAYNE COLLIER, F.S.A.

VOL. II.



LONDON

BELL AND DALDY FLEET STREET

1862



THE WORKS OF

1792



1792



EDITED BY

J. PAVAN COLLEGE, F.R.S.

VOL. II.



LONDON

PRINTED AND SOLD BY J. PAVAN, COLLEGE, F.R.S.

1792



# CONTENTS.

## VOL. II.

### BOOK I.

#### THE LEGEND OF THE KNIGHT OF THE RED CROSSE ; OR OF HOLINESSE :—

|                    | Page |
|--------------------|------|
| Canto ix. . . . .  | I    |
| Canto x. . . . .   | 22   |
| Canto xi. . . . .  | 47   |
| Canto xii. . . . . | 67   |

### BOOK II.

|                                                    |     |
|----------------------------------------------------|-----|
| THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON, OR OF TEMPERAUNCE . . . . | 83  |
| Canto i. . . . .                                   | 86  |
| Canto ii. . . . .                                  | 108 |
| Canto iii. . . . .                                 | 125 |
| Canto iv. . . . .                                  | 142 |
| Canto v. . . . .                                   | 158 |
| Canto vi. . . . .                                  | 173 |
| Canto vii. . . . .                                 | 193 |
| Canto viii. . . . .                                | 216 |
| Canto ix. . . . .                                  | 238 |
| Canto x. . . . .                                   | 260 |
| Canto xi. . . . .                                  | 287 |
| Canto xii. . . . .                                 | 304 |

### BOOK III.

|                                                   |     |
|---------------------------------------------------|-----|
| THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS, OR OF CHASTITY . . . . | 335 |
| Canto i. . . . .                                  | 338 |
| Canto ii. . . . .                                 | 362 |



|                     | Page |
|---------------------|------|
| Canto III. . . . .  | 382  |
| Canto IV. . . . .   | 404  |
| Canto V. . . . .    | 426  |
| Canto VI. . . . .   | 445  |
| Canto VII. . . . .  | 464  |
| Canto VIII. . . . . | 486  |





THE FIRST BOOK OF  
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF THE KNIGHT OF  
THE RED CROSSE, OR OF HOLINESSE.

CANTO IX.

*His loves and lignage Arthure tells :  
The knights knitt friendly hands :<sup>a</sup>  
Sir Trevisan flies from Despeyre,  
Whom Redcros knight withstands.*

I.



emprize,

! GOODLY golden chayne, where-  
with yfere<sup>b</sup>  
The vertues linked are in lovely  
wize ;  
And noble mindes of yore allyed  
were,  
In brave poursuitt of chevalrous

<sup>a</sup> *The knights knitt friendly hands.*] So the edit. 1590 ; but subsequently "hands" was corrupted to *bands*, and so Todd and others have printed. That "hands" is right, we have the evidence of Spenser himself, in St. 18 of this Canto, where it is said,

"And eke, as pledges firme, right *hands* together joynd." C.

<sup>b</sup> *wherewith yfere.*] *In company, together.* Used by Chaucer and G.



That none did others safety despize,  
 Nor aid envy to him in need that stands;  
 But friendly each did others praise devize,  
 How to advance with favourable hands,  
 As this good Prince redeemed the Redcrosse knight from  
 bands.

## 2.

Who when their powres, empayrd through labor long,  
 With dew repast they had recured well,  
 And that weake captive wight now waxed strong,  
 Them list no longer there at leisure dwell,  
 But forward fare as their adventures fell:  
 But, ere they parted, Una faire besought  
 That stranger knight his name and nation tell;  
 Least so great good, as he for her had wrought,  
 Should die unknown, and buried be in thankless  
 thought.

## 3.

“Faire virgin,” (said the Prince,) “ye me require  
 A thing without the compass of my witt;  
 For both the lineage, and the certain Sire,<sup>c</sup>  
 From which I sprang, from mee are hidden yitt;  
 For all so soone as life did me admitt  
 Into this world, and shewed heavens light,  
 From mother’s pap I taken was unfitt,  
 And freight deliver’d to a Fairy knight,  
 To be upbrought in gentle thewes<sup>d</sup> and martiall might.

---

Douglas. See also *F. Q.* ii. i. 35; ii. ix. 2; iii. vii. 48, &c. So *in fere*, in company. UPTON. In the fifth line of this Stanza “safety” is, as in many other places and poets, a trisyllable. In the next line “envy” must, as then usual, be accented on the second syllable. C.

<sup>c</sup> *and the certain Sire.*] A singular instance of a modern compositor’s confusion of the long *s* and *f*: Todd printed *fire* for “Sire;” but in this mistake he has not been followed. C.

<sup>d</sup> *To be upbrought in gentle thewes.*] In gentle endowments, qualifications, or habits. C.



4.

“Unto old Timon he me brought bylive;<sup>e</sup>  
 Old Timon, who in youthly yeares hath beene  
 In warlike feates th’ expertest man alive,  
 And is the wifest now on earth I weene:  
 His dwelling is low in a valley greene,  
 Under the foot of Rauran<sup>f</sup> mossy hore,  
 From whence the river Dee, as silver cleene,  
 His tombling billowes rolls with gentle rore;  
 There all my daies he trained mee up in vertuous lore.

5.

“Thether the great magicien Merlin came,  
 As was his use, oftentimes to visit me;  
 For he had charge my discipline to frame,  
 And Tutors nouriture to oversee.  
 Him oft and oft I askt in privy,  
 Of what loines and what lignage I did spring;  
 Whose aunswere bad me still assured bee,  
 That I was sonne and heire unto a king,  
 As time in her just term the truth to light should bring.”

6.

“Well worthy impe,” said then the Lady gent,  
 “And Pupil fitt for such a tutors hand!  
 But what adventure, or what high intent,  
 Hath brought you hether into Fary land,  
 Aread, Prince Arthure,<sup>g</sup> crowne of Martiall band?”

---

<sup>e</sup> *he me brought bylive.*] Quickly, speedily. “Bylive,” or *belive*, generally means with activity. C.

<sup>f</sup> *Under the foot of Rauran.*] In Selden’s illustration of “Dinas Emris,” where Merlin prophesied, he adds, “*Rauran-Vaur* hill is there by in Merioneth: whence the origin of that fiction of the Muses best pupil, the noble Spenser, in supposing Merlin usually to visit his old Timon, whose dwelling he places *low in a valley greene, under the foot of RAURAN, &c.*” Drayton’s “Polyolb.” Song X. Illustr. TODD.

<sup>g</sup> *Aread, Prince Arthure.*] Arthur and Una have been hitherto represented as entire strangers to each other; and it does not appear how Una became acquainted with the name of this new knight. T. WARTON.



“ Full hard it is,” (qd. he) “ to read aright  
 The course of heavenly cause, or understand  
 The secret meaning of th’ eternall might,  
 That rules mens waies, and rules the thoughts of living  
 wight.

7.

“ For whether he, through fatal deepe foresight,  
 Me hither sent for cause to me unghost;  
 Or that fresh bleeding wound, which day and night  
 Whilome doth rancle in my riven brest,  
 With forced fury following his behest,  
 Me hether brought by wayes yet never found,  
 You to have helpt I hold my selfe yet blest.”

“ Ah! courteous Knight,” (quoth she) “ what secret  
 wound

Could ever find to grieve the gentlest hart on ground?”

8.

“ Dear Dame,” (quoth he) “ you sleeping sparkes awake,  
 Which, troubled once, into huge flames will grow;  
 Ne ever will their fervent fury flake,  
 Till living moysture into smoke do flow,  
 And wasted life doe lye in ashes low:  
 Yet sithens silence lesseneth not my fire,  
 But, told, it flames; and, hidden, it does glow;  
 I will revele what ye so much desire.

Ah, Love! lay down thy bow, the whiles I may  
 respyre.

9.

“ It was in freshest flowre of youthly yeares,  
 When corage first does creepe in manly chest,  
 Then first that cole<sup>h</sup> of kindly heat appears  
 To kindle love in every living brest:

---

<sup>h</sup> *Then first that cole.*] The second and all the later editions read “*the cole.*” But “*that cole*” alludes to the *sleeping sparkes* in the preceding Stanza. CHURCH.



But me had warnd old Timons wife beheft,<sup>i</sup>  
 Those creeping flames by reason to subdew,  
 Before their rage grew to so great unrest,  
 As miserable lovers use to rew,  
 Which still wex old in woe, whiles wo still wexeth new.

10.

“That ydle name of love, and lovers life,  
 As losse of time, and vertues enemy,  
 I ever scorn’d, and joyd to stirre up strife,  
 In middest of their mournfull Tragedy;  
 Ay wont to laugh when them I heard to cry,  
 And blow the fire which them to ashes brent:  
 Their God himselfe, grievd at my libertie,  
 Shott many a dart at me with fiers intent;  
 But I them warded all with wary government.

11.

“But all in vaine: no fort can be so strong,  
 Ne fleshly brest can armed be so fownd,  
 But will at last be wonne with battrie long,  
 Or unawares at disadvantage fownd.  
 Nothing is sure that growes on earthly grownd;  
 And who most trustes in arme of fleshly might,  
 And boastes in beauties chaine not to be bownd,  
 Doth soonest fall in disaventrous fight,  
 And yeeldes his caytive neck to victours most despight.

12.

“Ensamble make of him your haplesse joy,  
 And of my selfe now mated, as ye see;<sup>k</sup>  
 Whose prouder vaunt that proud avenging boy

<sup>i</sup> *old Timons wife beheft.*] The first edition reads *Cleons*. Spenser [seems to have] doubted whether to take the name of Prince Arthur’s tutor from *glory*, or from *honour*. But he corrected *Cleons* among the errors of the press. UPTON.

<sup>k</sup> *now mated, as ye see.*] To “mate” of old meant to *confound*, or *destroy*, and examples of its use in this sense are innumerable. C.



Did soone pluck downe, and curbd my libertee.  
 For on a day, prickt forth with jollitee  
 Of looser life and heat of hardiment,  
 Raunging the forest wide on courser free,  
 The fields, the floods, the heavens, with one consent,  
 Did seeme to laugh on me,<sup>1</sup> and favour mine intent.

13.

“Forwearied with my sportes,<sup>m</sup> I did alight  
 From loftie steed, and downe to sleepe me layd :  
 The verdant gras my couch did goodly dight,  
 And pillow was my helmet fayre displayd ;  
 Whiles every sence the humour sweet embayd,  
 And flombring soft my hart did steale away,  
 Me seemed, by my side a royall Mayd  
 Her daintie limbes full softly down did lay :  
 So fayre a creature yet saw never funny day.

14.

“Most goodly glee and lovely blandishment  
 She to me made, and badd me love her deare ;  
 For dearely sure her love was to me bent,  
 As, when just time expired, should appeare.  
 But whether dreames delude, or true it were,  
 Was never hart so ravisht with delight,  
 Ne living man like wordes did ever heare,  
 As she to me delivered all that night ;  
 And at her parting said, She Queene of Faries hight.”<sup>n</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Did seeme to laugh on me.*] The text of the first edition is “at me ;” but it is corrected to “on me” among the errata at the end. C.

<sup>m</sup> *Forwearied with my sportes.*] *Forwearied* in the edit. 1611, which is, doubtless, right ; the meaning being, that he was *over-wearied*. Church and Todd tell us that the edits. of 1751 and 1758 read “For wearied ;” but how strange it is that they should not have known that the 4to. 1590 has precisely the same text. C.

<sup>n</sup> *She Queene of Faries hight.*] She was *called* the Queen of Fairies. Nothing can well be more common than this use of the word. C.



15.

“ When I awoke, and found her place devoyd,  
 And nought but pressed gras where she had lyen,  
 I sorrowed all so much as earst I joyd,  
 And washed all her place with watry eyen.  
 From that day forth I lov'd that face divyne;  
 From that day forth I cast in carefull mynd,  
 To seek her out with labor and long tyne,  
 And never vowd to rest<sup>o</sup> till her I fynd:  
 Nyne monethes I seek in vain, yet ni'll that vow un-  
 bynd.”<sup>p</sup>

16.

Thus as he spake, his visage waxed pale,  
 And chaunge of hew great passion did bewray;  
 Yett still he strove to cloke his inward bale,  
 And hide the smoke that did his fire display,  
 Till gentle Una thus to him gan say:  
 “ O happy Queene of Faries! that hast fownd,  
 Mongst many, one that with his prowesse may  
 Defend thine honour, and thy foes confownd.  
 True loves are often sown, but seldom grow on grownd.”

17.

“ Thine, O! then,” said the gentle Redcrosse knight,  
 “ Next to that Ladies love, shalbe the place,  
 O fayrest virgin! full of heavenly light,  
 Whose wondrous faith, exceeding earthly race,  
 Was firmeest fixt in myne extremest case.  
 And you, my Lord, the Patrone of my life,  
 Of that great Queene may well gaine worthie grace;

<sup>o</sup> *And never vowd to rest.*] Impressions after the first put “vowd” in the present tense. There can surely be no doubt about the meaning, which Church and Todd thought it necessary to explain. C.

<sup>p</sup> *yet ni'll that vow unbynd.*] It was unusual of old to print *ne will* with an apostrophe, but we give it as in the 4to. 1590: properly it ought to be *n'ill*, the letters omitted being *e* and *w*. On page 224 of vol. i. we have seen “nill” printed without the apostrophe. C.



For onely worthie you through prowes priefe,  
Yf living man mote worthie be to be her lief<sup>e</sup>.<sup>q</sup>

18.

So diversly discourfing of their loves,  
The golden Sunne his gliftring head gan fhew,  
And fad remembraunce now the Prince amoves  
With fresh defire his voyage to purfew;  
Als Una earnd her traveill to renew.  
Then thofe two knights, faft friendship for to bynd,  
And love eftablifh each to other trew,  
Gave goodly gifts, the fignes of gratefull mynd,  
And eke, as pledges firme, right hands together joynd.

19.

Prince Arthur gave a boxe of Diamond fure,  
Embowd with gold and gorgeous ornament,  
Wherein were clofd few drops of liquor pure,  
Of wondrous worth, and vertue excellent,  
That any wovnd could heale incontinent.  
Which to requite, the Redcroffe knight him gave  
A booke, wherein this Saveours testament  
Was writt with golden letters rich and brave:  
A worke of wondrous grace, and hable foules to fave.

20.

Thus beene they parted; Arthur on his way  
To feeke his love, and th' other for to fight  
With Unaes foe, that all her realme did pray.  
But fhe, now weighing the decayed plight  
And fhrunken fynewes of her chofen knight,  
Would not a while her forward courfe purfew,  
Ne bring him forth in face of dreadfull fight,  
Till he recovered had his former hew;  
For him to be yet weake and wearie well fhe knew.

---

<sup>q</sup> *to be her lief.*] To be her *dear*: A. S. *Leof*. In the preceding line we again meet with "priefe" for *proof*. C.



## 21.

So as they traveild, lo ! they gan espy  
 An armed knight towards them gallop fast,  
 That seemed from some feared foe to fly,  
 Or other grievly thing that him aghast.  
 Still as he fledd his eye was backward cast,  
 As if his feare<sup>r</sup> still followed him behynd :  
 Als flew his steed as he his bandes had braft,  
 And with his winged heeles did tread the wynd,  
 As he had been a fole of Pegafus his kynd.

## 22.

Nigh as he drew, they might perceive his head  
 To be unarmd, and curld uncombed heares  
 Upstaring stiffe, dismaid with uncouth dread :  
 Nor drop of blood in all his face appeares,  
 Nor life in limbe ; and, to increase his feares,  
 In fowle reproch of knighthoodes fayre degree,  
 About his neck an hempen rope he weares,  
 That with his glistring armes does ill agree ;  
 But he of rope or armes has now no memoree.

## 23.

The Redcrosse knight toward him crossed fast,  
 To weet what mister wight<sup>s</sup> was so dismayd.  
 There him he findes all sencelesse and aghast,  
 That of him selfe he seemd to be afrayd ;  
 Whom hardly he from flying forward stayd,  
 Till he these wordes to him deliver might :  
 “ Sir knight, aread who hath ye thus arayd,  
 And eke from whom make ye this hasty flight ?  
 For never knight I saw in such misseeming plight.”

<sup>r</sup> *As if his feare.*] i. e. as if what he feared : it was so usual with our old writers to use “ fear,” for the object feared, that it is needless to cite instances. C.

<sup>s</sup> *To weet what mister wight.*] To learn *what manner* of person, &c. So Chaucer, p. 14. ed. Urr.

“ But tellith me what *mister* men ye ben.” CHURCH.



24.

He answerd nought at all ; but adding new  
 Feare to his first amazment, staring wyde  
 With stony eyes and hartlesse hollow hew,  
 Astonisht stood, as one that had aspyde  
 Infernall furies with their chaines untyde.  
 Him yett againe, and yett againe, bespake  
 The gentle knight ; who nought to him replyde ;  
 But, trembling every joynt, did inly quake,  
 And foltring tongue, at last, these words seemd forth to  
 shake ;

25.

“ For Gods deare love, Sir knight, doe me not stay ;  
 For loe ! he comes, he comes fast after mee.”  
 Eft looking back<sup>t</sup> would faine have runne away ;  
 But he him forst to stay, and tellen free  
 The secrete cause of his perplexitie :  
 Yet nathemore<sup>u</sup> by his bold hartie speach  
 Could his blood frosen hart emboldened bee,  
 But through his boldnes rather feare did reach ;  
 Yett, forst, at last he made through silence suddein breach.

26.

“ And am I now in safetie sure,” (quoth he)  
 “ From him that would have forced me to dye ?  
 And is the point of death now turnd fro mee,  
 That I may tell this haplesse history ?”  
 “ Fear nought,” (quoth he) “ no daunger now is nye.”  
 “ Then shall I you recount a ruefull cace,”  
 (Said he) “ the which with this unlucky eye  
 I late beheld ; and, had not greater grace  
 Me reft from it, had bene partaker of the place.

<sup>t</sup> *Eft looking back.*] Is *aft*, or *afterwards*—looking back after he had spoken : it may be taken in the sense of *again*. C.

<sup>u</sup> *Yet nathemore.*] *Not the more*. In the same manner *nathelesse*, for *nevertheless*, is extended to three syllables, in the fifty-fourth Stanza. *Nathless* frequently occurs in Chaucer, as well as in Spenser. TODD.



27.

“I lately chaunst (Would I had never chaunst !)  
 With a fayre knight to keepen companee,  
 Sir Terwin hight, that well himselfe advaunst  
 In all affayres, and was both bold and free ;  
 But not so happy as mote happy bee :  
 He lov'd, as was his lot, a Lady gent,  
 That him againe lov'd in the least degree ;  
 For she was proud, and of too high intent,  
 And joyd to see her lover languish and lament :

28.

“From whom retourning sad and comfortlesse,  
 As on the way together we did fare,  
 We met that villen, (God from him me blesse !)  
 That cursed wight, from whom I scapt whyleare,  
 A man of hell that calls himselfe Despayre :  
 Who first us greets, and after fayre areedes  
 Of tydinges straunge, and of adventures rare :  
 So creeping close, as Snake in hidden weedes,  
 Inquireth of our states, and of our knightly deedes.

29.

“Which when he knew, and felt our feeble harts  
 Embost with bale,<sup>x</sup> and bitter byting griefe,  
 Which love had launched with his deadly darts,  
 With wounding words, and termes of foule reprieffe,  
 He pluckt from us all hope of dew relieffe,  
 That earst us held in love of lingring life ;  
 Then hopelesse, hartlesse, gan the cunning thiefe

---

<sup>x</sup> *Emboſt with bale.*] The notion conveyed by “emboſt,” i. e. *foaming at the mouth*, was, moſt likely, produced in the mind of the poet by the previous uſe of the word “harts :” harts are ſaid to be “emboſt” when they foam at the mouth with fatigue, after being hunted : the ſame of dogs, wild boars, &c. It would ſeem that “emboſt,” or emboſſed, comes from the Fr. *emboucher*. See note to Shakeſpeare’s “Taming of the Shrew,” Induc. Sc. 1. Collier’s edit. 1858, vol. ii. p. 444. C.



Perfwade us dye, to stint all further strife :  
To me he lent this rope, to him a rusty knife.

30.

“ With which sad instrument of hasty death,  
That wofull lover, loathing lenger light,  
A wyde way made to let forth living breath :  
But I, more fearfull or more lucky wight,  
Dismayd with that deformed dismall fight,  
Fledd fast away, halfe dead with dying feare ;  
Ne yet assur’d of life by you, Sir knight,  
Whose like infirmity like chaunce may beare ;  
But God you never let his charmed speeches heare !”

31.

“ How may a man,” (said he) “ with idle speech  
Be wonne to spoyle the Castle of his health ?”  
“ I wote,” (quoth he) “ whom tryall late did teach,  
That like would not for all this worldes wealth.  
His subtile tong like dropping honny mealt’h  
Into the heart, and seareth every vaine ;  
That, ere one be aware, by secret stealth  
His powre is reft, and weaknes doth remaine.  
O ! never, Sir, desire to try his guilefull traine.”

32.

“ Certes,” (sayd he) “ hence shall I never rest,  
Till I that treachours art<sup>y</sup> have heard and tryde :  
And you, Sir knight, whose name mote I request,  
Of grace do me unto his cabin guyde.”  
“ I, that hight Trevisan,” (quoth he) “ will ryde  
Against my liking backe to doe you grace :  
But nor for gold nor glee<sup>z</sup> will I abyde

---

<sup>y</sup> *Till I that treachours art.*] Shakespeare has “treachour” in the form of *treacher*, (“King Lear,” A. i. Sc. 2,) and Spenser uses it as synonymous with *treachetour*, as he spells it, when requiring three syllables. It is from the Fr. *tricher*, and is very old in English. C.

<sup>z</sup> *But nor for gold nor glee.*] Church suggests *fee* for “glee,” but all



By you, when ye arrive in that fame place ;  
For lever had I die then see his deadly face."

33.

Ere long they come where that fame wicked wight  
His dwelling has, low in an hollow cave,  
Far underneath a craggy cliff ypight,<sup>a</sup>  
Darke, dolefull, dreary, like a greedy grave,  
That still for carrion carcases doth crave :  
On top whereof ay dwelt the ghastly Owle,  
Shrieking his balefull note, which ever drave  
Far from that haunt all other chearefull fowle ;  
And all about it wandring ghostes did wayle and howle.

34.

And all about old stockes and stubs of trees,  
Whereon nor fruit nor leafe was ever seene,  
Did hang upon the ragged rocky knees ;  
On which had many wretches hanged beene,  
Whose carcases were scattred on the greene,  
And throwne about the cliffs. Arrived there,  
That bare-head knight, for dread and dolefull teene,  
Would faine have fled, ne durst approchen neare ;  
But th' other forst him staye, and comforted in feare.

35.

That darkeesome cave they enter, where they find  
That cursed man, low sitting on the ground,  
Musing full sadly in his fullein mind :  
His griefie lockes,<sup>b</sup> long growen and unbound,

---

impressions are uniform in having "glee;" and the opposition between "gold" and "glee" was perhaps intended. Todd and others erroneously read "But *not* for gold nor glee." C.

<sup>a</sup> *a craggy cliff ypight.*] This is the reading of the second edition [and of every folio impression]. The first 4to. probably by an error of the press, gives *yplight*. *Pight* is frequent in Spenser for *placed*, *fixed*.

Todd.

<sup>b</sup> *His griefie lockes.*] Church and Upton were for altering "griefie" to *grieffie*, while Todd did well to retain "griefie," which is the word



Disordred hong about his shoulders round,  
 And hid his face ; through which his hollow eyne  
 Lookt deadly dull, and stared as astound ;  
 His raw-bone cheekes, through penurie and pine,  
 Were shronke into his jawes, as he did never dine.

36.

His garment, nought but many ragged clouts,  
 With thornes together pind and patched was,  
 The which his naked sides he wrapt abouts :  
 And him beside there lay upon the gras  
 A dreary corse, whose life away did pas,  
 All wallowd in his own yet luke-warme blood,  
 That from his wound yet welled fresh, alas !  
 In which a rusty knife fast fixed stood,  
 And made an open passage for the gushing flood.

37.

Which piteous spectacle, approving trew  
 The wofull tale that Trevisan had told,  
 Whenas the gentle Redcrosse knight did vew ;  
 With firie zeale he burnt in courage bold  
 Him to avenge before his blood were cold,  
 And to the villein sayd ; “ Thou damned wight,  
 The authour of this fact we here behold,  
 What justice can but judge against thee right,  
 With thine owne blood to price his blood, here shed in  
 fight ? ”

38.

“ What franticke fit,” (quoth he) “ hath thus distraught  
 Thee, foolish man, so rash a doome to give ?  
 What justice ever other judgement taught,

---

in the 4tos. 1590 and 1596. Todd might have strengthened himself still further by the fol. 1611, which also reads “griefie ;” but here he does not seem to have referred to it. “Griefie” is not opposed to the poet’s meaning ; and, as we prefer authority to speculation, we continue the text contained in every old copy. C.



But he should dye who merites not to live?  
None els to death this man despayring drive  
But his owne guiltie mind, deserving death.  
Is then unjust<sup>c</sup> to each his dew to give?  
Or let him dye, that loatheth living breath,  
Or let him die at ease, that liveth here uneath?<sup>d</sup>

## 39.

“ Who travailes by the wearie wandring way,  
To come unto his wished home in haste,  
And meetes a flood that doth his passage stay,  
Is not great grace to helpe him over past,  
Or free his feet that in the myre sticke fast?  
Most envious man, that grieves at neighbours good;  
And fond,<sup>e</sup> that joyest in the woe thou hast!  
Why wilt not let him passe, that long hath stood  
Upon the bancke, yet wilt thy selfe not pas the flood?

## 40.

“ He there does now enjoy eternall rest  
And happy ease, which thou doest want and crave,  
And further from it daily wandereft:  
What if some little payne the passage have,  
That makes frayle flesh to feare the bitter wave,  
Is not short payne well borne, that bringes long  
    ease,  
And layes the soule to sleepe in quiet grave?  
Sleepe after toyle, port after stormie seas,  
Ease after warre, death after life, does greatly please.”

---

<sup>c</sup> *Is then unjust.*] As in the next Stanza, “Is not great grace,” &c.: we should now write, “*Is't then unjust?*” and, “*Is't not great grace?*” C.

<sup>d</sup> *that liveth here uneath.*] “Uneath” is *uneasily*; the opposition between “at ease” and “uneath” being evident. The origin is the A. S. *eith*; and “uneath” is often used for *scarcely*, *hardly*. C.

<sup>e</sup> *And fond.*] *Foolish*. See also F. Q. iii. viii. 25. “His rudenes fond.” UPTON. Hundreds of instances to the same effect might be quoted from authors of the time. C.



41.

The knight much wondred at his fuddeine wit,  
 And fayd; "The terme of life is limited,  
 Ne may a man prolong, nor shorten, it:  
 The souldier may not move from watchfull sted,<sup>f</sup>  
 Nor leave his stand untill his Captaine bed."  
 "Who life did limit by almightie doome,"  
 (Quoth he) "knowes best the termes establiſhed;  
 And he, that points the Centonell his roome,  
 Doth liſenſe him depart at found of morning droome.

42.

"Is not his deed, what ever thing is donne  
 In heaven and earth? Did not he all create  
 To die againe? All ends that was begonne:  
 Their times in his eternall booke of fate  
 Are written ſure, and have their certein date.  
 Who then can ſtrive with ſtrong neceſſitie,  
 That holds the world in his ſtill chaunging ſtate,  
 Or ſhunne the death ordaynd by deſtinie?  
 When houre of death is come, let none aſke whence,  
 nor why.

43.

"The lenger life, I wote, the greater ſin;  
 The greater ſin, the greater puniſhment:  
 All thoſe great battels, which thou boaſts to win  
 Through ſtrife, and blood-ſhed, and avengement,  
 Now prayſd, hereafter deare thou ſhalt repent;  
 For life muſt life, and blood muſt blood, repay.  
 Is not enough thy evill life foreſpent?  
 For he that once hath miſſed the right way,  
 The further he doth goe, the further he doth ſtray.

---

<sup>f</sup> *from watchfull ſted.*] *Place or ſtation*; a word of frequent occurrence in Spenſer. See *F. Q.* i. viii. 17; i. xi. 46, &c. It appears to be now [not entirely] obſolete. Gawin Douglas has often employed the word, in his tranſlation of Virgil. See Ruddiman's *Gloſſ.* V. *Stede*, a place. A. S. *Steda*, locus. Iſl. *Stada*, ſtatio. TODD.



44.

“ Then doe no further goe, no further stray,  
But here ly downe, and to thy rest betake,  
Th’ ill to prevent, that life enfewen may;  
For what hath life that may it loved make,  
And gives not rather cause it to forsake?  
Feare, sicknesse, age, losse, labour, sorrow, strife,  
Payne, hunger, cold that makes the heart to quake,  
And ever fickle fortune rageth rife;  
All which, and thousands mo, do make a loathsome life.

45.

“ Thou, wretched man, of death hast greatest need,  
If in true ballaunce thou wilt weigh thy state;  
For never knight, that dared warlike deed,  
More luckless disaventures did amate:  
Witnes the dungeon deepe, wherein of late  
Thy life shutt up for death so oft did call;  
And though good lucke prolonged hath thy date,  
Yet death then would the like mishaps forestall,  
Into the which hereafter thou maist happen fall.

46.

“ Why then dost thou, O man of sin! desire  
To draw thy dayes forth to their last degree?  
Is not the measure of thy sinfull hire  
High heaped up with huge iniquitee,  
Against the day of wrath to burden thee?  
Is not enough, that to this Lady mild  
Thou falsed hast thy faith with perjuree,  
And sold thy selfe to serve Dueſſa vild,  
With whom in al abuse thou hast thy selfe defild?

47.

“ Is not he just, that all this doth behold  
From highest heven, and beares an equall eie?  
Shall he thy sins up in his knowledge fold,  
And guilty be of thine impietie?



Is not his law, Let every finner die ;  
 Die shall all flesh ? What then must needs be donne,  
 Is it not better to doe willinglie,  
 Then linger till the glas be all out ronne ?  
 Death is the end of woes : die soone, O faries sonne !”

48.

The knight was much enmoved with his speach,  
 That as a sword poynt through his hart did perfe,  
 And in his conscience made a secrete breach,  
 Well knowing trew all that he did reherse,  
 And to his fresh remembraunce did reverse<sup>s</sup>  
 The ugly vew of his deformed crimes ;  
 That all his manly powres it did disperse,  
 As he were charmed with inchaunted rimes ;  
 That oftentimes he quakt, and fainted oftentimes.

49.

In which amazement when the Miscraunt  
 Perceived him to waver, weake and fraile,  
 Whiles trembling horror did his conscience daunt,  
 And hellish anguish did his soule assaile ;  
 To drive him to despaire, and quite to quaile,  
 Hee shewd him, painted in a table plaine,  
 The damned ghosts that doe in torments waile,  
 And thousand feends that doe them endlesse paine  
 With fire and brimstone, which for ever shall remaine.

50.

The fight whereof so thoroughly him dismaid,  
 That nought but death before his eies he saw,  
 And ever burning wrath before him laid,  
 By righteous sentence of th' Almightyes law.

---

<sup>s</sup> *did reverse.*] i. e. did *bring back*, or *revert*. The sense is very clear ; and we should have thought no note necessary, if Church and Jortin had not disputed respecting the word “reverse,” which Spenser sometimes uses for *return*. C.



Then gan the Villein him to overcraw,<sup>h</sup>  
 And brought unto him swords, ropes, poison, fire,  
 And all that might him to perdition draw;  
 And bad him choose, what death he would desire;  
 For death was dew to him that had provokt Gods ire.

51.

But, whenas none of them he saw him take,  
 He to him raught a dagger sharpe and keene,  
 And gave it him in hand: his hand did quake  
 And tremble like a leafe of Aspin greene,  
 And troubled blood through his pale face was seene  
 To come and goe with tidings from the heart,  
 As it a ronning messenger had beene.  
 At last, resolv'd to work his finall smart,  
 He lifted up his hand, that backe againe did start.

52.

Which, whenas Una saw,<sup>i</sup> through every vaine  
 The crudled cold ran to her well of life,  
 As in a swowne: but, soone reliv'd<sup>k</sup> againe,  
 Out of his hand she snatcht the cursed knife,  
 And threw it to the ground, enraged rife,

---

<sup>h</sup> *him to overcraw.*] We have already seen in "The Shep. Cal." for Feb. (vol. i. p. 27,) that Spenser's word "overaw" had there sometimes been misprinted *overcraw*: here his word "overcraw" has sometimes been misprinted *overaw*. We need hardly say that "overcraw" means *overcrow*, which our poet also employs in his tract on the "State of Ireland." Shakespeare has "o'er-crows" in "Hamlet," A. v. Sc. 2. C.

<sup>i</sup> *Which, whenas Una saw.*] "Saw" is *beard* in the 4to. 1590, but ever afterwards it was printed "saw;" and of course rightly, for Despair said nothing, and the knight has been merely silent, meditating his own death. There is, however, no notice of the mistake in the errata at the end of the first edition. C.

<sup>k</sup> *As in a swowne: but, soone reliv'd.*] *Brought to life again*, as Mr. Church has remarked. This original reading of the poet has been converted by all the folios, by Hughes, and by the editor of Tonson's edition of 1758, into *reliev'd*. Mr. Church and Mr. Upton read *reliv'd* Todd. There can be no doubt that "reliv'd," and not *reliev'd*, was Spenser's word; and Drayton, in his copy of the fol. 1611, restored it by putting his pencil through the second *e* in *reliev'd*. C.



And to him said ; “ Fie, fie, faint hearted Knight !  
 What meanest thou by this reprochfull strife ?  
 Is this the battaile which thou vauntst to fight  
 With that fire-mouthed Dragon, horrible and bright ?

53.

“ Come ; come away, fraile, feeble, fleshly wight,<sup>1</sup>  
 Ne let vaine words bewitch thy manly hart,  
 Ne diuelish thoughts dismay thy constant spright :  
 In heavenly mercies hast thou not a part ?  
 Why shouldst thou then despeire, that chosen art ?  
 Where iustice growes, there grows eke greter grace,  
 The which doth quench the brond of hellish smart,  
 And that accurst hand-writing doth deface.<sup>m</sup>  
 Arise, fir Knight ; arise, and leave this cursed place.”

54.

So up he rose, and thence amounted streight.  
 Which when the carle<sup>n</sup> beheld, and saw his guest

<sup>1</sup> *feeble, fleshly wight.*] “ Feeble ” is the reading of the first edition, adopted by no other but those of Church and Upton. The second edition, and the edition of 1751, read *feely*: the folios, the editions of Hughes, and that of Tonson in 1758, *filly*. Mr. Upton, in defence of the original reading, refers also to C. x. St. 2. “ Her Knight was *feeble* ; ” and introduces, very happily, the Scriptural illustrations of 1 Theff. v. 14. “ Comfort the *feeble*-minded ; ” of Matt. xxvi. 41. “ The *flesh* is *weak* ; ” and of Rom. viii. 3. “ *Weak* through the *flesh*. ” TODD. Drayton made no change in the epithet “ filly ” as it stands in his fol. 1611 ; but we adhere to the oldest text. C.

<sup>m</sup> *And that accurst hand-writing doth deface.*] “ Blotting out the *hand-writing* of ordinances that was against us, &c.” Col. ii. 14. CHURCH.

<sup>n</sup> *Which when the carle.*] The *churl*. A word often used by Spenser. It formerly denoted merely a stout or sturdy man. Thus Chaucer, “ Prol. C. T.” 548.

“ The Mellere was a strong *carl* for the nonys.” TODD.

Shakespeare employs the word in “ Cymbeline,” A. v. Sc. 2 ; and he has *carlot* in “ As you like it,” A. iii. Sc. 5. “ Carl ” is of frequent occurrence in our old poetry ; but we have not been able to trace *carlot* in any author but Shakespeare. Richardson’s reference in his Dict. to *carlet*, in Drayton’s “ Barons Wars,” is a mistake for Carlel or Carlisle : the poet is there speaking of the constable of that city. C.



Would safe depart, for all his subtile sleight,  
He chose an halter from among the rest,  
And with it hong him selfe, unbid, unblest.<sup>o</sup>  
But death he could not worke himselfe thereby;  
For thousand times he so him selfe had drest,  
Yet nathelesse it could not doe him die,  
Till he should die his last, that is, eternally.

---

<sup>o</sup> *unbid, unblest.*] Upton contends that “unbid” here means “without saying his prayers;” but if the word has here any connection with praying, the meaning is, that Despair hanged himself without being *invited* to do so—as Church says, without being *called*. C.







## CANTO X.

*Her faithfull knight faire Una brings  
To house of Holinesse;  
Where he is taught repentaunce, and  
The way to heavenly blesse.*



I.

**W**HAT man is he, that boasts of fleshly  
might  
And vaine assuraunce of mortality,  
Which, all so soone as it doth come to  
fight

Against spirituall foes, yields by and by,  
Or from the felds most cowardly doth fly!  
Ne let the man ascribe it to his skill,  
That thorough grace hath gained victory:  
If any strength we have, it is to ill;  
But all the good is Gods, both power and eke will.

2.

By that which lately hapned Una saw  
That this her knight was feeble, and too faint;  
And all his finewes woxen weake and raw,  
Through long enprisonment, and hard constraint,  
Which he endured in his late restraint,  
That yet he was unfitt for bloody fight.  
Therefore, to cherish him with diets daint,



She cast to bring him where he chearen might,<sup>a</sup>  
Till he recovered had his late decayed plight.

## 3.

There was an auncient house nor far away,  
Renowmd throughout the world for sacred lore  
And pure unspotted life: so well, they say,  
It governd was, and guided evermore,  
Through wisedome of a matrone grave and hore;  
Whose onely joy was to relieve the needes  
Of wretched soules, and helpe the helpelesse pore:  
All night she spent in bidding of her bedes,  
And all the day in doing good, and godly deedes.

## 4.

Dame Cælia men did her call, as thought  
From heaven to come, or thether to arise;  
The mother of three daughters, well upbrought  
In goodly thewes, and godly exercise:  
The eldest two, most sober, chaste, and wise,  
Fidelia and Speranza, virgins were;  
Though spoused, yet wanting wedlocks solemnize;  
But faire Charissa to a lovely fere<sup>b</sup>  
Was lincked, and by him had many pledges dere.

## 5.

Arrived there, the dore they find fast lockt;  
For it was warely watched night and day,  
For feare of many foes; but, when they knockt,  
The Porter opened unto them streight way.

<sup>a</sup> *where he chearen might.*] To “cheer,” or “chear,” is generally used as a transitive verb, and we do not recollect any other instance where it occurs in a neuter sense. Upton suggests that these “diets daint” of the poet are the ἐστιάσεις λόγων καλῶν of Plato, which Cicero translates *epulæ sermonum bonorum*. C.

<sup>b</sup> *But faire Charissa to a lovely fere.*] *Fere* is here employed for *husband*, as in Chaucer it is used for *wife*. See “Tr. and Cr.” B. iv. 791, edit. Urr. Todd. It also means a companion, or associate, in the general sense of those words, from A. S. *fera*. C.



He was an aged fyre, all hory gray,  
 With lookes full lowly cast, and gate full flow,  
 Wont on a staffe his feeble steps to stay,  
 Hight Humiltá. They passe in, stouping low;  
 For streight and narrow was the way which he did show.

6.

Each goodly thing is hardest to begin;  
 But, entred in, a spacious court they see,  
 Both plaine and pleasaunt to be walked in;  
 Where them does meete a francklin faire and free,<sup>c</sup>  
 And entertaines with comely courteous glee;  
 His name was Zele, that him right well became:  
 For in his speaches and behaveour hee  
 Did labour lively to expresse the same,  
 And gladly did them guide, till to the Hall they came.

7.

There fayrely them receives a gentle Squyre,  
 Of myld demeanure and rare courtesee,  
 Right cleanly clad in comely sad attyre;  
 In word and deede that shewd great modestee,  
 And knew his good to all of each degree,  
 Hight Reverence. He them with speaches meet  
 Does faire entreat; no courting nicetee,  
 But simple, trew, and eke unfained sweet,

---

<sup>c</sup> *Where them does meete a francklin faire and free.*] "A francklin" is a person of some distinction in our ancient history. He makes a conspicuous figure in Chaucer; and his manners bespeak his wealth. Mr. Tyrwhitt cites, from Fortescue de Leg. Angl. c. 29, the following description of a *franklain*: "Pater familias—magnis ditatus possessionibus:" and the learned critic adds, that the *franklin* "is classed with, but after, the *Miles* and *Armiger*; and is distinguished from the *libere tenentes* and *Valeeti*; though, as it should seem, the only real distinction between him and other *Freeholders* consisted in the largeness of his estate." Tyrwhitt's "Chaucer," 2nd. edit. vol. ii. p. 402. The wealthiness of this country gentleman is also marked by a circumstance in Shakespeare, "K. Henry IV." P. i. A. ii. Sc. 1, "There's a *franklin* in the wild of Kent, hath brought three hundred marks with him in gold." TODD.



As might become a Squire so great persons to greet.<sup>d</sup>

8.

And afterwarde them to his Dame he leades,  
That aged Dame, the Lady of the place,  
Who all this while was busy at her beades;  
Which doen, she up arose with seemely grace,  
And toward them full matronely did pace.  
Where, when that fairest Una she beheld,  
Whom well she knew to spring from heavenly race,  
Her heart with joy unwonted inly sweld,  
As feeling wondrous comfort in her weaker eld:

9.

And, her embracing, said; "O happy earth,  
Whereon thy innocent feet doe ever tread!  
Most vertuous virgin, borne of heavenly berth,  
That, to redeeme thy woefull parents head  
From tyrans rage and ever-dying dread,  
Hast wandred through the world now long a day,  
Yett ceasest not thy weary soles to lead;  
What grace hath thee now hether brought this way?  
Or doen thy feeble feet unweeting hether stray?"

10.

"Straunge thing it is an errant knight to see  
Here in this place; or any other wight,  
That hether turnes his steps. So few there bee,  
That chose the narrow path, or seeke the right:  
All keepe the broad high way, and take delight  
With many rather for to goe astray,  
And be partakers of their evill plight,

---

<sup>d</sup> *so great persons to greet.*] Todd tells us that "the second folio," i. e. that of 1611, reads *persons so great to greet*; and he goes on to argue in favour of the original text, as we have printed it. It is all labour thrown away; for the folio 1611, like the 4tos. 1590 and 1596, has "so great persons to greet." C.



Then with a few to walke the rightest way.  
O foolish men ! why hast ye to your own decay ?”

11.

“ Thy felfe to see, and tyred limbes to rest,  
O matrone sage,” (quoth she) “ I hether came ;  
And this good knight his way with me addrest,  
Ledd with thy prayfes, and broad-blazed fame,  
That up to heven is blowne.” The auncient Dame  
Him goodly greeted in her modest guyse,  
And enterteynd them both, as best became,  
With all the court’fies that she could devyse,  
Ne wanted ought to shew her bounteous or wise.

12.

Thus as they gan of fondrie thinges devise,  
Loe ! two most goodly virgins came in place,  
Ylinked arme in arme in lovely wise :  
With countenance demure, and modest grace,  
They numbred even steps and equall pace ;  
Of which the eldest, that Fidelia hight,  
Like funny beames threw from her christall face  
That could have dazd the rash beholders sight,  
And round about her head did shine like hevens light.

13.

She was araied all in lilly white,  
And in her right hand bore a cup of gold,  
With wine and water fild up to the hight,  
In which a Serpent did himselfe enfold,  
That horreur made to all that did behold ;  
But she no whitt did chaunge her constant mood :  
And in her other hand she fast did hold  
A booke, that was both signd and seald with blood ;  
Wherein darke things were writt, hard to be understood.

14.

Her younger sifter, that Speranza hight,  
Was clad in blew, that her beseemed well ;



Not all so chearefull seemed she of sight,  
 As was her sister: whether dread did dwell  
 Or anguish in her hart, is hard to tell.  
 Upon her arme a silver anchor lay,  
 Whereon she leaned ever, as befell;  
 And ever up to heven, as she did pray,  
 Her stedfast eyes were bent, ne swarved other way.

15.

They, seeing Una, towards her gan wend,  
 Who them encounters with like courtesee;  
 Many kind speeches they betweene them spend,  
 And greatly joy each other for to see:  
 Then to the knight with shamefast modestie  
 They turne themselves, at Unaes meeke request,  
 And him salute with well beseeming glee;  
 Who faire them quites, as him beseemed best,  
 And goodly gan discourse of many a noble gest.\*

16.

Then Una thus: "But she, your sister deare,  
 The deare Charissa, where is she become?  
 Or wants she health, or busie is elsewhere?"  
 "Ah! no," said they, "but forth she may not come;  
 For she of late is lightned of her wombe,  
 And hath encreast the world with one sonne more,  
 That her to see should be but troublesome."  
 "Indeed," (quoth she) "that should her trouble sore;  
 But thank't be God, and her encrease so evermore!"

17.

Then said the aged Cælia, "Deare dame,  
 And you, good Sir, I wote that of youre toyle

---

\* *of many a noble gest.*] *Deed or exploit*; a word frequently met with in writers of the time, and hardly requiring explanation: it is, of course, from the Latin *gero*. It is also used for a resting-place, or a progress, or journey; but then it is derived from the Fr. *gîte*. Shakespeare, in "Ant. and Cleop." A. iv. Sc. 8, employs it like Spenser, though there usually misprinted *guest*: see edit. Collier, 1858, vi. 219. C.



And labors long, through which ye hether came,  
 Ye both forwearied be: therefore, a while  
 I read you rest, and to your bowres recoyle."<sup>f</sup>  
 Then called she a Groome, that forth him ledd  
 Into a goodly lodge, and gan despoile  
 Of puissant armes, and laid in easie bedd:  
 His name was meeke Obedience, rightfully aredd.

18.

Now when their wearie limbes with kindly rest,  
 And bodies were refresht with dew repast,  
 Fayre Una gan Fidelia fayre request,  
 To have her knight into her schoolehous plasste,  
 That of her heavenly learning he might taste,  
 And heare the wisedom of her wordes divine.  
 She graunted; and that knight so much agraste,  
 That she him taught celestiaall discipline,  
 And opened his dull eyes, that light mote in them shine.

19.

And that her sacred Booke, with blood ywritt,  
 That none could reade except she did them teach,  
 She unto him disclofed every whitt;  
 And heavenly documents thereout did preach,  
 That weaker witt of man could never reach;  
 Of God; of grace; of justice; of free-will;  
 That wonder was to heare her goodly speach:  
 For she was hable with her wordes to kill,  
 And rayse againe to life the hart that she did thrill.

20.

And, when she list poure out her larger spright,  
 She would commaund the hasty Sunne to stay,

---

<sup>f</sup> *I read you rest, and to your bowres recoyle.*] I advise you to repose yourselves, and retire to your chambers. He uses *read* for *advise*, F. Q. ii. viii. 12.

“Abandon soon, I *read*, the caytive spoile —.”  
*Recoyle*, Fr: reculer, retire. CHURCH.



Or backward turne his course from hevens hight :  
 Sometimes great hostes of men she could dismay ;  
 Dry-shod to passe she parts the flouds in tway ;<sup>g</sup>  
 And eke huge mountaines from their native seat  
 She would commaund themselves to beare away,  
 And throw in raging sea with roaring threat.  
 Almighty God her gave such powre and puissaunce great.

21.

The faithfull knight now grew in little space,  
 By hearing her, and by her sisters lore,  
 To such perfection of all heavenly grace,  
 That wretched world he gan for to abhore,  
 And mortall life gan loath as thing forlore,  
 Greevd with remembrance of his wicked wayes,  
 And prickt with anguish of his finnes so fore,  
 That he desirde to end his wretched dayes :  
 So much the dart of sinfull guilt the soule dismayes.

22.

But wise Speranza gave him comfort sweet,  
 And taught him how to take assured hold  
 Upon her silver anchor, as was meet ;  
 Els had his finnes, so great and manifold,  
 Made him forget all that Fidelia told.  
 In this distressed doubtfull agony,  
 When him his dearest Una did behold  
 Disdeining life, desiring leave to dye,  
 She found her selfe assayld with great perplexity ;

---

<sup>g</sup> *Dry-shod to passe she parts the flouds in tway.*] Todd repeatedly terms the 4tos. of 1590 and 1596 Spenser's editions ; and they were certainly printed in his lifetime : but this line, obviously necessary to sense and stanza, is in neither of them—a singular, though not unprecedented, omission in the first instance, but strange indeed in the repetition. We, like others, have been obliged to derive it from the folio 1609, and it is also found in the folio 1611 ; but from what source it was obtained is nowhere mentioned. We know that “The Faerie Queene” was handed about in MS. before it was originally printed, and very possibly the glaring hiatus was filled up in 1609 from one of those written copies. In St. 22, Todd printed “had” *bas*. C.



23.

And came to Cælia to declare her smart;  
 Who, well acquainted with that commune plight,  
 Which sinfull horror workes in wounded hart,  
 Her wisely comforted all that she might,  
 With goodly counsell and advisement right;  
 And streightway sent with carefull diligence,  
 To fetch a Leach, the which had great insight  
 In that disease of grieved conscience,  
 And well could cure the same: his name was Patience.

24.

Who, comming to that fowle-diseased knight,  
 Could hardly him intreat to tell his grief:  
 Which knowne, and all that noyd his heavie spright  
 Well searcht, eftsoones he gan apply relief  
 Of salves and med'cines, which had passing prief;  
 And thereto added wordes of wondrous might.  
 By which to ease he him recured brief,  
 And much aswag'd the passion of his plight,  
 That he his paine endur'd, as seeming now more light.

25.

But yet the cause and root of all his ill,  
 Inward corruption and infected sin,  
 Not purg'd nor heald, behind remained still,  
 And festring sore did ranckle yett within,  
 Close creeping twixt the marow and the skin:  
 Which to extirpe, he laid him privily  
 Downe in a darksome lowly place far in,  
 Whereas he meant his corrosives to apply,<sup>b</sup>  
 And with streight diet tame his stubborne malady.

---

<sup>b</sup> *Whereas he meant his corrosives to apply.*] Todd has a long note upon "corrosives;" but it is only necessary to state that the more usual pronunciation of it in Spenser's day was *corfives*: lines may, however, be produced in which it is either a dissyllable or a trisyllable: in the line before us there can be no doubt how it ought to be read. C.



26.

In ashes and sackcloth he did array  
 His daintie corse, proud humors to abate ;  
 And dieted with fasting every day,  
 The swelling of his woundes to mitigate ;  
 And made him pray both earely and eke late :  
 And ever, as superfluous flesh did rott,  
 Amendment readie still at hand did wayt,  
 To pluck it out with pincers fyrie whott,  
 That soone in him was lefte no one corrupted jott.

27.

And bitter Penaunce, with an yron whip,  
 Was wont him once to disple every day :<sup>i</sup>  
 And sharpe Remorse his hart did prick and nip,  
 That drops of blood thence like a well did play :  
 And sad Repentance used to embay  
 His blamefull body in salt water fore,<sup>k</sup>  
 The filthy blottes of sin to wash away.  
 So in short space they did to health restore  
 The man that would not live, but erst lay at deathes dore.

<sup>i</sup> *Was wont him once to disple every day.*] By to *disple*, that is, to *disciple* or *discipline*, were formerly signified the penitentiary whippings practised among the monks; so that it is here applied with the greatest propriety. In Fox's "Book of Martyrs" there is an old wood-cut, in which the whipping of an heretic is represented, with this title, "*The DISPLING of John Whitelock.*" *DISPLING friers* was a common expression, as it is found in "A Worlde of Wonders," 1608, p. 175. Milton uses it with allusion to the same sense: "'Tis only the merry frier in Chaucer can *disple* them," "Of Ref. in Eng." Birch's edit. vol. i. p. 13. *Disciplina*, in the Spanish language, signifies the scourge which was used by penitents for these very purposes of religious flagellation. T. WARTON.

<sup>k</sup> *His blamefull body in salt water fore.*] Repentance bathed his blameful body in salt water, and thus rendered it sore. Ours is the text of the edit. 1590, from which there is no sufficient reason for varying, although it is right to mention, that later impressions here offer a difference, viz.

"His body in salt water smarting fore."

The meaning is nearly the same, and if Spenser himself introduced the change, which is more than doubtful, (it is not noted as a misprint,) we have preserved both forms for the choice of the reader. C.



28.

In which his torment often was so great,  
That like a Lyon he would cry and rore,  
And rend his flesh, and his owne synewes eat.  
His owne deare Una, hearing evermore  
His ruefull shriekes and gronings, often tore  
Her guiltlesse garments and her golden heare,  
For pittie of his payne and anguish fore:  
Yet all with patience wisely she did beare,  
For well she wist his cryme could els be never cleare.

29.

Whom, thus recover'd by wise Patience  
And trew Repentaunce, they to Una brought;  
Who, joyous of his cured conscience,  
Him dearely kist, and fayrely eke besought  
Himselfe to chearish, and consuming thought  
To put away out of his carefull brest.  
By this Charissa, late in child-bed brought,  
Was woxen strong, and left her fruitfull nest:  
To her fayre Una brought this unacquainted guest.

30.

She was a woman in her freshest age,  
Of wondrous beauty, and of bounty rare,  
With goodly grace and comely personage,  
That was on earth not easie to compare;  
Full of great love, but Cupids wanton snare  
As hell she hated; chaste in worke and will:  
Her necke and breasts were ever open bare,  
That ay thereof her babes might sucke their fill;  
The rest was all in yellow robes arayed still.

31.

A multitude of babes about her hong,  
Playing their sportes, that joyd her to behold;  
Whom still she fed whiles they were weake and young,  
But thrust them forth still as they waxed old:



And on her head she wore a tyre of gold,  
 Adorn'd with gemmes and owches<sup>1</sup> wondrous fayre,  
 Whose passing price uneath was to be told:  
 And by her syde there sate a gentle payre  
 Of turtle doves, she sitting in an yvory chayre.

32.

The knight and Una entring fayre her greet,  
 And bid her joy of that her happy brood;  
 Who them requites with court'fies seeming meet,  
 And entertaynes with friendly chearefull mood.  
 Then Una her besought, to be so good  
 As in her vertuous rules to schoole her knight,  
 Now after all his torment well withstood  
 In that sad house of Penaunce, where his spright  
 Had past the paines of hell and long-enduring night.

33.

She was right joyous of her just request;  
 And taking by the hand that Faeries sonne,  
 Gan him instruct in everie good behest,  
 Of love, and righteousnes, and well to donne;<sup>m</sup>  
 And wrath and hatred warely to shonne,  
 That drew on men Gods hatred and his wrath,

<sup>1</sup> *Adorn'd with gemmes and owches.*] "Owches" here seem intended for *jewels*. See also F. Q. i. ii. 13; iii. iv. 23. In Exod. xxviii. 11. "Owches of gold," signify the collets in which the precious stones were to be placed. Barret, in his "Dict." 1580, under the word *jewell*, calls the *ouch* "a collar that women vsed about their neckes;" and again, under the word *ouch*, terms it "a carcanet, or OUCH to hang about a gentlewomans necke." TODD. Tyrwhitt was of opinion that the proper mode of spelling the word was *nouch*; but this is more than doubtful, since the *n* was commonly obtained from the preceding indefinite article, *an ouch*. Many examples of the same thing, as applied to other words, might be adduced. C.

<sup>m</sup> *Of love, and righteousnes, and well to donne.*] That is, and of well doing. Καὶ τὸ καλῶς ποιεῖν. A. S. *don*, *facere*. So Chaucer, in the "Knight's Tale," 995, "To *don* obsequies, as tho was the gife." UPTON.



And many foules in dolours had fordonne :<sup>n</sup>  
 In which when him she well instructed hath,  
 From thence to heaven she teacheth him the ready path.

34.

Wherein his weaker wandring steps to guyde,  
 An auncient matrone she to her does call,  
 Whose sober lookes her wisedome well descryde :  
 Her name was Mercy ; well knowne over all  
 To be both gracious and eke liberall :  
 To whom the carefull charge of him she gave,  
 To leade aright, that he should never fall  
 In all his waies through this wide worldes wave ;  
 That Mercy in the end his righteous soule might save.

35.

The godly Matrone by the hand him beares  
 Forth from her presence, by a narrow way,  
 Scattred with bushy thornes and ragged breares,  
 Which still before him she remov'd away,  
 That nothing might his ready passage stay :  
 And ever, when his feet encombred were,  
 Or gan to shrink, or from the right to stray,  
 She held him fast, and firmly did upbeare,  
 As carefull Nourse her child from falling oft does reare.

36.

Eftsoones unto an holy Hospitall,  
 That was foreby the way, she did him bring ;  
 In which seven Bead-men, that had vowed all  
 Their life to service of high heavens King,  
 Did spend their daies in doing godly thing.  
 Their gates to all were open evermore,  
 That by the wearie way were traveiling ;

---

<sup>n</sup> *in dolours had fordonne.*] That is, as we now say, in grief had *undone*. Shakespeare uses the verb "fordo" in the sense of *destroy*: see "Hamlet," A. v. Sc. 1.; and "Othello," A. v. Sc. 1. Instances in other authors are frequent. C.



And one fate wayting ever them before,  
To call in commers-by that needy were and pore.

37.

The first of them, that eldest was and best,  
Of all the house had charge and government,  
As Guardian and Steward of the rest.  
His office was to give entertainment  
And lodging unto all that came and went;  
Not unto such as could him feast againe,  
And double quite for that he on them spent;  
But such as want of harbour did constraine:  
Those for Gods sake his dewty was to entertaine.

38.

The second was as Almner of the place:  
His office was the hungry for to feed,  
And thrifty give to drinke; a worke of grace.  
He feard not once himselfe to be in need,  
Ne car'd to hoord for those whom he did breede:  
The grace of God he layd up still in store,  
Which as a stocke he left unto his feede.  
He had enough; what need him care for more?  
And had he lesse, yet some he would give to the pore.

39.

The third had of their wardrobe custody,  
In which were not rich tyres, nor garments gay,  
The plumes of pride, and winges of vanity,  
But clothes meet to keepe keene cold away,  
And naked nature seemely to aray;  
With which bare wretched wights he dayly clad,  
The images of God in earthly clay;  
And, if that no spare clothes to give he had,  
His owne cote he would cut, and it distribute glad.

40.

The fourth appointed by his office was  
Poore prisioners to relieve with gracious ayd,



And captives to redeeme with price of bras  
 From Turkes and Sarazins, which them had stayd :  
 And though they faulty were, yet well he wayd,  
 That God to us forgiveth every howre  
 Much more then that why they in bands were layd ;  
 And he, that harrowd hell<sup>o</sup> with heavie stowre,  
 The faulty foules from thence brought to his heavenly  
 bowre.

41.

The fift had charge sick persons to attend,  
 And comfort those in point of death which lay ;  
 For them most needeth comfort in the end,  
 When sin, and hell, and death, doe most dismay  
 The feeble soule departing hence away.  
 All is but lost, that living we bestow,  
 If not well ended at our dying day.  
 O man ! have mind of that last bitter throw ;<sup>p</sup>  
 For as the tree does fall, so lyes it ever low.

42.

The fixt had charge of them now being dead,  
 In seemely fort their corfes to engrave,

---

<sup>o</sup> *And he, that harrowd hell.*] *Subdued hell.* So Chaucer, "Mill. T." 3512, edit. Tyrwhitt. "By Him that *harwed belle*;" harried, Sax. *harrassed*, *subdued*, says Mr. Tyrwhitt; who adds, that "our ancestors were very fond of a story of Christ's exploits in his *Descensus ad inferos*, which they called the *harrowing of belle*." They took it, with several others of the same stamp, from the gospel of Nicodemus. Fabr. Cod. Apoc. N. T. Todd. Perhaps the oldest play in the English language is on the subject of the Harrowing of Hell: it is contained in MS. Harl. 2253, and was privately printed by the present editor in 1836. See also "Hist. Engl. Dram. Poetry," ii. 213. C.

<sup>p</sup> *that last bitter throw.*] i. e. that last bitter *time*, or rather moment, *uno oculo conjectu*, as Skinner has it, and as Richardson properly explains it "in the time of instantaneous action." He has no example of the use of the word "throw" in this sense after Chaucer and Gower; but the following occurs in a poet, who, like Spenser, imitated a style of writing older than his own day:—

"So that they were defaced *in a throw*."

Francis Thynne's "Pride and Lowliness," *n. d.* but *c.* 1580. C.



And deck with dainty flowres their brydall bed,  
 That to their heavenly spouse both sweet and brave  
 They might appeare, when he their soules shall save.  
 The wondrous workmanship of Gods owne mould,  
 Whose face he made all beastes to feare, and gave  
 All in his hand, even dead we honour should.  
 Ah, dearest God, me graunt, I dead be not defould!

43.

The seventh, now after death and buriall done,  
 Had charge the tender Orphans of the dead  
 And wydowes ayd, least they should be undone:  
 In face of judgement he their right would plead,  
 Ne ought the powre of mighty men did dread  
 In their defence; nor would for gold or fee  
 Be wonne their rightfull causes downe to tread;  
 And, when they stood in most necessitee,  
 He did supply their want, and gave them ever free.

44.

There when the Elfin knight arrived was,  
 The first and chiefeſt of the ſeven, whoſe care  
 Was gueſts to welcome, towardes him did paſ;  
 Where ſeeing Mercie, that his ſteps upbare  
 And alwaies led, to her with reverence rare  
 He humbly louted<sup>a</sup> in meeke lowlineſſe,  
 And ſeemely welcome for her did prepare:  
 For of their order ſhe was Patroneſſe,  
 Albe Chariffa were their chiefeſt foundereſſe.

---

<sup>a</sup> *He humbly louted.*] To “lout” is to *bow*, to behave like a *low*, or humble perſon: ſo in Gower’s “Conf. Am.” B. vii.

“But nathles ſhe gan to *lowte*,  
 And knele unto hir hoſbonde.”

Shakeſpeare, in “Henry IV,” Pt. I. A. iv. Sc. 3, uſes “louted” for treated like a *lout*; but in “The World and the Child,” 1522, we have the verb as in Spenſer, where Manhood ſays,

“For the worlde and pryde hath avauanced me,  
 To me men *lowte* full lowe.” C.



45.

There she awhile him stayes, himselfe to rest,  
That to the rest more hable he might bee;  
During which time, in every good beheft,  
And godly worke of Almes and charitee,  
Shee him instructed with great industree.  
Shortly therein so perfect he became,  
That, from the first unto the last degree,  
His mortall life he learned had to frame  
In holy righteousnesse, without rebuke or blame.

46.

Thence forward by that painfull way they pas  
Forth to an hill that was both steepe and hy,  
On top whereof a sacred chappell was,  
And eke a litle Hermitage thereby,  
Wherein an aged holy man did lie,  
That day and night said his devotion,  
Ne other worldly busines did apply:  
His name was heavenly Contemplation;  
Of God and goodnes was his meditation.

47.

Great grace that old man to him given had;  
For God he often saw from heavens hight:  
All were his earthly eien both blunt and bad,  
And through great age had lost their kindly sight,  
Yet wondrous quick and persaunt was his spright,  
As Eagles eie that can behold the Sunne.  
That hill they scale with all their powre and might,  
That his fraile thighes, nigh weary and fordonne,  
Gan faile; but by her helpe the top at last he wonne.

48.

There they doe finde that godly aged Sire,  
With snowy lockes adowne his shoulders shed;  
As hoary frost with spangles doth attire  
The mossy braunches of an Oke halfe ded.



Each bone might through his body well be red,  
 And every finew feene, through his long fast :  
 For nought he car'd his carcas long unfed ;  
 His mind was full of spirituall repast,  
 And pyn'd his flesh to keepe his body low and chaste.<sup>r</sup>

49.

Who, when these two approching he aspide,  
 At their first presence grew agrieved fore,  
 That forst him lay his heavenly thoughts aside ;  
 And had he not that Dame respected more,<sup>s</sup>  
 Whom highly he did reverence and adore,  
 He would not once have moved for the knight.  
 They him saluted, standing far afore,  
 Who, well them greeting, humbly did requight,  
 And asked to what end they clomb that tedious hight ?

50.

“ What end,” (qd. she) “ should cause us take such paine,  
 But that same end, which every living wight  
 Should make his marke high heaven to attaine ?  
 Is not from hence the way, that leadeth right  
 To that most glorious house, that glistreth bright  
 With burning starres and everliving fire,  
 Whereof the keies are to thy hand behight<sup>t</sup>  
 By wise Fidelia ? She doth thee require,  
 To shew it to this knight, according his desire.”

51.

“ Thrise happy man,” said then the father grave,  
 “ Whose staggering steps thy steady hand doth lead,  
 And shewes the way his sinfull soule to save !

<sup>r</sup> *And pyn'd his flesh to keepe his body low and chaste.*] See Rom. viii. 13 ; 1 Cor. ix. 27. UPTON.

<sup>s</sup> *And had he not that Dame respected more.*] Greatly. See Introduct. F. Q. ii. St. 4. CHURCH.

<sup>t</sup> *are to thy hand behight.*] i. e. *entrusted*. See vol. i. p. 228, where “ hight ” without the prefix is met with in the same sense : also St. 64 of this Canto, where “ behight ” means *called*. C.



Who better can the way to heaven aread  
 Then thou thyfelfe, that was both borne and bred  
 In heavenly throne, where thousand Angels shine?  
 Thou doest the praiers of the righteous fead  
 Present before the majesty divine,  
 And his avenging wrath to clemency incline.

52.

“ Yet, since thou bidst, thy pleasure shalbe donne.  
 Then come, thou man of earth, and see the way,  
 That never yet was seene of Faries sonne;  
 That never leads the traveiler astray,  
 But after labors long and sad delay,  
 Brings them to joyous rest<sup>u</sup> and endlesse blis.  
 But first thou must a season fast and pray,  
 Till from her bands the spright assoiled is,<sup>x</sup>  
 And have her strength recur'd from fraile infirmitis.”

53.

That done, he leads him to the highest Mount;  
 Such one as that same mighty man of God,  
 That blood-red billowes, like a walled front,  
 On either side disparted with his rod,  
 Till that his army dry-foot through them yod,<sup>y</sup>  
 Dwelt forty daies upon; where, writt in stone  
 With bloody letters by the hand of God,

<sup>u</sup> *Brings them to joyous rest.*] Church remarks that the earliest editions read *Bring*; but he was not aware that in the folio 1611 the grammatical error is set right. C.

<sup>x</sup> *Till from her bands the spright assoiled is.*] Is *absolved*. Fr. *absoudre*. Often thus used by our old poets. Thus in “Pierce the Ploughmans Crede,” edit. 1553, Sign. B. iij.

“My soule I sette for thyn, to *asoile* the clene.”  
 And in the romance of “Robert the Devyll:”

“And for youre synnes euer youe muste be forye,

“For as yet I will not *assoylle* you.”

In Chaucer’s “Prol. Cant. T.” 663, edit. Urr. “*Affoiling*” is used for *Absolution*. TODD.

<sup>y</sup> *through them yod.*] Through them *went*: the past tense of the A. S. verb to *yede*. See also p. 48. C.



The bitter doome of death and balefull mone  
He did receive, whiles flashing fire about him shone :

54.

Or like that sacred hill, whose head full hie,  
Adorn'd with fruitfull Olives all arownd,  
Is, as it were for endlesse memory  
Of that deare Lord who oft thereon was fownd,  
For ever with a flowring girland crownd :  
Or like that pleasaunt Mount, that is for ay  
Through famous Poets verse each where renownd,<sup>z</sup>  
On which the thrise three learned Ladies play  
Their heavenly notes, and make full many a lovely lay.

55.

From thence, far off he unto him did shew  
A little path that was both steepe and long,  
Which to a goodly Citty led his vew ;  
Whose wals and towres were builded high and strong  
Of perle and precious stone, that earthly tong  
Cannot describe, nor wit of man can tell ;  
Too high a ditty for my simple song.  
The Citty of the greate king hight it well,  
Wherein eternall peace and happinesse doth dwell.

56.

As he thereon stood gazing, he might see  
The blessed Angels to and fro descend  
From highest heaven in gladsome companee,  
And with great joy into that Citty wend,  
As commonly as frend does with his frend.  
Whereat he wondred much, and gan enquire,  
What stately building durst so high extend  
Her lofty towres unto the starry sphere,  
And what unknownen nation there empeopled were ?

---

<sup>z</sup> *each where renownd.*] Here, for the sake of the rhyme, Spenser wrote "renownd," abandoning his former practice, enforced by an erratum, of spelling the word after its Fr. derivation : see vol. i. p. 247. C.



57.

“Faire Knight,” (qd. he) “Hierufalem that is,  
 The new Hierufalem, that God has built  
 For those to dwell in that are chosen his,  
 His chosen people, purg’d from sinful guilt  
 With pretious blood,<sup>a</sup> which cruelly was spilt  
 On cursed tree, of that unspotted lam,  
 That for the finnes of al the world was kilt:  
 Now are they Saints all in that Citty sam,<sup>b</sup>  
 More dear unto their God then younglings to their  
 dam.”

58.

“Till now,” said then the knight, “I weened well,  
 That great Cleopolis, where I have beene,  
 In which that fairest Fary Queene doth dwell,  
 The fairest citty was that might be seene;  
 And that bright towre, all built of cristall clene,  
 Panthea, seemd the brightest thing that was;  
 But now by prooffe all otherwise I weene,  
 For this great Citty that does far surpas,  
 And this bright Angels towre quite dims that towre of  
 glas.”

59.

“Most trew,” then said the holy aged man;

<sup>a</sup> *With pretious blood.*] It is “*piteous* blood” in the 4to. 1590; but in the list of errata we are instructed to substitute “*pretious*” for *piteous*: nevertheless, it still remains “*piteous* blood” in the folio 1611, which in Drayton’s copy is amended in MS. to *pretious*. C.

<sup>b</sup> *all in that Citty sam.*] The commentators have left the adverb “*sam*” unexplained, as if it were to be understood *same*: nothing can be more erroneous. “*Sam*” means *together*; and “*all in that Citty sam*” is all in that city together. “*Sam*” is not found in Richardson; but it is from the A. S., and the Germans constantly employ the word *zusammen* in the sense of together. The verb to “*sam*” (Ger. *sammeln*, to collect) is still heard in the north of England; “*and sam it up*” means collect it together. The adverb “*sam*” often occurs in the “*Widkirk Plays*,” printed by the Surtees Society in 1836. C.



“ Yet is Cleopolis, for earthly frame,<sup>c</sup>  
 The fairest peece that eie beholden can ;  
 And well beseemes all knights of noble name,  
 That covett in th’ immortall booke of fame  
 To be eternized, that fame to haunt,  
 And doen their service to that soveraigne Dame,  
 That glory does to them for guerdon graunt :  
 For she is heavenly borne, and heaven may justly vaunt.

60.

“ And thou, faire ymp, sprong out from English race,  
 How ever now accompted Elfins sonne,  
 Well worthy doest thy service for her grace,  
 To aide a virgin desolate, foredonne ;  
 But when thou famous victory hast wonne,  
 And high emongst all knights hast hong thy shield,  
 Thenceforth the suitt of earthly conquest shonne,  
 And wash thy hands from guilt of bloody field :  
 For blood can nought but sin, and wars but sorrows yield.

61.

“ Then seek this path that I to thee presage,<sup>d</sup>  
 Which after all to heaven shall thee send ;  
 Then peaceably thy painefull pilgrimage  
 To yonder same Hierusalem doe bend,  
 Where is for thee ordaind a blessed end :  
 For thou, emongst those Saints whom thou doest see,  
 Shalt be a Saint, and thine owne nations frend  
 And Patrone : thou *Saint George* shalt called bee,  
*Saint George* of mery *England*, the signe of victoree.”

---

<sup>c</sup> *Yet is Cleopolis, for earthly frame.*] Corrected by the edit. 1751, by Mr. Church, Mr. Upton, and Tonson’s edit. of 1758, from the errata, subjoined to the first edition. Both Spenser’s editions, however, read *fame*, which the folios and the first edition of Hughes follow. Dr. Jortin, who examined only the later editions, proposed to read *frame*.

TODD.

<sup>d</sup> *Then seek this path that I to thee presage.*] *Point out with my hand.* The French so use *présager*. Compare with the fourth line. CHURCH.



## 62.

“Unworthy wretch,” (qd. he) “of so great grace,  
 How dare I thinke such glory to attaine?”  
 “These, that have it attaynd, were in like cace,  
 As wretched men, and lived in like paine.”<sup>e</sup>  
 “But deeds of armes must I at last be faine  
 And Ladies love to leave, so dearely bought?”  
 “What need of armes, where peace doth ay remaine,”  
 (Said he) “and bitter battailes all are fought?”<sup>f</sup>  
 As for loose loves, they’re vaine, and vanish into  
 nought.”<sup>g</sup>

## 63.

“O! let me not,” (quoth he) “then turne againe  
 Backe to the world, whose joyes so fruitlesse are;  
 But let me heare for aie in peace remaine,  
 Or streightway on that last long voiage fare,  
 That nothing may my present hope empare.”  
 “That may not be,” (said he) “ne maist thou yitt  
 Forgoe that royal maides bequeathed care,  
 Who did her cause into thy hand committ,  
 Till from her cursed foe thou have her freely quitt.”

## 64.

“Then shall I soone,” (qd. he) “so God me grace,  
 Abett that virgins cause disconsolate,  
 And shortly back returne unto this place,

<sup>e</sup> *As wretched men, and lived in like paine.*] These words are, of course, spoken by Contemplation; and, to make it clearer, editions subsequent to the first insert “Quoth he,” and omit “men:”

“(Quoth he,) as wretched, and liv’d in like paine.”

With this explanatory note, we see no adequate reason for abandoning the ancient text of the poet. C.

<sup>f</sup> *and bitter battailes all are fought.*] In later impressions the words are “and battailes none are to be fought;” but the older text is quite clear, and the epithet adds strength to the meaning. C.

<sup>g</sup> *As for loose loves, they’re vaine, and vanish into nought.*] So the 4to. 1590, and rightly; but the folio 1611 omits “they,” and thus obscures the sense. Here again, therefore, we advisedly follow the ancient text. C.



To walke this way in Pilgrims poore estate.  
 But now aread, old father, why of late  
 Didst thou behight me borne of English blood,  
 Whom all a Faeries sonne doen nominate?"

"That word shall I," (saide he) "avouchen good,  
 Sith to thee is unknowne the cradle of thy brood.

65.

"For, well I wote, thou springst from ancient race  
 Of Saxon kinges,<sup>b</sup> that have with mightie hand,  
 And many bloody battailes fought in face,<sup>i</sup>  
 High reard their royall throne in Britans land,  
 And vanquisht them, unable to withstand:  
 From thence a Faery thee unweeting reft,  
 There as thou slepst in tender swadling band,  
 And her base Elfin brood there for thee left:  
 Such, men do Chaungelings call, so chaung'd by Faeries  
 theft.

66.

"Thence she thee brought into this Faery lond,  
 And in an heaped furrow did thee hyde;  
 Where thee a Ploughman all unweeting fond,

<sup>b</sup> *Of Saxon kinges.*] St. George, by the generality of writers, is supposed to be a Cappadocian; by some, a Cilician. The romance-writer of the "Seven Champions of Christendom" [Richard Johnson] makes him to be born of English parentage, and of the royal blood; his mother, a king's daughter; and his birth-place, Coventry; but that, as soon as born, he was miraculously conveyed away by an enchantress, called Kalyb [p. 5, ed. 1608]: to which story Spenser alludes in this Stanza. This same story of changelings, he has likewise in F. Q. iii. iii. 26, speaking of Arthegal. Shakespeare likewise gives his poetical testimony to these vulgar tales. UPTON.

<sup>i</sup> *fought in face.*] This is the text of the 4to. 1590; and why it should have been altered, in subsequent editions, to the tame reading of "fought in place" is nowhere stated. It seems strange also that modern editors should have adopted *place* without observation, when "fought in face," i. e. face to face, is so much more expressive. It deserves noting likewise that Drayton, in his copy of the folio 1611, with his usual judgment and good taste, restores "face." "Britans land," in the next line, is also the reading of the edit. 4to. 1590. C.



As he his toylefome teme that way did guyde,  
 And brought thee up in ploughmans ftate to byde,  
 Whereof Georgos he thee gave to name;<sup>k</sup>  
 Till prickt with courage, and thy forces pryde,  
 To Fary court thou cam'ft to feek for fame,  
 And prove thy puiſſant armes, as ſeemes thee beſt became."

67.

"O holy Sire!" (quoth he) "how ſhall I quight  
 The many favours I with thee have fownd,  
 That haſt my name and nation redd aright,  
 And taught the way that does to heaven bownd!"  
 This faide, adowne he looked to the grownd  
 To have returnd; but dazed were his eyne  
 Through paſſing brightnes, which did quite confound  
 His feeble ſence, and too exceeding ſhyne.  
 So darke are earthly thinges compard to things divine.

68.

At laſt, whenas himſelfe he gan to fynd,  
 To Una back he caſt him to retyre,  
 Who him awaited ſtill with penſive mynd.  
 Great thanks, and goodly meed, to that good fyre  
 He thens departing gave for his paynes hyre:  
 So came to Una, who him joyd to ſee;  
 And, after litle reſt, gan him deſyre  
 Of her adventure myndfull for to bee.  
 So leave they take of Cælia and her daughters three.

---

<sup>k</sup> *Whereof Georgos he thee gave to name.*] *Georgos* in the Greek language ſignifying a *huſbandman*, our poet hence takes occaſion (according to his uſual method) of introducing the marvellous tale told of Tages, and applying it to his hero. Tages was the ſon of the earth: a ploughman, "As he his toilsome teme that way did guide," found him under the furrow. This wonderful tale the reader may ſee in Cicer. De Divin. ii. 23, Ovid. Met. xv. 553, and in other writers. Hence, in alluſion to his name *Georgos*, Spenſer, in his letter to Sir W. R. calls him "*a clouniſh young man*; who, having deſired a boone of the queen of Faeries, reſted himſelf on the floor, unfit through his *ruſticitie* for a better place." UPTON.





## CANTO XI.

*The knight with that old Dragon fights  
Two days incessantly:  
The third him overthrowes, and gayns  
Most glorious victory.*



I.  
HIGH time now gan it wex for Una fayre  
To thinke of those her captive Parents  
deare,  
And their forwafted kingdom to re-  
payre :

Whereto whenas they now approched neare,  
With hartie wordes her knight she gan to cheare,  
And in her modest maner thus bespake :  
“ Deare knight, as deare as ever knight was deare,  
That all these sorrowes suffer for my sake,  
High heaven behold the tedious toyle ye for me take !

2.  
“ Now are we come unto my native foyle,  
And to the place where all our perilles dwell ;  
Here hauntes that feend, and does his dayly spoyle ;  
Therefore, henceforth bee at your keeping well,<sup>a</sup>  
And ever ready for your foeman fell :  
The sparke of noble corage now awake,

---

<sup>a</sup> *bee at your keeping well.*] It is “ *it your keeping* ” in the 4to. 1590 ;  
but amended to “ *at your keeping* ” in the errata. C.



And strive your excellent selfe to excell :  
 That shall ye evermore renowned make  
 Above all knights on earth, that batteill undertake."

3.

And pointing forth,<sup>b</sup> "Lo ! yonder is," (saide she)  
 "The brazen towre, in which my parents deare  
 For dread of that huge feend emprisond be ;  
 Whom I from far see on the walles appeare,  
 Whose sight my feeble soule doth greatly cheare :  
 And on the top of all I do espie  
 The watchman wayting tydings glad to heare ;  
 That, (O my Parents !) might I happily  
 Unto you bring, to ease you of your misery !"

4.

With that they heard a roaring hideous fownd,  
 That all the ayre with terror filled wyde,  
 And seemd uneath<sup>c</sup> to shake the stedfast ground.  
 Eftsoones that dreadful Dragon they espyde,  
 Where stretcht he lay upon the sunny side  
 Of a great hill, himselfe like a great hill :  
 But, all so soone as he from far descryde  
 Those glistering armes that heven with light did fill,  
 He rousd himselfe full blyth, and hastned them untill.

5.

Then badd the knight his Lady yede aloof,<sup>d</sup>  
 And to an hill herselfe withdraw asyde ;

<sup>b</sup> *And pointing forth, &c.*] This Stanza was either omitted in the first edition by the carelessness of the printer, or afterwards added by the poet. It is found, though no notice is taken of it, in the second and subsequent editions. CHURCH.

<sup>c</sup> *And seemd uneath.*] So all the editions. I suppose it means *beneath*, and is a contraction for *underneath*. I do not recollect that he elsewhere uses *uneath* in this sense. CHURCH. "Uneath" sometimes means *scarcely*; but generally *uneasily*, (see p. 33); and Mr. Child, in his edit. Boston, 1855, suggests that here it may perhaps be understood as *almost*. C.

<sup>d</sup> *his Lady yede aloof.*] i. e. to go aloof. We have already had the verb to "yede" in its past tense of *yode*, or *yod*, (p. 40). C.



From whence she might behold that battailles proof,  
 And eke be safe from daunger far descryde.  
 She him obeyd, and turnd a little wyde.—  
 Now, O thou sacred Muse! most learned Dame,  
 Fayre ympe of Phœbus and his aged bryde,  
 The Nourse of time and everlasting fame,  
 That warlike handes<sup>e</sup> ennoblest with immortall name;

6.

O! gently come into my feeble brest;  
 Come gently, but not with that mightie rage,  
 Wherewith the martiall troupes thou doest infest,  
 And hartes of great Heroës<sup>f</sup> doest enrage,  
 That nought their kindled corage may aswage:  
 Soone as thy dreadfull trompe begins to sownd,  
 The God of warre with his fiers equipage  
 Thou doest awake, sleepe never he so sownd;  
 And scared nations<sup>g</sup> doest with horror sterne astownd.

7.

Fayre Goddesse, lay that furious fitt asyde,  
 Till I of warres<sup>h</sup> and bloody Mars doe sing,

<sup>e</sup> *That warlike bandes.*] All copies agree in "handes," and it has universally been understood as *persons*; but Drayton, in the margin of his folio 1611, has altered *b* to *h*, and made it "warlike *bandes*." We do not adopt the emendation, but think it plausible: see below, "martiall troupes." See also the note on "hands," or *bands*, p. 1. C.

<sup>f</sup> *And hartes of great Heroës.*] It is not uncommon to find *heroes* extended into three syllables by our old poets. In the F. Q. are other instances. So, in Spenser's Verses likewise, prefixed to the "History of George Castriot," &c. 1596:—

"And old *heroës*, which their world did daunt."

And thus Browne, in the Dedication to his "Brit. Past." 1616:—

"Where brave *heroës* worths the Sisters sing."

Again, "Brit. Past." B. i. p. 92:—

"When our *heroë*, honour'd Essex, died." TODD.

<sup>g</sup> *And scared nations.*] Corrected from the errata: it was before, "And *feared* nations." CHURCH.

<sup>h</sup> *Till I of warres, &c.*] See the Letter to Sir Walter Raleigh, Verses to Lord Essex, and F. Q. i. xii. 18, where Spenser gives intimations of his design of writing an heroic poem in honour of Queen



And Bryton fieldes with Sarazin blood bedyde,  
 Twixt that great faery Queene and Paynim king,  
 That with their horror heven and earth did ring;  
 A worke of labour long, and endlesse prayse:  
 But now a while lett downe that haughtie string,  
 And to my tunes thy second tenor rayse,  
 That I this man of God his godly armes may blaze.

8.

By this, the dreadful Beast drew nigh to hand,  
 Halfe flying and halfe footing in his haste,  
 That with his largenesse measured much land,  
 And made wide shadow under his huge waste;  
 As mountaine doth the valley overcaste.  
 Approching nigh, he reared high afore  
 His body monstrous, horrible, and vaste;  
 Which, to increase his wondrous greatnes more,  
 Was swoln with wrath and poyson, and with bloody gore;

9.

And over all with brazen scales was armd,  
 Like plated cote of steele, so couched neare  
 That nought mote perce; ne might his corse bee harmd  
 With dint of swerd, nor push of pointed speare:  
 Which as an Eagle, seeing pray appeare,  
 His aery plumes doth rouze, full rudely dight;  
 So shaked he, that horror was to heare:  
 For as the clashing of an armor bright,  
 Such noyse his rouzed scales did send unto the knight.

10.

His flaggy winges, when forth he did display,  
 Were like two sayles, in which the hollow wynd  
 Is gathered full, and worketh speedy way:  
 And eke the pennes, that did his pineons bynd,

---

Elisabeth. CHURCH. The subject of this poem was to be the wars  
 betwixt the Faerie Queene and the Paynim King, meaning historically  
 Queen Elizabeth and the King of Spain. UPTON.



Were like mayne-yardes with flying canvas lynd;<sup>i</sup>  
 With which whenas him list the ayre to beat,  
 And there by force unwonted passage fynd,  
 The cloudes before him fledd for terror great,  
 And all the hevens stood still amazed with his threat.

## 11.

His huge long tayle, wownd up in hundred foldes,  
 Does overspred his long braf-scaly back,  
 Whose wreathed boughtes<sup>j</sup> when ever he unfolds,  
 And thick entangled knots adown does slack,  
 Bespotted as with shieldes<sup>k</sup> of red and blacke,  
 It sweepeth all the land behind him farre,  
 And of three furlongs does but litle lacke;  
 And at the point two stinges in fixed arre,  
 Both deadly sharp, that sharpest steele exceeden farre.

## 12.

But stinges and sharpest steele did far exceed  
 The sharpnesse of his cruel rending clawes:  
 Dead was it sure, as sure as death in deed,  
 What ever thing does touch his ravenous pawes,  
 Or what within his reach he ever drawes.  
 But his most hideous head my tongue to tell  
 Does tremble; for his deepe devouring jawes  
 Wyde gaped, like the griesly mouth of hell,  
 Through which into his darke abyffe all ravin fell.

## 13.

And, that more wondrous was, in either jaw

<sup>i</sup> *with flying canvas lynd.*] "Lynd" is *kynd* in the 4to. 1590 only. C.

<sup>j</sup> *Whose wreathed boughtes.*] *Twists*, or *folds*. See the same word, applied to the Dragon, F. Q. i. i. 15, and to a serpent, in Spenser's "Virgil's Gnat," St. 32. A passage in Milton's "Allegro" illustrates the use of the word in this old sense:—

"——— many a winding BOUT

"Of linked sweetness long drawn out." TODD.

<sup>k</sup> *Bespotted as with shieldes.*] Corrected in the errata; though I, for my part, dislike not "Bespotted *all* with shieldes;" for *shiels* mean *scales*. UPTON.



Three ranckes of yron teeth enraunged were,  
 In which yett trickling blood, and gobbets raw,  
 Of late devoured bodies did appeare,  
 That fight thereof bredd cold congealed feare;  
 Which to increafe, and all atonce to kill,  
 A cloud of smothering smoke, and sulphure feare,  
 Out of his stinking gorge forth steemed still,  
 That all the ayre about with smoke and stench did fill.

14.

His blazing eyes, like two bright shining shieldes,  
 Did burne with wrath, and sparkled living fyre:  
 As two broad Beacons, sett in open fieldes,  
 Send forth their flames far of to every shyre,<sup>1</sup>  
 And warning give that enemies conspyre  
 With fire and sword the region to invade:  
 So flam'd his eyne with rage and rancorous yre;  
 But far within, as in a hollow glade,  
 Those glaring lampes were sett that made a dreadfull  
 shade.

15.

So dreadfully he towards him did pas,  
 Forelifting up a loft his speckled brest,  
 And often bounding on the brused gras,  
 As for great joyance of his newcome gwest.  
 Eftsoones he gan advance his haughty crest,  
 As chauffed Bore his bristles doth upreare;  
 And shoke his scales to battaile ready drest,  
 That made the Redcrosse knight nigh quake for feare,  
 As bidding bold defyaunce to his foeman neare.

16.

The knight gan fayrely couch his steady speare,  
 And fierfely ran at him with rigorous might:

---

<sup>1</sup> *far of to every shyre.*] It was most usual in the time of Spenser to spell off "of;" but the practice had somewhat changed when the folio 1611 was printed. Another instance occurs on p. 55. C.



The pointed Steele, arriving rudely theare,  
His harder hyde would nether perce nor bight,  
But, glauncing by, foorth passed forward right.  
Yet fore amoved with so puissaunt push,  
The wrathfull beast about him turned light,  
And him so rudely, passing by, did brush  
With his long tayle, that horse and man to ground did rush.

17.

Both horse and man up lightly rose againe,  
And fresh encounter towards him addrest;  
But th' ydle stroke yet backe recoyld in vaine,  
And found no place his deadly point to rest.  
Exceeding rage enflam'd the furious Beast,  
To be avenged of so great despight;  
For never felt his imperceable brest  
So wondrous force from hand of living wight;  
Yet had he prov'd the powre of many a puissant knight.

18.

Then, with his waving wings displayed wyde,  
Himselfe up high he lifted from the ground,  
And with strong flight did forcibly divyde  
The yielding ayre, which nigh too feeble found  
Her flitting parts, and element unsound,  
To beare so great a weight: he, cutting way  
With his broad sayles, about him soared round;  
At last, low stouping with unweldy sway,  
Snatcht up both horse and man, to beare them quite away.

19.

Long he them bore above the subject plaine,  
So far as Ewghen bow a shaft may fend,  
Till struggling strong did him at last constraine  
To let them downe before his flightes end:  
As hagard hauke,<sup>m</sup> presuming to contend

---

<sup>m</sup> *As bagard hauke.*] A wild hawk. CHURCH.



With hardy fowle above his hable might,  
 His wearie pounces all in vaine doth spend  
 To trusse the pray too heavy for his flight;  
 Which, comming down to ground, does free it selfe by  
 fight.

20.

He so disseized<sup>n</sup> of his gryping grosse,  
 The knight his thrillant speare again assayd  
 In his bras-plated body to embosse,<sup>o</sup>  
 And three mens strength unto the stroake he layd;  
 Wherewith the stiffe beame quaked as affrayd,  
 And glauncing from his scaly necke did glyde  
 Close under his left wing, then broad displayd:  
 The percing steele there wrought a wound full wyde,  
 That with the uncouth smart the Monster lowdly cryde.

21.

He cryde, as raging seas are wont to rore  
 When wintry storme his wrathful wreck does threat;<sup>p</sup>  
 The rolling billowes beate the ragged shore,  
 As they the earth would shoulder from her seat;  
 And greedy gulfe does gape, as he would eat  
 His neighbour element in his revenge:

<sup>n</sup> *He so disseized.*] *Dispossessed*. A law term. TODD.

<sup>o</sup> *In his bras-plated body to embosse.*] It may be doubted whether "embosse" be derived from *emboisté*, which Cotgrave gives, and Todd follows: it more probably comes from the Fr. *emboucher*. The knight wished to thrust his spear into the dragon's body, as into a *mouth*. A hunted beast, when it foams *at the mouth*, is said to be *emboist*, or *emboft*, from the same Fr. word, *emboucher*; and it seems to have nothing to do with the *bosses* of foam, which Richardson tells us a tired animal throws out of its mouth. The old "bosse at Billingsgate" was a sort of fountain, a *mouth* out of which water constantly flowed, and it was called "bosse," as a corruption of *bouche*. Respecting this bosse, see Stow's "Survey of London," 1599, 4to. p. 164. C.

<sup>p</sup> *his wrathful wreck does threat.*] This is one of the few old instances in which "wreck" was not spelt *wrack*. Some modern editors have endeavoured to restore this obsolete orthography, and print *wrack* in all cases; but in this impression we adhere precisely to the forms of words adopted by Spenser. C.



Then gin the bluftring brethren boldly threat  
 To move the world from off his ftedfaft henge,  
 And boyftrous battaile make, each other to avenge.

22.

The fteely head ftuck faft ftill in his flefh,  
 Till with his cruell clawes he fnatcht the wood,  
 And quite a funder broke. Forth flowed fresh  
 A gushing river of blacke gory blood,  
 That drowned all the land whereon he ftood;  
 The ftream thereof would drive a water-mill:  
 Trebly augmented was his furious mood  
 With bitter fence of his deepe rooted ill,  
 That flames of fire he threw forth from his large nofethril.

23.

His hideous tayle then hurled he about,  
 And therewith all enwrapt the nimble thyes  
 Of his froth-fomy fteed, whose courage ftout  
 Striving to loofe the knott that faft him tyes,  
 Himfelfe in ftreighter bandes too rafh implies,<sup>a</sup>  
 That to the ground he is perforce conft-raynd  
 To throw his ryder; who can quickly ryfe  
 From of the earth, with durty blood diftayne,  
 For that reprochfull fall right fowly he difdaynd;

24.

And fercely tooke his trenchand blade<sup>r</sup> in hand,  
 With which he ftroke fo furious and fo fell,

<sup>a</sup> *Himfelfe in ftreighter bandes too rafh implies.*] Our poet has plainly Virgil in view, in his famous description of the ferpents and Laocoon:

“Ille fimul manibus tendit divellere nodos.”—

“Corpora natorum ferpens amplexus uterque

“*Implicat.*”—

You have the very word *implies*, “*Sefe implicat,*” *himfelf implies*; Ital. *implicare*, to *entangle*. UPTON. We have already had “*implies*” in the fenfe of *enfolds*, vol. i. p. 267. C.

<sup>r</sup> *And fercely tooke his trenchand blade.*] See before, F. Q. i. i. 17. So, in “*Huon de Bordeaux*,” edit. Rouen. f. d. fol. 268, a. “*L’espée trenchante.*” TODD.



That nothing seemd the puissaunce could withstand:  
 Upon his crest the hardned yron fell,  
 But his more hardned crest was armd so well,  
 That deeper dint therein it would not make;  
 Yet so extremely did the buffe him quell,  
 That from thenceforth he shund the like to take,  
 But when he saw them come he did them still forsake.

25.

The knight was wroth to see his stroke beguyld,  
 And smot againe with more outrageous might;  
 But backe againe the sparcling steele recoyld,  
 And left not any marke where it did light,  
 As if in Adamant rocke it had beene pight.  
 The beast, impatient of his smarting wound  
 And of so fierce and forcible despight,  
 Thought with his winges to stye<sup>s</sup> above the ground;  
 But his late wounded wing unserviceable found.

26.

Then full of grieve and anguish vehement,  
 He lowdly brayd, that like was never heard;  
 And from his wide devouring oven sent  
 A flake of fire, that flashing in his beard  
 Him all amazd, and almost made afeard:  
 The scorching flame fore swunged all his face,<sup>t</sup>  
 And through his armour all his body feard,

---

<sup>s</sup> *Thought with his winges to stye.*] See note, vol. i. p. 161, respecting the use of this word "stye," which not unfrequently occurs in Spenser and other poets of his day. We have it again in *F. Q.*, B. iii. C. ii. St. 36; and B. iv. C. ix. St. 33, as well as in our poet's "Visions of Bellay" and "Muiopotmos." Spenser's friend, Gabriel Harvey, employs it in prose in his "Pierce's Supererrogation," 4to. 1593,—*"Hawtie minds may stie aloft, and hasten their owne overthrow,"* &c. It is nowhere a misprint for *fly*. C.

<sup>t</sup> *fore swunged all his face.*] For *singed*, or *sindged*. Spenser's own editions read *swinged*: the folios, and Hughes, *singed*. CHURCH. We may reasonably doubt if it be not a misprint in the 4tos. 1590 and 1596 for *singed*, but we need not vary from those old copies. C.



That he could not endure so cruell cace,  
But thought his armes to leave, and helmet to unlace.

27.

Not that great Champion of the antique world,  
Whom famous Poetes verse so much doth vaunt,  
And hath for twelve huge labours high extold,  
So many furies and sharpe fits did haunt,  
When him the poysoned garment did enchaunt,  
With Centaures blood and bloody verses charmd;  
As did this knight twelve thousand dolours daunt,  
Whom fyrie steele now burnt, that erst him armd;  
That erst him goodly armd, now most of all him harmd.

28.

Faynt, wearie, fore, emboyled, grieved, brent,  
With heat, toyle, wounds, armes, smart, and inward fire,  
That never man such mischiefes did torment:  
Death better were; death did he oft desire,  
But death will never come when needes require.  
Whom so dismayd when that his foe beheld,  
He cast to suffer him no more respire,  
But gan his sturdy sterne about to weld,  
And him so strongly stroke, that to the ground him feld.

29.

It fortun'd, (as fayre it then befell)  
Behynd his backe, unweeting, where he stood,  
Of auncient time there was a springing well,  
From which fast trickled forth a silver flood,  
Full of great vertues, and for med'cine good:  
Whylome, before that cursed Dragon got  
That happy land, and all with innocent blood  
Defyld those sacred waves, it rightly hot<sup>u</sup>  
The well of life; ne yet his vertues had forgot:

---

<sup>u</sup> *Defyld those sacred waves, it rightly hot.*] *Was named, called.* So Gower, fol. xii. "There was a duke, and he was *botte* Mundus." So below, *behott*, St. 38. UPTON. We have already had "hote" in the sense of *named*, or *called*, in "Shep. Cal." July, vol. i. p. 86. C.



30.

For unto life the dead it could restore,  
 And guilt of sinfull crimes cleane wash away;  
 Those that with sicknesse were infected fore  
 It could recure; and aged long decay  
 Renew, as it were borne that very day.<sup>x</sup>  
 Both Silo this, and Jordan, did excell,  
 And th' English Bath, and eke the German Spau;  
 Ne can Cephise, nor Hebrus, match this well:  
 Into the same the knight back overthrowen fell.

31.

Now gan the golden Phœbus for to steepe  
 His fierie face in billowes of the west,  
 And his faint steedes watred in Ocean deepe,  
 Whiles from their journall labours they did rest;  
 When that infernall Monster, having kest  
 His wearie foe into that living well,  
 Can high advaunce his broad discoloured brest  
 Above his wonted pitch, with countenance fell,  
 And clapt his yron wings as victor he did dwell.

32.

Which when his pensive Lady<sup>y</sup> saw from farre,  
 Great woe and sorrow did her soule assay,  
 As weening that the sad end of the warre;  
 And gan to highest God entirely pray  
 That feared chaunce from her to turne away:  
 With folded hands, and knees full lowly bent,  
 All night shee watcht; ne once adowne would lay  
 Her dainty limbs in her sad dreriment,  
 But praying still did wake, and waking did lament.

<sup>x</sup> *as it were borne that very day.*] i. e. as if "aged long decay" had been born that very day. So all the old copies; but modern editors, without authority, as well as without notice, have substituted *one* for "it." Even Mr. Child, in his impression, Boston, 1855, has *one*. C.

<sup>y</sup> *Which when his pensive Lady.*] So all the editions: but, as the Dragon is last spoken of, I would suppose that Spenser gave, "Which when *the* pensive Lady," &c. CHURCH.



33.

The morrow next gan earely to appeare,  
 That Titan rose to runne his daily race;  
 But earely, ere the morrow next gan reare  
 Out of the sea faire Titans deawy face,  
 Up rose the gentle virgin from her place,  
 And looked all about, if she might spy  
 Her loved knight to move his manly pace:  
 For she had great doubt of his safety,<sup>z</sup>  
 Since late she saw him fall before his enemy.

34.

At last she saw where he upstart brave  
 Out of the well, wherein he drenched lay:  
 As Eagle, fresh out of the ocean wave,  
 Where he hath lefte his plumes all hory gray,  
 And deckt himselfe with fethers youthly gay,  
 Like Eyas hauke<sup>a</sup> up mounts unto the skies,  
 His newly-budded pineons to assay,  
 And marveiles at himselfe stil as he flies:  
 So new this new-borne knight to battell new did rise.

35.

Whom when the damned feend so fresh did spy,  
 No wonder if he wondred at the sight,  
 And doubted whether his late enemy  
 It were, or other new supplied knight.  
 He now, to prove his late-renewed might,

<sup>z</sup> *For she had great doubt of his safety.*] "Safety" was not unfrequently used as a trisyllable by our older poets, and the measure of the verse, here and elsewhere, sufficiently indicates the fact. C.

<sup>a</sup> *Like Eyas hauke.*] i. e. like a young or newly-fledged hawk; not an *unfledged* hawk, as Church interprets it: the very quotation he makes from our poet's "Hymn of Heavenly Love,"

"Ere flitting Time could wag his *eyas* wings;" shows that "*eyas*" was not used for *unfledged*, but for *newly-fledged*. True it is, that the word is derived from the A. S. *ey*, an egg; but neither here, nor in Shakespeare, does it mean more than young: see "Hamlet," A. ii. Sc. 2, and "M. W. of Windsor," A. iii. Sc. 3. C.



High brandishing his bright deaw-burning blade,  
 Upon his crested scalp so fore did smite,  
 That to the scull a yawning wound it made :  
 The deadly dint his dulled fences all dismaid.

36.

I wote not whether the revenging steele  
 Were hardned with that holy water dew  
 Wherein he fell, or sharper edge did feele,  
 Or his baptized hands now greater grew,  
 Or other secret vertue did ensue ;  
 Els never could the force of fleshly arme,  
 Ne molten mettall, in his blood embrew ;  
 For till that stownd could never wight him harme  
 By subtilty, nor flight, nor might, nor mighty charme.

37.

The cruell wound enraged him fore,  
 That loud he yelled<sup>b</sup> for exceeding paine ;  
 As hundred ramping Lions seemd to rore,  
 Whom ravenous hunger did thereto constraîne.  
 Then gan he tosse aloft his stretched traine,  
 And therewith scourge the buxome aire<sup>c</sup> so fore,  
 That to his force to yelden it was faine ;  
 Ne ought his sturdy strokes might stand afore,  
 That high trees overthrew, and rocks in peeces tore.

38.

The same advauncing high above his head,  
 With sharpe intended sting so rude him smott,  
 That to the earth him drove, as stricken dead ;

---

<sup>b</sup> *That loud he yelled.*] *Yelded* in the edit. 1590, but obviously a mere misprint ; the old compositor having taken up *d* instead of *l*. When Todd quoted *yelled* from Chaucer, ("Cant. T." edit. Tyrw. l. 15395,) he seems to have forgotten that it was merely the plural of "yelled:" he "yelled" makes they *yelled*; and Spenser's original text is, in fact, thus confirmed. C.

<sup>c</sup> *And therewith scourge the buxome aire.*] The *buxom air*, that is, the *yielding air*, is a common phrase in our old poetry. TODD.



Ne living wight would have him life behott :  
 The mortall sting his angry needle shott  
 Quite through his shield, and in his shoulder seasd,  
 Where fast it stucke, ne would thereout be gott :  
 The grieve thereof him wondrous fore diseasd,  
 Ne might his rancling paine with patience be appeasd.

39.

But yet, more mindfull of his honour deare  
 Then of the grievous smart which him did wring,  
 From loathed foile he can him lightly reare,  
 And strove to loose the far infixed sting :<sup>d</sup>  
 Which when in vaine he tryde with struggeling,  
 Inflam'd with wrath, his raging blade he hefte,  
 And strooke so strongly, that the knotty string  
 Of his huge taile he quite a sonder cleft ;  
 Five joints thereof he hewd, and but the stump him left.

40.

Hart cannot thinke what outrage and what cries,  
 With fowle enfouldred smoake and flashing fire,  
 The hell-bred beast threw forth unto the skies,  
 That all was covered with darknesse dire :  
 Then, fraught with rancour and engorged yre,  
 He cast at once him to avenge for all ;  
 And, gathering up himselfe out of the mire  
 With his uneven wings, did fiercely fall  
 Upon his funne-bright shield, and grypt it fast withall.

41.

Much was the man encombred with his hold,  
 In feare to lose his weapon in his paw,  
 Ne wist yett how his talaunts to unfold ;  
 Nor harder was<sup>e</sup> from Cerberus greedy jaw

<sup>d</sup> *the far infixed sting.*] In the second edition *string* is brought up from the 7th line, and *sting* is carried down in the room of it. CHURCH.

<sup>e</sup> *Nor harder was.*] The 4tos. read "*For* harder was;" and the folios "*Nor* harder was:" an easy misprint, *For* instead of "*Nor*." C.



To plucke a bone, then from his cruell claw  
 To reave by strength the griped gage away :  
 Thrife he assayd it from his foote to draw,  
 And thrife in vaine to draw it did assay ;  
 It booted nought to thinke to robbe him of his pray.

42.

Tho, when he saw no power might prevaile,  
 His trusty sword he cald to his last aid,  
 Wherewith he fierfly did his foe assaile,  
 And double blowes about him stoutly laid,  
 That glauncing fire out of the yron plaid,  
 As sparkles from the Andvile use to fly,  
 When heavy hammers on the wedg are swaid :  
 Therewith at last he forst him to unty  
 One of his grasping feete, him to defend thereby.

43.

The other foote, fast fixed on his shield,  
 Whenas no strength nor stroks mote him constraine  
 To loose, ne yet the warlike pledg to yield,  
 He smott thereat with all his might and maine,  
 That nought so wondrous puissaunce might sustaine :  
 Upon the joint the lucky steele did light,  
 And made such way that hewd it quite in twaine ;  
 The paw yett missed not his minisht<sup>f</sup> might,  
 But hong still on the shield, as it at first was pight.

44.

For grieve thereof and divelish despight,  
 From his infernall founace forth he threw  
 Huge flames that dimmed all the heavens light,  
 Enrold in duskish smoke and brimstone blew :  
 As burning Aetna from his boyling stew  
 Doth belch out flames, and rockes in peeces broke,

---

<sup>f</sup> *The paw yett missed not his minisht might.*] His *diminished* might.  
*Minished* is used in our translation of the Bible. TODD.



And ragged ribs of mountaines molten new,  
Enwrapt in coleblacke clouds and filthy smoke,  
That al the land with stench and heven with horror choke.

45.

The heate whereof, and harmefull pestilence,  
So sore him noyd, that forst him to retire  
A little backward for his best defence,  
To save his body from the scorching fire,  
Which he from hellish entrailes did expire.  
It chaunst, (eternall God that chaunce did guide)  
As he recoiled backward, in the mire  
His nigh foreweried feeble feet did slide,  
And downe he fell, with dread of shame fore terrifide.

46.

There grew a goodly tree him faire beside,  
Loaden with fruit and apples rosy redd,  
As they in pure vermilion had been dide,  
Whereof great vertues over all were redd;  
For happy life to all which thereon fedd,  
And life eke everlasting did befall:  
Great God it planted in that blessed stedd  
With his Almighty hand, and did it call  
The tree of life, the crime of our first fathers fall.

47.

In all the world like was not to be fownd,  
Save in that soile, where all good things did grow,  
And freely sprong out of the fruitfull grownd,  
As incorrupted Nature did them sow,  
Till that dredd Dragon all did overthrow.  
Another like faire tree eke grew thereby,  
Whereof whofo did eat, eftsoones did know  
Both good and ill. O mournfull memory!  
That tree through one mans fault hath doen us all to dy.

48.

From that first tree forth flowd, as from a well,



A trickling streame of Balme, most soveraine  
And dainty deare, which on the ground still fell,  
And overflowed all the fertile plaine,  
As it had deawed bene with timely raine :  
Life and long health that gracious ointment gave,  
And deadly wounds could heale ; and reare againe  
The fencelesse corse appointed for the grave :  
Into that fame he fell, which did from death him save.

49.

For nigh thereto the ever damned Beast  
Durst not approch, for he was deadly made,  
And al that life preserved did detest ;  
Yet he it oft adventur'd to invade.  
By this the drouping day-light gan to fade,  
And yield his rowme to sad succeeding night,  
Who with her sable mantle gan to shade  
The face of earth and wayes of living wight,  
And high her burning torch set up in heaven bright.

50.

When gentle Una saw the second fall  
Of her deare knight, who, weary of long fight  
And faint through losse of blood, moov'd not at all,  
But lay, as in a dreame of deepe delight,  
Besmeard with pretious Balme, whose vertuous might  
Did heale his woundes, and scorching heat alay ;  
Againe she stricken was with fore affright,  
And for his safetie gan devoutly pray,  
And watch the noyous night, and wait for joyous day.

51.

The joyous day gan early to appeare ;  
And fayre Aurora from the deawy bed  
Of aged Tithone gan herselfe to reare  
With rosy cheekes, for shame as blushing red :  
Her golden locks for hast were loosely shed  
About her eares, when Una her did marke



Clymbe to her charet, all with flowers spred,  
 From heven high to chace the cheareleffe darke;  
 With mery note her lowd salutes the mounting larke.

52.

Then freshly up arose the doughty knight,  
 All healed of his hurts and woundes wide,  
 And did himselfe to battaile ready dight;  
 Whose early foe awaiting him beside  
 To have devourd, so soone as day he spyde,  
 When now he saw himselfe so freshly reare,  
 As if late fight had nought him damnifyde,  
 He woxe dismaid, and gan his fate to feare:  
 Nathlesse with wonted rage he him advaunced neare.

53.

And in his first encounter, gaping wyde,  
 He thought attonce him to have swallowd quight,  
 And rusht upon him with outragious pryde;  
 Who him rencountring<sup>s</sup> fierce, as hauke in flight,  
 Perforce rebutted back. The weapon bright,  
 Taking advantage of his open jaw,  
 Ran through his mouth with so importune might,  
 That deepe emperst his darksom hollow maw,  
 And, back retyrd, his life blood forth with all did draw.

54.

So downe he fell, and forth his life did breath,  
 That vanisht into smoke and cloudes swift;  
 So downe he fell, that th' earth him underneath  
 Did grone, as feeble so great load to lift;  
 So downe he fell, as an huge rocky clift,<sup>h</sup>

---

<sup>s</sup> *Who him rencountring.*] Todd printed it *rencounting*, which does not at all convey the poet's meaning: in order, perhaps, to make it quite clear, the folio 1611 thus represents the word,—“r'encountring,” i. e. of course *re-encountering*: we have “encounter” above. C.

<sup>h</sup> *So downe he fell, as an huge rocky clift, &c.*] This simile originally belongs to Homer; but almost all the poets have imitated it, with ad-



Whose false foundation waves have washt away,  
 With dreadfull poyse is from the mayneland rift,  
 And rolling downe great Neptune doth dismay :  
 So downe he fell, and like an heaped mountaine lay.

55.

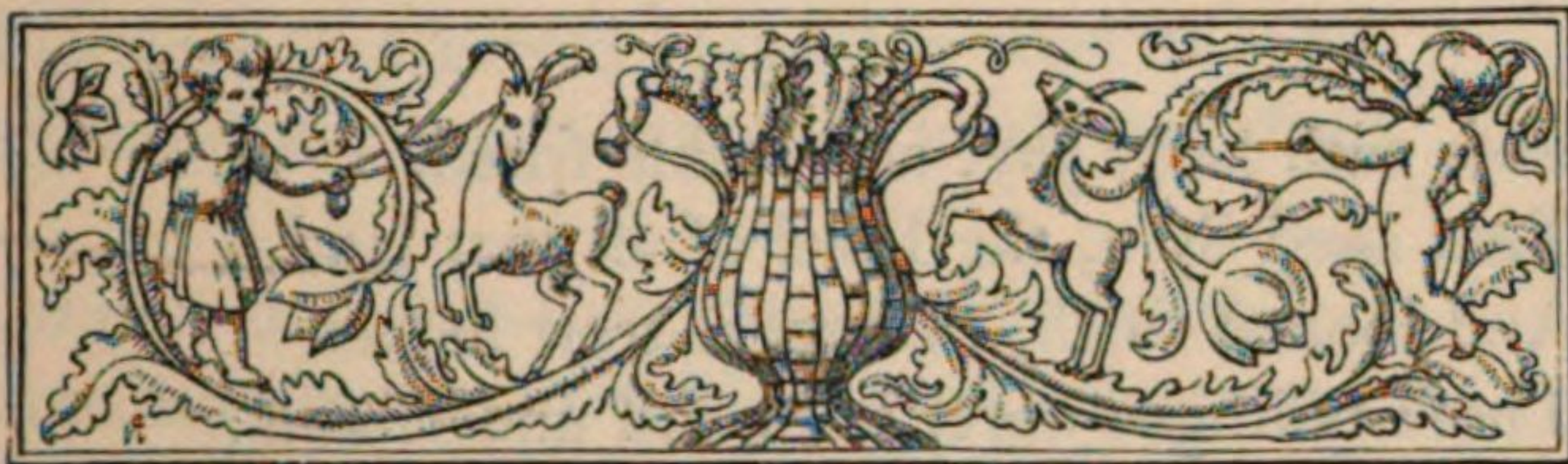
The knight him selfe even trembled at his fall,  
 So huge and horrible a masse it seemd ;  
 And his deare Lady, that beheld it all,  
 Durst not approach for dread which she misdeemd ;  
 But yet at last, whenas the direfull feend  
 She saw not stirre, of-shaking vaine affright  
 She nigher drew, and saw that joyous end :  
 Then God she prayd, and thankt her faithfull knight,  
 That had atchievde so great a conquest by his might.

---

ditions, or alterations, as their subject required. Our poet says, "With dreadfull *poyse*," that is, *force* or *weight*. None of the editions read *push*, as Homer, Virgil, and Milton, in their similitude, express it. See Homer, Il. v. 137, Virg. Æn. xii. 685, Milton, "Par. L." vi. 195.  
 UPTON.







## CANTO XII.

*Fayre Una to the Redcrosse Knight  
Betrouthed is with joy:  
Though false Dueffa, it to barre,  
Her false sleighthes doe imploy.*

I.



BEHOLD! I see the haven nigh at hand,  
To which I meane my wearie course to  
bend;  
Vere the maine shete, and beare up with  
the land,  
The which afore is fayrly to be kend,  
And seemeth safe from storms that may offend:  
There this fayre virgin wearie of her way  
Must landed bee, now at her journeyes end;  
There eke my feeble barke a while may stay,  
Till mery wynd and weather call her thence away.

2.

Scarfely had Phœbus in the glooming East  
Yett harnessed his fyrie-footed teeme,  
Ne reard above the earth his flaming creast,  
When the last deadly smoke aloft did steeme,  
That signe of last outbreathed life did seeme  
Unto the watchman on the castle-wall;  
Who thereby dead that balefull Beast did deeme,  
And to his Lord and Lady lowd gan call,  
To tell how he had seene the Dragons fatall fall.



3.

Uprose with hafty joy, and feeble speed,  
 That aged Syre, the Lord of all that land,  
 And looked forth, to weet if trew indeed  
 Those tydinges were, as he did understand:  
 Which whenas trew by tryall he out fond,  
 He badd to open wyde his brafen gate,  
 Which long time had beene shut, and out of hond  
 Proclaymed joy and peace through all his state;  
 For dead now was their foe, which them forrayed late.<sup>a</sup>

4.

Then gan triumphant Trompets fownd on hye,  
 That sent to heven the ecchoed report  
 Of their new joy, and happie victory  
 Gainst him, that had them long opprest with tort,<sup>b</sup>  
 And fast imprisoned in sieged fort.  
 Then all the people, as in solemne feast,  
 To him assembled with one full confort,  
 Rejoycing at the fall of that great beast,  
 From whose eternall bondage now they were releast.

5.

Forth came that auncient Lord, and aged Queene,  
 Arayd in antique robes downe to the grownd,  
 And sad habiliments right well beseene:  
 A noble crew about them waited rownd  
 Of sage and sober peres, all gravely gownd;  
 Whom far before did march a goodly band  
 Of tall young men, all hable armes to fownd;

<sup>a</sup> *which them forrayed late.*] Richardson treats "forray" and "forage" as one word, and they are probably akin. To "forray" means to ravage, pillage, or plunder; but when the excellent lexicographer spells it *forraid*, instead of "forrayed," making it two syllables instead of three, he does injustice to Spenser's verse. C.

<sup>b</sup> *Gainst him, that had them long opprest with tort.*] *Injury.* Fr. CHURCH. It is now a word confined to law-proceedings. C.



But now they laurell braunches bore in hand,  
Glad signe of victory and peace in all their land.

6.

Unto that doughtie Conquerour they came,  
And him before themselves prostrating low,  
Their Lord and Patrone loud did him proclame,  
And at his feet their lawrell boughes did throw.  
Soone after them, all dauncing on a row,  
The comely virgins came, with girlands dight,  
As fresh as flowres in meadow greene doe grow  
When morning deaw upon their leaves doth light;  
And in their handes sweet Timbrels all upheld on hight.

7.

And them before the fry of children yong  
Their wanton sportes and childish mirth did play,  
And to the Maydens fownding tymbrels song<sup>c</sup>  
In well attuned notes a joyous lay,  
And made delightfull musick all the way,  
Untill they came where that faire virgin stood:  
As fayre Diana in fresh sommers day  
Beholdes her nymphes enraung'd in shady wood,  
Some wrestle, some do run, some bathe in christall flood.

8.

So she beheld those maydens meriment  
With chearefull vew; who, when to her they came,  
Themselves to ground with gracious humbleffe bent,  
And her ador'd by honorable name,  
Lifting to heven her everlasting fame:  
Then on her head they sett a girlond greene,  
And crowned her twixt earnest and twixt game:

---

<sup>c</sup> *fownding tymbrels song.*] Upton justly complains that editions after that of 1590 read *sung* for "song;" but the reason, however insufficient, was that they printed "yong" in the corresponding line *young*, a circumstance to which Upton did not advert. The whole procession is admirably, and visibly depicted. C.



Who, in her self-refemblance well beseene,  
Did seeme, such as she was, a goodly maiden Queene.

9.

And after all the raskall many ran,<sup>d</sup>  
Heaped together in rude rablement,  
To see the face of that victorious man,  
Whom all admired as from heaven sent,  
And gaz'd upon with gaping wonderment;  
But when they came where that dead Dragon lay,  
Stretcht on the ground in monstrous large extent,  
The sight with ydle feare did them dismay,  
Ne durst approach him nigh to touch, or once assay.

10.

Some feard, and fledd; some feard, and well it faynd;<sup>e</sup>  
One, that would wiser seeme then all the rest,  
Warnd him not touch, for yet perhaps remaynd  
Some lingring life within his hollow brest,  
Or in his wombe might lurke some hidden nest  
Of many Dragonettes, his fruitfull seede:  
Another saide, that in his eyes did rest  
Yet sparckling fyre, and badd thereof take heed;  
Another said, he saw him move his eyes indeed.

11.

One mother, whenas her foolehardy chyld  
Did come to neare, and with his talants play,  
Halfe dead through feare, her litle babe revyld,  
And to her goffibs<sup>f</sup> gan in counsell say;

<sup>d</sup> *the raskall many ran.*] "Rascal" was most frequently applied by our ancestors to worthless deer; but it was also used for worthless people. The etymology has not hitherto been quite satisfactorily explained, but the Fr. *racaille* has been most frequently accepted; and Richardson, with some plausibility, connects it with reckless, rash, heedless. Chaucer has *rascaille*, which he uses for rascality: "Troil. and Cressid." C.

<sup>e</sup> *some feard, and well it faynd.*] The meaning seems to be, that while some feared and ran away, others feared and feigned that they did not fear. C.

<sup>f</sup> *And to her goffibs.*] The most ancient form of *gossip* is "godfib;"



“How can I tell, but that his talents may  
Yet scratch my sonne, or rend his tender hand?”  
So diversly them selves in vaine they fray;  
Whiles some more bold to measure him nigh stand,  
To prove how many acres he did spread of land.

12.

Thus flocked all the folke him rownd about;  
The whiles that hoarie king, with all his traine,  
Being arrived where that champion stout  
After his foes defeasaunce did remaine,  
Him goodly greetes, and fayre does entertayne  
With princely gifts of yvory and gold,  
And thousand thanks him yeeldes for all his paine.  
Then when his daughter deare he does behold,  
Her dearely doth imbrace, and kisseth manifold.

13.

And after to his Pallace he them bringes,  
With shauemes, and trompets, and with Clarions sweet;  
And all the way the joyous people singes,  
And with their garments strowes the paved street;  
Whence mounting up, they fynd purveyaunce meet  
Of all, that royall Princes court became;  
And all the floore was underneath their feet  
Bespredd with costly scarlott of great name,  
On which they lowly sitt, and fitting purpose frame.

14.

What needes me tell their feast and goodly guize,  
In which was nothing riotous nor vaine?  
What needes of dainty dishes to devize,  
Of comely services, or courtly trayne?

---

meaning a person akin through God: but Chaucer, like Spenser, has it “gossib,” while in the time of Sir T. More, the *b* had been superseded by the *p*. Spenser’s spelling was varied from in the later editions: in the folio 1611 it stands *gossip*, and so Richardson quotes it; but in the 4to. 1590 it is “gossib,” as we have printed it. C.



My narrow leaves cannot in them contayne  
 The large discourfe of roiall Princes ftate.  
 Yet was their manner then but bare and playne;  
 For th' antique world exceffe and pryde did hate:  
 Such proud luxurious pompe is fwollen up but late.

15.

Then, when with meates and drinkes of every kinde  
 Their fervent appetites they quenched had,  
 That auncient Lord gan fit occafion finde,  
 Of ftraunge adventures, and of perils fad  
 Which in his travell him befallen had,  
 For to demaund of his renowned gueil:  
 Who then with utt'rance grave, and count'nance fad,  
 From poynt to poynt, as is before exprefte,  
 Discourft his voyage long, according his request.

16.

Great pleasure, mixt with pittiful regard,  
 That godly King and Queene did passionate,<sup>g</sup>  
 Whyles they his pittifull adventures heard;  
 That oft they did lament his lucklefle ftate,  
 And often blame the too importune fate  
 That heapd on him fo many wrathfull wreakes;<sup>h</sup>  
 For never gentle knight, as he of late,  
 So tofled was in fortunes cruell freakes:  
 And all the while falt teares bedewd the hearers cheaks.

17.

Then fayd that royall Pere in fober wife;

<sup>g</sup> *and Queene did passionate.*] As Upton obferves, Shakefpeare, like Spenser, uſes “paſſionate” as a verb: ſee “Tit. Andr.” A. iii. Sc. 2. He alſo has the participle *paſſioning* in “Two Gent. of Ver.” A. iv. Sc. 4. It means to expreſs with paſſion. C.

<sup>h</sup> *ſo many wrathfull wreakes.*] i. e. ſo many wrathful *revenges*. “Wreak” ſeems to have the ſame etymology as *wreck*; but the words have been differently applied, and ought to be kept diſtinct. Perhaps, too, *rack*, in the ſenſe of torture, may have the ſame origin, viz. A. S. *wræcan*. C.



“ Deare Sonne, great beene the evils which ye bore  
 From first to last in your late enterprise,  
 That I n’ote,<sup>i</sup> whether praise or pittie more;  
 For never living man, I weene, so fore  
 In sea of deadly daungers was distrest:  
 But since now safe ye seised have the shore,  
 And well arrived are, (high God be blest!)  
 Let us devize of ease and everlasting rest.”

18.

“ Ah dearest Lord!” said then that doughty knight,  
 “ Of ease or rest I may not yet devize;  
 For by the faith which I to armes have plight,  
 I bownden am streight after this emprize,  
 As that your daughter can ye well advize,  
 Backe to retourne to that great Faery Queene,  
 And her to serve fixe yeares in warlike wize,  
 Gainst that proud Paynim king that works her teene:<sup>k</sup>  
 Therefore I ought crave pardon, till I there have beene.”

19.

“ Unhappy falls that hard necessity,”  
 (Quoth he) “ the troubler of my happy peace,  
 And vowed foe of my felicity;  
 Ne I against the same can justly preace:<sup>l</sup>  
 But since that band ye cannot now release,  
 Nor doen undo, (for vowes may not be vayne)  
 Soone as the terme of those fix yeares shall cease,

<sup>i</sup> *That I n’ote.*] That I *know not*, that I *ne wot*, or *wote*. It is printed “note” in the 4to. 1590; but subsequently *no’t*, by putting the apostrophe in the wrong place, as indeed was done by Todd, and others: the fit mode of giving it is as we have printed it. C.

<sup>k</sup> *that works her teene.*] A very common word for *sorrow*, or *vexation*, in authors of the time of Spenser, and earlier; see pp. 91, 93: it occurs also in Shakespeare not unfrequently, and is from the A. S. *teon*. It is not often met with later than the Restoration. C.

<sup>l</sup> *can justly preace.*] An old form of *press*; generally spelt *prease*, both as a verb and noun. C.



Ye then shall hether backe retourne agayne,  
The marriage to accomplish vowd betwixt you twayn.

20.

“ Which, for my part, I covet to performe  
In fort as through the world I did proclame,  
That whofo kild that monster most deforme,  
And him in hardy battayle overcame,  
Should have mine onely daughter to his Dame,  
And of my kingdome heyre apparaunt bee :  
Therefore, since now to thee perteynes the fame  
By dew desert of noble chevalree,  
Both daughter and eke kingdome lo ! I yield to thee.”

21.

Then forth he called that his daughter fayre,  
The fairest Un', his onely daughter deare,  
His onely daughter and his only hayre ;  
Who forth proceeding with sad sober cheare,  
As bright as doth the morning starre appeare  
Out of the East, with flaming lockes bedight,  
To tell that dawning day is drawing neare,  
And to the world does bring long-wished light :  
So faire and fresh that Lady shewd herselfe in fight.

22.

So faire and fresh, as freshest flowre in May ;  
For she had layd her mournfull stole aside,  
And widow-like sad wimple throwne away,  
Wherewith her heavenly beautie she did hide,  
Whiles on her wearie journey she did ride ;  
And on her now a garment she did weare  
All lilly white, withoutten spot or pride,  
That seemd like filke and silver woven neare ;  
But neither filke nor silver therein did appeare.

23.

The blazing brightnesse of her beauties beame,  
And glorious light of her sunshyny face,



To tell were as to strive against the streame :  
 My ragged rimes are all too rude and bace  
 Her heavenly lineaments for to enchace.  
 Ne wonder ; for her own deare loved knight,  
 All were she daily with himfelfe in place,  
 Did wonder much at her celestial fight :  
 Oft had he seene her faire, but never so faire dight.

24.

So fairely dight when she in presence came,  
 She to her Syre made humble reverence,  
 And bowed low, that her right well became,  
 And added grace unto her excellence :  
 Who with great wisedome and grave eloquence  
 Thus gan to say—But, eare he thus had sayd,  
 With flying speede, and seeming great pretence,<sup>m</sup>  
 Came running in, much like a man dismayd,  
 A Messenger with letters, which his message sayd.

25.

All in the open hall amazed stood  
 At suddennesse of that unwary fight,<sup>n</sup>  
 And wondred at his breathlesse hasty mood :  
 But he for nought would stay his passage right,  
 Till fast before the king he did alight ;  
 Where falling flat great humbleesse he did make,  
 And kist the ground whereon his foot was pight ;  
 Then to his handes that writt he did betake,<sup>o</sup>

---

<sup>m</sup> *and seeming great pretence.*] “Pretence” is here, and in many other places, to be understood as *intention*; and writers of that day constantly use “pretence” and *pretension*, as well as the verb *pretend*, for *intention* and *intend*. The messenger seemed to bring tidings of great and fearful importance. C.

<sup>n</sup> *that unwary fight.*] i. e. unlooked for fight ; a fight for which the spectators were not prepared. This use of “unwary” has perhaps no example in our language. Richardson does not give it, although he has *unware* and its ordinary derivatives. Todd in his Dict. tells us that “unwary” is obsolete. C.

<sup>o</sup> *Then to his handes that writt he did betake.*] *Commit.* This ap-



Which he disclosing read thus, as the paper spake ;

26.

‘ To thee, most mighty king of Eden fayre,  
 ‘ Her greeting sends in these sad lines addrest  
 ‘ The wofull daughter and forsaken heyre  
 ‘ Of that great Emperour of all the West ;  
 ‘ And bids thee be advized for the best,  
 ‘ Ere thou thy daughter linck, in holy band  
 ‘ Of wedlocke, to that new unknownen guest :  
 ‘ For he already plighted his right hand  
 ‘ Unto another love, and to another land.

27.

‘ To me, sad mayd, or rather widow sad,  
 ‘ He was affyaunced long time before,  
 ‘ And sacred pledges he both gave, and had,  
 ‘ False erraunt knight, infamous, and forswore !  
 ‘ Witnesse the burning Altars, which he swore,  
 ‘ And guilty heavens of his bold perjury ;  
 ‘ Which though he hath polluted oft of yore,  
 ‘ Yet I to them for judgement just doe fly,  
 ‘ And them conjure t’ avenge this shamefull injury.

28.

‘ Therefore, since mine he is, or free or bond,  
 ‘ Or false or trew, or living or else dead,  
 ‘ Withhold, O soverayne Prince ! your hasty hond  
 ‘ From knitting league with him, I you aread ;  
 ‘ Ne weene my right with strength adowne to tread,  
 ‘ Through weaknesse of my widowhed or woe ;  
 ‘ For truth is strong her rightfull cause to plead,  
 ‘ And shall finde friends, if need requireth foe.  
 ‘ So bids thee well to fare, Thy neither friend nor foe,  
 ‘ *Fideffa.*

---

pears to have been a common acceptation of *betake*. See Barret's Dict. 1580. "To *betake*, or *committe*. Trado. I *betake*, *committe*, or *bequeath*, the matter to thee. Istuc tibi *dedo* negotii. Ter." TODD.



29.

When he these bitter byting wordes had red,  
The tydings straunge did him abashed make,  
That still he fate long time astonished,  
As in great muse, ne word to creature spake.  
At last his solemn silence thus he brake,  
With doubtfull eyes fast fixed on his guest:  
"Redoubted knight, that for myne only sake  
Thy life and honor late adventurest,  
Let nought be hid from me that ought to be exprest.

30.

"What meane these bloody vowes and idle threats,  
Throwne out from womanish impatient mynd?  
What hevens? what altars? what enraged heates,  
Here heaped up with termes of love unkynd,  
My conscience cleare with guilty bands would bynd?  
High God be witnesse that I guiltlesse ame;  
But if yourselfe, Sir knight, ye faulty fynd,  
Or wrapped be in loves of former Dame,  
With cryme doe not it cover, but disclose the same."

31.

To whom the Redcrosse knight this answere sent:  
"My Lord, my king, be nought hereat dismayd,  
Till well ye wote by grave intendiment,  
What Woman, and wherefore, doth me upbrayd  
With breach of love and loialty betrayd.  
It was in my mishaps, as hitherward  
I lately traveild, that unwares I strayd  
Out of my way, through perils straunge and hard,  
That day should faile me ere I had them all declard.

32.

"There did I find, or rather I was fownd  
Of this false woman that Fideffa hight,  
Fideffa hight the falsest Dame on grownd,  
Most false Dueffa, royall richly dight,



That eafy was to inveigle weaker fight :  
 Who by her wicked arts and wiely skill,  
 Too falfe and ftrong for earthly skill or might,  
 Unwares me wrought unto her wicked will,  
 And to my foe betrayd when leaft I feared ill."

33.

Then ftepped forth the goodly royall Mayd,  
 And on the ground herfelfe proflrating low,  
 With fober countenance thus to him fayd :  
 "O! pardon me, my foveraine Lord, to fheow  
 The fecret treafons, which of late I know  
 To have bene wrought by that falfe forcereffe :  
 Shee, onely fhe, it is, that earft did throw  
 This gentle knight into fo great diftreffe,  
 That death him did awaite in daily wretchedneffe.

34.

"And now it feemes, that fhe fuborned hath  
 This crafty meffenger with letters vaine,<sup>p</sup>  
 To worke new woe and unprovided fcath,  
 By breaking of the band betwixt us twaine ;  
 Wherein fhe ufed hath the practicke paine<sup>q</sup>  
 Of this falfe footman, clokt with fimpleneffe,  
 Whome if ye please for to discover plaine,

---

<sup>p</sup> *This crafty meffenger with letters vaine.*] "Vaine," that is, *idle* letters. So corrected from the errata of the firft edition, which reads *faine*, and which is, I fhould think, what Spenser gave, as he uſes *faine* for *feign*, in St. 38, and in F. Q. ii. i. 20 and 21. And perhaps he might here uſe it for *fained*, (dropping the laſt letter for the ſake of the rhyme,) that is, *falsed* letters, as in F. Q. ii. i. 1. CHURCH. The poet would hardly have directed the alteration of *faine* to *vaine*, if he had intended the former word to expreſs his meaning here. I ſubſcribe to the following remark of Mr. Upton: "Spenser, among the errors of the preſs, corrected it *vaine*, that is, *false*; as uſed in Scripture." TODD.

<sup>q</sup> *the practicke paine.*] Spenser employs "practicke" here, not as oppoſed to theoric, or theoretic, which was uſual, but as if it were derived from *practice*, which anciently meant treachery and fraud: to ſay that Dueſſa uſed "practicke paine" is as much as to ſay that ſhe reſorted to the treacherous aſſiſtance of the "falſe footman." See alſo p. 87. C.



Ye shall him Archimago find, I ghesse,  
The falsest man alive: who tries, shall find no lesse."

## 35.

The king was greatly moved at her speach;  
And, all with sudden indignation fraught,  
Bad on that Messenger rude hands to reach.  
Eftsoones the Gard, which on his state did wait,  
Attacht that faytor<sup>r</sup> false, and bound him strait;  
Who seeming sorely chauffed at his band,  
As chained beare whom cruell dogs doe bait,  
With ydle force did faine them to withstand,  
And often semblaunce made to scape out of their hand.

## 36.

But they him layd full low in dungeon deepe,  
And bound him hand and foote with yron chains;  
And with continual watch did warely keepe.  
Who then would thinke that by his subtile trains  
He could escape fowle death or deadly pains?  
Thus, when that Princes wrath was pacified,  
He gan renew the late forbidden baine,  
And to the knight his daughter deare he tyde  
With sacred rites and vowes for ever to abyde.

## 37.

His owne two hands the holy knotts did knitt,  
That none but death for ever can divide;  
His owne two hands, for such a turne most fitt,  
The housling fire did kindle and provide,  
And holy water thereon sprinckled wide;<sup>s</sup>

<sup>r</sup> *Attacht that faytor.*] "Faytor" is a law term: a *vagabond*, idle fellow. Fr. *Faitard*, Skinner. CHURCH.

<sup>s</sup> *And holy water thereon sprinckled wide.*] He alludes to the marriages of antiquity, which were solemnized *sacramento ignis et aquæ*: The *housling fire*, i. e. sacramental fire, or fire used in that sacrament of marriage. A. S. *hūel*, the *Sacrament*; *hūl-dyrce*, the *Communion Cup*. Goth. *hunsl*, *victim*, *sacrificium*. Chaucer uses the word frequent, as *to ben housled*, to receive the Sacrament. Shakespeare, in



At which the bushy Teade a groome did light,  
 And sacred lamp in secret chamber hide,<sup>t</sup>  
 Where it should not be quenched day nor night,  
 For feare of evil fates, but burnen ever bright.

38.

Then gan they sprinckle all the posts with wine,<sup>u</sup>  
 And made great feast to solemnize that day :  
 They all perfumde with frankincense divine,  
 And precious odours fetcht from far away,  
 That all the house did sweat with great aray :  
 And all the while sweete Musicke did apply  
 Her curious skill the warbling notes to play,  
 To drive away the dull Melancholy ;<sup>x</sup>  
 The whiles one fung a song of love and jollity.

---

"Hamlet," has *unbousel'd*, i. e. not having received the Sacrament. These two elements, fire and water, were used in marriages ; but the consecrated or holy water was not *sprinckled on the fire*, as Spenser seems to say ; but the water was sprinkled on the *bride* : I wonder therefore Spenser did not rather write, "And holy water sprinckled on the bride." See "Alex. ab Alexand." L. ii. C. 5. Compare Servius on Virg. *Æn.* iv. 167, and on *Æn.* xii. 119. Allusions are frequent to this ceremony. See Ov. *Art. Am.* L. ii. 598, and Valer. *Fl. L.* viii. 245. UPTON.

<sup>t</sup> *And sacred lamp in secret chamber hide, &c.*] Spenser uses the Italian or Latin word, *tæda* : he says *bushy*, because made of a bundle of thorns : "Alex. ab Alexand." L. ii. C. v. Spenser adds, "And sacred lampe in secret chamber hide ;" here I believe he has a mystical meaning of his own, for it is neither a Roman, Grecian, nor Jewish custom, as far as I can find. But he seems to allude to the mystical meaning of the Wise Virgins' lamps in the parable, which, like the typical fire in Levit. vi. 13, "shall ever be burning upon the altar of love ; shall never go out." UPTON.

<sup>u</sup> *Then gan they sprinckle all the posts with wine.*] "With wine," says Spenser ; "with oil," say others. "Mos fuerat ut nubentes puellæ, simul quum venissent ad limen mariti, *postes*, antequam ingrederentur, ornarent laneis vittis et *oleo* ungerent : et inde uxores dictæ sunt, quasi unxores." Servius on Virg. *Æn.* iv. 458. See Vossius, *Etymol. uxor.* UPTON.

<sup>x</sup> *To drive away the dull Melancholy.*] The same verse occurs, and upon the same occasion, F. Q. i. v. 3. T. WARTON. It is evident that "Melancholy" must be accented on the second syllable, or the measure of the line is lost : the same remark may be made upon the word "melancholicke," in F. Q. B. v. c. 6, and Spenser had it from Gower and other early poets ; but the case is different in Milton. C.



## 39.

During the which there was an heavenly noise  
 Heard sownd through all the Pallace pleasantly,  
 Like as it had bene many an Angels voice  
 Singing before th' eternall majesty,  
 In their trinall triplicities on hye :  
 Yett wist no creature whence that heavenly sweet  
 Proceeded, yet eachone felt secretly  
 Himselfe thereby refte of his senses meet,  
 And ravished with rare impressi<sup>y</sup>on in his sprite.<sup>y</sup>

## 40.

Great joy was made that day of young and old,  
 And solemne feast proclaymd throughout the land,  
 That their exceeding merth may not be told :  
 Suffice it heare by signes to understand  
 The usuall joyes at knitting of loves band.  
 Thrise happy man the knight himselfe did hold,  
 Possessed of his Ladies hart and hand ;  
 And ever, when his eie did her behold,  
 His heart did seeme to melt in pleasures manifold.<sup>z</sup>

## 41.

Her joyous prefence, and sweet company,  
 In full content he there did long enjoy ;  
 Ne wicked envy, ne vile gealofy,  
 His deare delights were hable to annoy :  
 Yet, swimming in that sea of blisfull joy,

---

<sup>y</sup> *And ravished with rare impressi<sup>y</sup>on in his sprite.*] So the first and second editions; which Upton, Church, and Tonson's edit. of 1758, follow. Some editions read *spreete* or *spreet*. TODD. No doubt "sprite" was pronounced *spreet*; and it is "sprite" in the folio 1611, changed to *spreet* only in later impressions. C.

<sup>z</sup> *His heart, &c.*] So the first edition, and the edit. 1751. The second edition, and the folios read "*Her heart.*" How material an alteration for the worse this is, I need not say. CHURCH. The mistake obviously arose out of the old and frequent practice of printing her *bir*; the compositor misread "his" *bir*. C.



He nought forgott how he whilome had sworne,  
In case he could that monstrous beast destroy,  
Unto his Faery Queene backe to retourne;  
The which he shortly did, and Una left to mourne.

42.

Now, strike your sailes, yee jolly Mariners,  
For we be come unto a quiet rode,  
Where we must land some of our passengers,  
And light this weary vessell of her lode:  
Here she a while may make her safe abode,  
Till she repaired have her tackles spent,  
And wants supplide. And then againe abroad  
On the long voiage whereto she is bent:  
Well may she speede, and fairely finish her intent!







THE SECOND BOOK OF  
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON, OR OF  
TEMPERAUNCE.

I.



RIGHT well I wote, most mighty Soveraine,  
That all this famous antique history  
Of some th' aboundance of an ydle braine  
Will judged be, and painted forgery,  
Rather then matter of just memory;  
Sith none that breatheth living aire does know  
Where is that happy land of Faery,  
Which I so much doe vaunt, yet no where show,  
But vouch antiquities, which no body can know.

2.

But let that man with better sence advize,  
That of the world least part to us is red;  
And daily how through hardy enterprize  
Many great Regions are discovered,  
Which to late age were never mentioned.  
Who ever heard of th' Indian Peru?  
Or who in venturous vessell measured  
The Amazon huge river,<sup>a</sup> now found trew?

---

<sup>a</sup> *The Amazon huge river.*] So the errata at the end of the 4to. 1590; but it may be doubted whether Spenser did not write "The



Or fruitfullest Virginia who did ever vew?

3.

Yet all these were, when no man did them know,  
 Yet have from wisest ages hidden beene;  
 And later times thinges more unknowne shall show.  
 Why then should witleffe man so much misweene,  
 That nothing is but that which he hath seene?  
 What if within the Moones fayre shining spheare,  
 What if in every other starre unseene  
 Of other worldes he happily should heare,  
 He wonder would much more; yet such to some appeare.

4.

Of faery lond yet if he more inquire,  
 By certein signes, here sett in sondrie place,  
 He may it fynd; ne let him then admyre,  
 But yield his sence to bee too blunt and bace,  
 That no'te without an hound fine footing trace.  
 And thou, O fayrest Princeesse<sup>b</sup> under sky!  
 In this fayre mirrhour maist behold thy face,  
 And thine owne realmes in lond of Faery,  
 And in this antique ymage thy great auncestry.

5.

The which O! pardon me thus to enfold  
 In covert vele, and wrap in shadowes light,<sup>c</sup>

Amazons huge river," as indeed it stands in the folio 1611. In the first edit. the text is "The *Amarons* huge river." C.

<sup>b</sup> *And thou, O fayrest Princeesse.*] Nobody seems to have remarked that in the edit. 1590 "thou" is misprinted *then*. We note it particularly, because precisely the same error occurs in Shakespeare's "Twelfth Night," A. v. Sc. 1, where Olivia says, "*Then* cam'st in smiling," instead of "Thou cam'st in smiling;" an error corrected in the MS. notes of the folio 1632. See Collier's "Shakesp." edit. 1858, vol. ii. p. 722. The blunder in the original impression of Spenser's "Faerie Queene" was corrected afterwards. C.

<sup>c</sup> *and wrap in shadowes light.*] So the old copies; the preposition *to* being understood before "wrap." Nevertheless, Todd, without notice, printed the participle *wrapt*; an error in which he has been followed by other modern editors. Professor Child, however, in his impression, Boston, 1855, has rejected the supposed improvement. C.



That feeble eyes your glory may behold,  
Which ells could not endure those beames bright,  
But would bee dazled with exceeding light.  
O! pardon, and vouchsafe with patient eare  
The brave adventures of this faery knight,  
The good Sir Guyon, gratioufly to heare;  
In whom great rule of Temp'raunce goodly doth appeare.







## CANTO I.

*Guyon, by Archimage abusd,  
The Redcrosse knight awaytes ;  
Fyndes Mordant and Amavia slaine  
With pleasures poisoned baytes.*

I.



THAT conning Architeet of cancred guyle,<sup>a</sup>  
Whom Princes late displeasure left in  
bands,  
For falsed letters, and suborned wyle,  
Soone as the Redcrosse knight he un-  
derstands  
To beene departed out of Eden landes,  
To serue againe his soveraine Elfin Queene,  
His artes he moves, and out of caytives handes  
Himselfe he frees by secret meanes unseene ;  
His shackles emptie lefte, himselfe escaped cleene.

2.

And forth he fares, full of malicious mynd,  
To worken mischief, and avenging woe,  
Where ever he that godly knight may fynd,  
His onely hart fore, and his onely foe ;

---

<sup>a</sup> *That conning Architeet of cancred guyle.*] Gregory Nazianzen, it may be observed, denominates, in his tragedy of "Christus Patiens," the old Dragon ἀγκυλομήτης, *fraudis artifex*; whence perhaps Spenser's *architeet of guyle*, applied to the same deceiver, as Milton's *artificer of fraud* also is, "Par. L." B. iv. 121. TODD.



Sith Una now he algates must forgoe,<sup>b</sup>  
 Whom his victorious handes did earst restore  
 To native crowne and kingdom late ygoe;  
 Where she enjoys sure peace for evermore,  
 As wetherbeaten ship arryv'd on happie shore.

3.

Him therefore now the object of his spight  
 And deadly food he makes :<sup>c</sup> him to offend,  
 By forged treason or by open fight,  
 He seekes, of all his drifte the aymed end :  
 Thereto his subtile engins he does bend,  
 His practick witt and his fayre fyled tonge,  
 With thousand other sleightes ; for well he kend  
 His credit now in doubtfull ballaunce hong :  
 For hardly could bee hurt who was already stong.

4.

Still as he went he craftie stales did lay,<sup>d</sup>  
 With cunning traynes him to entrap unwares,  
 And privy spyals plapt in all his way,  
 To weete what course he takes, and how he fares,  
 To ketch him at a vauntage in his snares.  
 But now so wise and wary was the knight  
 By tryall of his former harmes and cares,  
 That he descryde and shonned still his flight :  
 The fish that once was caught new bayt wil hardly byte.

5.

Nath'lesse th' Enchaunter would not spare his payne,  
 In hope to win occasion to his will ;

<sup>b</sup> *be algates must forgoe.*] i. e. he must *entirely, altogether, all manner of ways* forego : from the A. S. *algeats*. C.

<sup>c</sup> *And deadly food he makes.*] We have before seen *feud* spelt "food" in this poem, B. i. C. 8 : it is *feude* here in the folio editions, as well as in some modern reprints. C.

<sup>d</sup> *be craftie stales did lay.*] "Crafty stales" are crafty *decoys* ; Fr. *estalon*, not devices or tricks, as Todd alleges : Archimago, as it were, laid baits in order to entrap the knight. C.



Which when he long awaited had in vayne,  
 He chaungd his mynd from one to other ill ;  
 For to all good he enemy was still.  
 Upon the way him fortun'd to meete,  
 Fayre marching underneath a shady hill,  
 A goodly knight, all armd in harnesse meete,  
 That from his head no place appeared to his feete.

6.

His carriage was full comely and upright ;  
 His countenance demure and temperate ;  
 But yett so sterne and terrible in fight,  
 That cheard his friendes, and did his foes amate :  
 He was an Elfin borne of noble state  
 And mickle worship in his native land ;  
 Well could he tourney, and in lists debate,  
 And knighthood tooke of good Sir Huons hand,<sup>e</sup>  
 When with king Oberon he came to Fary land.

7.

Him als accompanyd upon the way  
 A comely Palmer, clad in black attyre,  
 Of rypest yeares, and heares all hoarie gray,  
 That with a staffe his feeble steps did fire,  
 Least his long way his aged limbes should tire :  
 And, if by lookes one may the mind aread,  
 He seemd to be a sage and sober fyre ;  
 And ever with slow pace the knight did lead,  
 Who taught his trampling steed with equall steps to tread.

8.

Such whenas Archimago them did view,  
 He weened well to worke some uncouth wyle :  
 Eftsoones untwisting his deceitfull clew,

---

<sup>e</sup> of good Sir Huons hand.] Meaning Sir Huon of Bordeaux, regarding whom the romance, originally published in French, had been translated into English, as Warton observes, and as is testified by Laneham's "Letter from Kenilworth," printed about 1575. Sign. C ii b. C.



He gan to weave a web of wicked guyle,  
And, with faire countenance and flattring style  
To them approching, thus the knight bespake ;  
“Fayre sonne of Mars, that seeke with warlike spoyle,  
And great atchiev'ments, great your selfe to make,  
Vouchsafe to stay your steed for humble misers sake.”

9.

He stayd his steed for humble misers sake,  
And badd tell on the tenor of his playnt :  
Who feigning then in every limb to quake  
Through inward feare, and seeming pale and faynt,  
With piteous mone his percing speach gan paynt :  
“Deare Lady ! how shall I declare thy cace,  
Whom late I left in languorous constraynt ?  
Would God ! thy selfe now present were in place  
To tell this ruefull tale : thy sight could win thee grace.

10.

“Or rather would, O ! would it so had chaunst,  
That you, most noble Sir, had present beene  
When that lewd rybould, with vyle lust advaunst,  
Laid first his filthie hands on virgin cleene,  
To spoyle her dainty corps, so faire and sheene  
As on the earth, great mother of us all,  
With living eye more fayre was never seene  
Of chastity and honour virginall :  
Witnes, ye heavens, whom she in vaine to help did call.

11.

“How may it be,” sayd then the knight halfe wroth,  
“That knight should knighthood ever so have shent ?”  
“None but that saw,” (qd. he) “would weene for  
troth,  
How shamefully that Mayd he did torment :  
Her looser golden lockes he rudely rent,  
And drew her on the ground ; and his sharpe sword  
Against her snowy brest he fiercely bent,



And threatned death with many a bloodie word :  
Tounge hates to tell the rest that eye to see abhord."

12.

Therewith amoved from his sober mood,  
"And lives he yet," (said he) "that wrought this act?  
And doen the heavens afford him vitall food?"  
"He lives," (quoth he) "and boasteth of the fact,  
Ne yet hath any knight his courage crackt."  
"Where may that treachour then," (sayd he) "be  
found,  
Or by what meanes may I his footing tract?"  
"That shall I shew," (sayd he) "as sure as hound  
The stricken Deare doth chaleng by the bleeding wound."

13.

He stayd not lenger talke, but with fierce yre  
And zealous haste away is quickly gone  
To seeke that knight, where him that crafty Squire  
Supposd to be. They do arrive anone  
Where fate a gentle Lady all alone,  
With garments rent, and heare discheveled,  
Wringing her handes, and making piteous mone :  
Her swollen eyes were much disfigured,  
And her faire face with teares was fowly blubbered.

14.

The knight, approching nigh, thus to her said :  
"Fayre Lady, through fowle sorrow ill bedight,  
Great pittie is to see you thus dismayd,  
And marre the blossom of your beauty bright :  
For thy appease<sup>f</sup> your grieve and heavy plight,  
And tell the cause of your conceived payne ;  
For, if he live that hath you doen despight,

---

<sup>f</sup> *For thy appease.*] *Therefore* appease. In the old impressions "Forthy" is printed as two words. The error, if one, has been corrected in modern editions. Richardson places "forthy" under *for*: might he not as properly put *therefore* under the same preposition? C.



He shall you doe dew recompence agayne,  
Or els his wrong with greater puissance maintaine."

15.

Which when she heard, as in despightfull wise  
She wilfully her sorrow did augment,  
And offred hope of comfort did despise:  
Her golden lockes most cruelly she rent,  
And scratcht her face with ghastly dreriment;  
Ne would she speake, ne see, ne yet be seene,  
But hid her visage, and her head downe bent,  
Either for grievous shame, or for great teene,  
As if her hart with sorrow had transfixt beene:

16.

Till her that Squire bespake: "Madame, my lief<sup>e</sup>,  
For Gods deare love be not so wilfull bent,  
But doe vouchsafe now to receive reliefe,  
The which good fortune doth to you present.  
For what bootes it to weepe and to wayment<sup>h</sup>  
When ill is chaunst, but doth the ill increase,  
And the weake minde with double woe torment?"  
When she her Squire heard speake, she gan appease  
Her voluntarie paine, and feele some secret ease.

17.

Eftsoone she said; "Ah! gentle trustie Squire,  
What comfort can I, wofull wretch, conceive?  
Or why should ever I henceforth desyre  
To see faire heavens face, and life not leave,

<sup>e</sup> *Madame, my lief.*] Nobody has noted that in the 4to. 1590 "lief" stands *life*; and it is not corrected in the errata at the end. "Lief," nevertheless, was probably Spenser's word; for "life" would but ill rhyme with "relief" in the next line but one; and *life* is amended to "lief" in subsequent impressions. C.

<sup>h</sup> *to weepe and to wayment.*] An old form of *lament*, or *layment*, which has not found its way into some of our best dictionaries, although used by Chaucer, Spenser, Drayton, and other poets. Drayton employs "waymenting" and *lamenting* indifferently; and in the 4th Eclog. of his "Shepherd's Garland," 1593, we meet with both. C.



Sith that false Traytour did my honour reave?"

"False traytour certes," (saide the Faerie knight)

"I read the man, that ever would deceave

A gentle Lady, or her wrong through might:

Death were too litle paine for such a fowle despight.

18.

"But now, fayre Lady, comfort to you make,  
And read who hath ye wrought this shamefull plight,  
That short revenge the man may overtake,  
Wherefo he be, and soone upon him light."

"Certes," (saide she) "I wote not how he hight,

But under him a gray steede he did wield,

Whose sides with dapled circles weren dight;

Upright he rode, and in his silver shield

He bore a bloodie Crosse that quartred all the field."

19.

"Now by my head," (saide Guyon) "much I muse,  
How that same knight should doe so fowle amis,  
Or ever gentle Damzell so abuse:

For, may I boldly say, he surely is

A right good knight, and trew of word ywis:<sup>i</sup>

I present was, and can it witnesse well,

When armes he swore, and streight did enterpris

Th' adventure of the Errant damozell;

In which he hath great glory wonne, as I heare tell.

20.

"Nathlesse he shortly shall againe be tryde,

And fairely quit him of th' imputed blame;

Els, be ye sure, he dearely shall abyde,

Or make you good amendment for the same:

All wrongs have mendes, but no amendes of shame.

---

<sup>i</sup> *and trew of word ywis.*] Sometimes "ywis" and *I wiss* have been confounded: the first means *certainly*, and the last *I know*; both, however, having the same origin, A. S. *wissan*. The use of them in old prose and poetry was extremely frequent. C.



Now therefore, Lady, rise out of your paine,  
 And see the salving of your blotted name."<sup>k</sup>  
 Full loth she seemd thereto, but yet did faine,  
 For she was inly glad her purpose so to gaine.

21.

Her purpose was not such as she did faine,  
 Ne yet her person such as it was seene;  
 But under simple shew, and semblant plaine,  
 Lurkt false Dueſſa secretly unseene,  
 As a chaste Virgin that had wronged beene:  
 So had false Archimago her disguysd,  
 To cloke her guile with sorrow and sad teene;  
 And eke himselfe had craftily devisd  
 To be her Squire, and do her service well aguysd.

22.

Her, late forlorne and naked, he had found  
 Where she did wander in waste wildernesse,  
 Lurking in rockes and caves far under ground,  
 And with greene mosse cov'ring her nakednesse  
 To hide her shame and loathly filthinesse,  
 Sith her Prince Arthur of proud ornaments  
 And borrowd beauty spoyld. Her nathelesse  
 Th' enchaunter finding fit for his intents  
 Did thus reuest,<sup>1</sup> and deckt with dew habiliments.

23.

For all he did was to deceive good knights,  
 And draw them from pursuit of praise and fame  
 To slug in slouth and sensuall delights,  
 And end their daies with irrenowmed shame.

---

<sup>k</sup> of your blotted name.] In the 4to. 1590 the text is "*blotting* name," the active for the passive participle; and as they were then sometimes used indifferently, we should have continued the oldest word, if in the second edition (also printed in Spenser's lifetime) and in all subsequent old impressions, "blotted" had not been substituted. C.

<sup>1</sup> Did thus reuest.] *Revestir*. Fr. reinvest, clothe or apparel again. See Cotgrave. TODD.



And now exceeding grieve him overcame,  
 To see the Redcrosse thus advaunced hye;  
 Therefore this craftie engine he did frame,  
 Against his praise to stirre up enmitie  
 Of such, as vertues like mote unto him allye.

24.

So now he Guyon guydes an uncouth way  
 Through woods and mountaines, till they came at last  
 Into a pleasant dale that lowly lay  
 Betwixt two hils, whose high heads overplast  
 The valley did with coole shade overcast:  
 Through midst thereof a little river rold,  
 By which there fate a knight with helme unlaste,  
 Himselfe refreshing with the liquid cold,  
 After his travell long and labours manifold.

25.

"Lo! yonder he," cryde Archimage alowd,  
 "That wrought the shamefull fact which I did shew;  
 And now he doth himselfe in secret shrowd,  
 To fly the vengeaunce for his outrage dew:  
 But vaine; for ye shall dearely do him rew,  
 So God ye speed and fend you good succeffe,  
 Which we far off will here abide to vew."  
 So they him left inflam'd with wrathfulnesse,  
 That streight against that knight his speare he did addresse.

26.

Who, seeing him from far so fierce to pricke,  
 His warlike armes about him gan embrace,  
 And in the rest his ready speare did sticke:  
 Tho, whenas still he saw him towards pace,  
 He gan rencounter him in equall race.  
 They bene ymett, both ready to affrap,<sup>m</sup>

<sup>m</sup> *They bene ymett, both ready to affrap.*] *Encounter* [literally *strike*].  
 Ital. *affrappare*. Fr. *frapper*. See also F. Q. iii. ii. 6. "To *affrap* the  
 rider," i. e. to strike down. UPTON.



When fuddeinly that warriour gan abace  
 His threatned speare, as if some new mishap  
 Had him betide, or hidden danger did entrap ;

27.

And cryde, " Mercie, Sir knight ! and mercie, Lord,  
 For mine offence and heedelesse hardiment,  
 That had almost committed crime abhord,  
 And with reprochfull shame mine honour shent,  
 Whiles cursed steele against that badge I bent,  
 The sacred badge of my Redeemers death,  
 Which on your shield is set for ornament !"  
 But his fierce foe his steed could stay uneath,  
 Who, prickt with courage kene, did cruell battell breath.

28.

But, when he heard him speake, streight way he knew  
 His error ; and, himselfe inclyning, sayd ;  
 " Ah ! deare Sir Guyon, well becommeth you,"  
 But me behoveth rather to upbrayd,  
 Whose hastie hand so far from reason strayd,  
 That almost it did haynous violence  
 On that fayre ymage of that heavenly Mayd,  
 That decks and armes your shield with faire defence :  
 Your court'sie takes on you anothers dew offence."

29.

So beene they both atone,<sup>o</sup> and doen upreare  
 Their bevers bright each other for to greet ;  
 Goodly comportaunce each to other beare,

<sup>n</sup> *well becommeth you.*] So all editions : but Todd, a very careless collator, states that the folio 1611 has "*ill becommeth you.*" The fact is directly the reverse ; and there is not only no need of change, but any alteration would be for the worse. The clear meaning is, that the Redcrosse Knight says that Guyon's demeanour well becomes him, Guyon, but that he ought rather to upbraid himself for haste. C.

<sup>o</sup> *So beene they both atone.*] That is, *friends again* ; at one, *atoned, reconciled* ; in the folios spelt *attone*. UPTON. In the 4to. 1590 it stands printed "at one," in two words, a fact Upton omitted to mention. C.



And entertaine themselves with court'fies meet.  
 Then said the Redcrosse knight; "Now mote I weete,  
 Sir Guyon, why with so fierce saliaunce,  
 And fell intent, ye did at earst me meet;<sup>p</sup>  
 For sith I know your goodly gouernaunce,  
 Great cause, I weene, you guided, or some uncouth chaunce."

30.

"Certes," (said he) "well mote I shame to tell  
 The fond encheason<sup>q</sup> that me hether led.  
 A false infamous faitour late befell  
 Me for to meet, that seemed ill bested,  
 And playnd of grievous outrage, which he red  
 A knight had wrought against a Ladie gent;  
 Which to avenge he to this place me led,  
 Where you he made the marke of his intent,  
 And now is fled: foule shame him follow wher he went!"

31.

So can he turne his earnest unto game,  
 Through goodly handling and wise temperaunce.  
 By this his aged Guide in presence came;  
 Who, soone as on that knight<sup>r</sup> his eye did glaunce,  
 Eftsoones of him had perfect cognizaunce,  
 Sith him in Faery court he late avizd;  
 And sayd; "Fayre sonne, God give you happy chaunce,  
 And that deare Crosse uppon your shield devizd,  
 Wherewith above all Knights ye goodly seeme aguizd!"<sup>s</sup>

<sup>p</sup> *ye did at earst me meet.*] "Earst," or erst, is *first*; and "at earst" is therefore at first, or formerly, lately, in the first instance. C.

<sup>q</sup> *The fond encheason.*] The foolish *cause*, or *occasion*. The word is not very uncommon in our older writers, and one instance will suffice:

"Ease, rest and delicates, what great encheason

They give to sterre a man to corage hote, fervent."

"Guistard and Sismond," 1597, Sign. B. ii. This poem is considerably older than the date when it was printed. C.

<sup>r</sup> *Who, soone as on that knight.*] "On" is *one* in the 4to. 1590 only—a frequent mistake. C.

<sup>s</sup> *ye goodly seeme aguizd.*] Todd refers to F. Q. ii. C. vi. St. 7, re-



32.

“Joy may you have, and everlasting fame,  
 Of late most hard atchiev'ment by you donne,  
 For which enrolled is your glorious name  
 In heavenly Regesters above the Sunne,  
 Where you a Saint with Saints your feat have wonne:  
 But wretched we, where ye have left your marke,  
 Must now anew begin like race to ronne.  
 God guide thee, Guyon, well to end thy warke,  
 And to the wished haven bring thy weary barke!”

33.

“Palmer,” him answered the Redcrosse knight,  
 “His be the praise that this atchiev'ment wrought,  
 Who made my hand the organ of his might:  
 More then goodwill to me attribute nought;  
 For all I did, I did but as I ought.  
 But you, faire Sir, whose pageant next ensues,  
 Well mote yee thee,<sup>t</sup> as well can wish your thought,  
 That home ye may report thrise happy newes;<sup>u</sup>  
 For well ye worthy bene for worth and gentle thewes.”

34.

So courteous conge both did give and take,  
 With right hands plighted, pledges of good will.  
 Then Guyon forward gan his voyage make  
 With his blacke Palmer, that him guided still:  
 Still he him guided over dale and hill,

---

specting “aguizd,” forgetting that we met with the word in St. 21 of the Canto before us: there it means *clad*, or *dressed*, and here the sense is akin to it: the shield of the Redcross knight was decorated or charged with the device of the cross. C.

<sup>t</sup> *Well mote yee thee.*] *Thrive, prosper.* So, in F. Q. ii. xi. 17. “Fayre mote he *thee*.” We find this expression often in our old poets. UPTON. Richardson places it under the article *the*. C.

<sup>u</sup> *thrise happy newes.*] “Thrise” is from the errata of the 4to. 1590; but it is remarkable that *these* for “thrise” is retained in the folio 1611, which Drayton, in his copy of that impression, amended to *thrice*. C.



And with his steedy staffe did point his way ;  
 His race with reason, and with words his will,  
 From fowle intemperaunce he ofte did stay,  
 And suffred not in wrath his hasty steps to stray.

35.

In this faire wize they traveild long yfere,<sup>x</sup>  
 Through many hard assayes which did betide ;  
 Of which he honour still away did beare,  
 And spred his glory through all countryes wide.  
 At last, as chaunst them by a forest side  
 To passe, for succour from the scorching ray,  
 They heard a ruefull voice, that dearnly cride<sup>y</sup>  
 With percing shriekes and many a dolefull lay ;  
 Which to attend awhile their forward steps they stay.

36.

“ But if that carelesse heavens,” (qd. she) “ despise  
 The doome of just revenge, and take delight  
 To see sad pageants of mens miseries,  
 As bownd by them to live in lives despight ;  
 Yet can they not warne death from wretched wight.  
 Come, then ; come soone ; come, sweetest death, to  
 me,  
 And take away this long lent loathed light :  
 Sharpe be thy wounds, but sweete the medicines be,  
 That long captived foules from weary thraldome free.

37.

“ But thou, sweete Babe, whom frowning froward fate  
 Hath made sad witnesse of thy fathers fall,  
 Sith heven thee deignes to hold in living state,

<sup>x</sup> *they traveild long yfere.*] They travelled long *together*, or *in company*. We have before seen (B. i. C. x. St. 4.) that “ fere ” means a companion in general, as well as a husband, or wife. C.

<sup>y</sup> *that dearnly cride.*] “ Dearnly ” properly means *secretly*, or *bid-denly* ; and Spenser may intend, as the fact was, that the person crying was not seen ; but “ dearnly ” also is used for *mournfully*, *distressfully*. C.



Long maist thou live, and better thrive withall  
 Then to thy lucklesse parents did befall.  
 Live thou; and to thy mother dead attest  
 That cleare she dide from blemish criminall:  
 Thy litle hands embrewd in bleeding brest  
 Loe! I for pledges leave. So give me leave to rest."

38.

With that a deadly shriek she forth did throw  
 That through the wood reechoed againe;  
 And after gave a grone so deepe and low  
 That seemd her tender hart was rent in twaine,  
 Or thrild with point of thorough-piercing paine:  
 As gentle Hynd, whose sides with cruell steele  
 Through launched, forth her bleeding life does raine,  
 Whiles the sad pang approching shee does feele,  
 Braies out her latest breath, and up her eies doth feele.

39.

Which when that warriour heard, dismounting strait  
 From his tall steed, he rusht into the thick,  
 And soone arrived where that sad pourtrait  
 Of death and dolour lay,<sup>z</sup> halfe dead, halfe quick;  
 In whose white alabaster brest did stick  
 A cruell knife that made a griesly wovnd,  
 From which forth gusht a stream of goreblood thick,  
 That all her goodly garments staine arownd,  
 And into a deepe sanguine dide the grassy grownd.

40.

Pitifull spectacle of deadly smart,  
 Beside a bubling fountaine low she lay,  
 Which shee increased with her bleeding hart,

---

<sup>z</sup> *Of death and dolour lay.*] How "dolour" came to be misprinted *labour* in the 4to. 1596, and subsequently, is not easily explained, but the fact is so; and it is a fact also that, obvious as the blunder is, Drayton allowed it to remain in his folio 1611: he placed a mark in his margin, but perhaps did not know how to amend the faulty text. C.



And the cleane waves with purple gore did ray :<sup>a</sup>  
 Als in her lap a lovely babe did play  
 His cruell sport, in stead of sorrow dew ;  
 For in her streaming blood he did embay  
 His litle hands, and tender joints embrew :  
 Pitifull spectacle, as ever eie did vew !

41.

Besides them both, upon the soiled gras  
 The dead corse of an armed knight was spred,  
 Whose armour all with blood besprincled was :  
 His ruddy lips did smyle, and rosy red  
 Did paint his chearefull cheekes, yett being ded ;  
 Seemd to have beene a goodly personage,  
 Now in his freshest flowre of lusty hed,  
 Fitt to inflame faire Lady with loves rage,  
 But that fiers fate did crop the blossome of his age.

42.

Whom when the good Sir Guyon did behold,  
 His hart gan wexe as starke as marble stone,<sup>b</sup>  
 And his fresh blood did frieze with fearefull cold,  
 That all his senses seemd berefte attone :  
 At last his mighty ghost gan deepe to grone,  
 As Lion, grudging in his great disdaine,  
 Mournes inwardly, and makes to him selfe mone ;

---

<sup>a</sup> *with purple gore did ray.*] *Defile*, says Todd, and refers to B. vi. C. iv. St. 23, where the passage is,

“ he wypt away,

And from his face the filth that did it ray.”

Here “ ray ” is certainly to be taken for *beray*, as in “ The Taming of the Shrew,” A. iv. Sc. 1 ; but in the line above,

“ And the cleane waves with purple gore did ray,”

it may admit of doubt whether “ ray ” is not used in the sense of to *streak*, or *stripe*. However, it is to be allowed that the epithet “ cleane ” is in favour of Todd’s interpretation. C.

<sup>b</sup> *as starke as marble stone.*] “ Stark ” (A. S. *stearc*,) means *strong* and *firm* ; but here it is to be taken in the sense of *hard*. “ Berefte attone,” two lines lower, of course means *bereft at once*. C.



Til ruth and fraile affection did constraîne  
His stout courage<sup>c</sup> to stoupe, and shew his inward paine.

43.

Out of her gored wound the cruell steel  
He lightly snatcht, and did the floodgate stop  
With his faire garment; then gan softly feel  
Her feeble pulse, to prove if any drop  
Of living blood yet in her veynes did hop:  
Which when he felt to move, he hoped faire  
To call backe life to her forsaken shop.  
So well he did her deadly wounds repaire,  
That at the last shee gan to breath out living aire.

44.

Which he perceiving greatly gan reioice,  
And goodly counsell, that for wounded hart  
Is meetest med'cine, tempred with sweete voice:  
"Ay me! deare Lady, which the ymage art  
Of ruefull pittie and impatient smart,  
What direfull chaunce, armd with avenging fate,  
Or cursed hand, hath plaid this cruell part,  
Thus fowle to hasten your untimely date?  
Speake, O dear Lady, speake! help never comes too late."

45.

Therewith her dim eie-lids she up gan reare,  
On which the drery death did sitt as sad  
As lump of lead, and made darke clouds appeare:  
But when as him, all in bright armour clad,  
Before her standing she espied had,  
As one out of a deadly dreame affright,  
She weakely started, yet she nothing drad:

---

<sup>c</sup> *His stout courage.*] The folios, and Hughes, disliking the accent on the second syllable of *courage*, have thought proper to read *courage stout*. But they appear to have forgotten that, in the very next Canto, St. 38, *accorage* is accented with the ictus on the last syllable. The rhyme, however, has there prevented such arbitrary alteration. TODD.



Streight downe againe herselfe, in great despight,  
She groveling threw to ground, as hating life and light.

46.

The gentle knight her soone with carefull paine  
Uplifted light, and softly did uphold :  
Thrise he her reard, and thrise she sunck againe,  
Till he his armes about her sides gan fold,  
And to her said ; “ Yet, if the stony cold  
Have not all seized on your frozen hart,  
Let one word fall that may your grief unfold,  
And tell the secrete of your mortall smart :  
He oft finds present helpe who does his grieffe impart.”

47.

Then, casting up a deadly looke, full low  
Shee sight from bottome of her wounded brest ;  
And after, many bitter throbs did throw,  
With lips full pale and foltring tong opprest,  
These words she breathed forth from riven chest :  
“ Leave, ah ! leave off, whatever wight thou bee,  
To lett a weary wretch from her dew rest,  
And trouble dying soules tranquillitee ;  
Take not away, now got, which none would give to  
me.”

48.

“ Ah ! far be it,” (said he) “ Deare dame, fro mee,  
To hinder soule from her desired rest,  
Or hold sad life in long captivitee ;  
For all I seeke is but to have redrest  
The bitter pangs that doth your heart infest.  
Tell then, O Lady ! tell what fatall priefe  
Hath with so huge misfortune you opprest ;  
That I may cast to compas your reliefe,  
Or die with you in sorrow, and partake your grieffe.”

49.

With feeble hands then stretched forth on hye,



As heven accusing guilty of her death,  
And with dry drops congealed in her eye,  
In these sad wordes she spent her utmost breath:  
“Heare then, O man! the sorrowes that uneath  
My tong can tell, so far all fence they pas.  
Loe! this dead corpe, that lies here underneath,  
The gentlest knight, that ever on greene gras  
Gay steed with spurs did pricke, the good Sir Mortdant was:

50.

“Was, (ay the while, that he is not so now!)  
My Lord, my love, my deare Lord, my deare love!  
So long as heavens just with equall brow  
Vouchsafed to behold us from above.  
One day, when him high corage did emmove,  
As wont ye knightes to seeke adventures wilde,  
He pricked forth his puissaunt force to prove.  
Me then he left enwombed of this childe,  
This luckles childe, whom thus ye see with blood defild.

51.

“Him fortunéd (hard fortune ye may ghesse)  
To come, where vile Acrasia does wonne;  
Acrasia, a false enchaunteresse,  
That many errant knightes hath fowle fordonne;<sup>d</sup>  
Within a wandring Island, that doth ronne  
And stray in perilous gulfe, her dwelling is.  
Fayre Sir, if ever there ye travell, shonne  
The cursed land where many wend amis,  
And know it by the name: it hight the *Bowre of blis*.

52.

“Her blis is all in pleasure, and delight,  
Wherewith she makes her lovers dronken mad;

---

<sup>d</sup> *That many errant knightes hath fowle fordonne.*] Todd and others (not Professer Child) have entirely perverted the sense of this line, by printing *have* for “hath;” as if the knights had *undone* Acrasia, and not Acrasia had *undone* the knights. C.



And then with words, and weedes, of wondrous might,  
 On them she workes her will to uses bad :  
 My liefest Lord she thus beguiled had ;  
 For he was flesh : (all flesh doth frayltie breed)  
 Whom when I heard to beene so ill bestad,  
 Weake wretch, I wrapt myselfe in Palmers weed,  
 And cast to seek him forth through danger and great  
 dreed.

## 53.

“ Now had fayre Cynthia by even tournes  
 Full measured three quarters of her yeare,  
 And thrise three tymes had fild her crooked hornes,  
 Whenas my wombe her burdein would forbear,  
 And bad me call Lucina to me neare.  
 Lucina came ; a manchild forth I brought :  
 The woods, the nymphes, my bowres, my midwives,  
 weare :  
 Hard help at need ! So deare thee, babe, I bought ;  
 Yet nought too dear I deemd, while so my deare I fought.

## 54.

“ Him so I fought ; and so at last I fownd,  
 Where him that witch had thralld to her will,  
 In chaines of lust and lewde desyres ybownd,  
 And so transformed from his former skill,  
 That me he knew not, nether his owne ill ;  
 Till, through wise handling and faire governaunce,  
 I him recured to a better will,  
 Purged from drugs of fowle intemperaunce :  
 Then meanes I gan devise for his deliverance.

## 55.

“ Which when the vile Enchaunteresse perceiv'd,  
 How that my Lord from her I would reprove,  
 With cup thus charmd him parting she deceivd ;  
 ‘ Sad verfe, give death to him that death does give,  
 ‘ And losse of love to her that loves to live,



‘ So soone as Bacchus with the Nymphe does lincke !’  
 So parted we, and on our journey drive ;  
 Till, coming to this well, he stoupt to drinke :  
 The charme fulfild, dead suddainly he downe did sincke.

56.

“ Which when I, wretch ” — Not one word more she sayd,  
 But breaking off the end for want of breath,  
 And flyding soft, as downe to sleepe her layd,  
 And ended all her woe in quiet death.  
 That seeing, good Sir Guyon could uneath  
 From teares abstayne ; for grieve his hart did grate,  
 And from so heavie sight his head did wreath,  
 Accusing fortune, and too cruell fate,  
 Which plunged had faire Lady in so wretched state.

57.

Then turning to his Palmer said ; “ Old fyre,  
 Behold the ymage of mortalitie,  
 And feeble nature cloth’d with fleshly tyre.  
 When raging passion with fierce tyranny  
 Robs reason of her dew regalitie,  
 And makes it servaunt to her basest part,  
 The strong it weakens with infirmitie,  
 And with bold furie armes the weakest hart :  
 The strong through pleasure soonest falles, the weake  
 through smart.”

58.

“ But temperaunce ” (said he) “ with golden squire<sup>e</sup>  
 Betwixt them both can measure out a meane ;  
 Nether to melt in pleasures whott desyre,  
 Nor frye in hartlesse grieve and dolefull tene :<sup>f</sup>

---

<sup>e</sup> *with golden squire.*] “ Squire ” and *square* are the same word, and mean the same thing : both are repeatedly used by Shakespeare, and by authors before and after his time, as a rule by which measures were to be taken. Strictly, however, it means more than a *rule*. C.

<sup>f</sup> *Nor frye in hartlesse grieve and dolefull tene.*] “ Tene ” is, of course,



Thrise happy man, who fares them both atweene !  
 But sith this wretched woman overcome  
 Of anguish, rather then of crime, hath bene,  
 Reserve her cause to her eternall doome ;  
 And, in the meane, vouchsafe her honorable toombe."

59.

"Palmer," qd. he, "death is an equall doome  
 To good and bad, the commen In of rest ;  
 But after death the tryall is to come,  
 When best shall bee to them that lived best :  
 But both alike, when death hath both supprest,  
 Religious reverence doth buriall teene ;<sup>g</sup>  
 Which whofo wants, wants so much of his rest :  
 For all so greet shame after death I weene,  
 As selfe to dyen bad, unburied bad to beene.

60.

So both agree their bodies to engrave :  
 The great earthes wombe they open to the sky,  
 And with sad Cypresse seemely it embrace ;  
 Then, covering with a clod their closed eye,  
 They lay therein their corfes tenderly,  
 And bid them sleepe in everlasting peace.  
 But, ere they did their utmost obsequy,  
 Sir Guyon, more affection to increace,

---

*sorrow* ; and, as Church observes, the opposition to "melt," in the preceding line, requires *frieze*, or *frize*, instead of "frye." We may not unreasonably suspect a misprint of "frye" for *fryze*, but no such emendation is made in the errata, and all impressions read "frye" or *fry*. C.

<sup>g</sup> *Religious reverence doth buriall teene.*] This line has been considered obscure ; and the mode of clearing the difficulty has been to make "teene" a verb : but in the immediately preceding Stanza it is a substantive ; and although it was occasionally converted into a verb, such does not seem to be the case here, the meaning of the line being, that religious reverence does, or performs, the burial lamentation or sorrow over "both alike." Upton would understand "teene" in the sense of stirring up, or occasioning burial ; but for that explanation he adduces no authority, and it would, we think, be hard to find any. C.



Bynempt a sacred vow,<sup>h</sup> which none should ay releace.

61.

The dead knights sword out of his sheath he drew,  
 With which he cutt a lock of all their heare,<sup>i</sup>  
 Which medling<sup>k</sup> with their blood and earth he threw  
 Into the grave, and gan devoutly sweare;  
 "Such and such evil God on Guyon reare,  
 And worse and worse, young Orphane, be thy payne,  
 If I, or thou, dew vengeance doe forbear,  
 Till guiltie blood her guerdon doe obtayne!"—  
 So shedding many teares they clofd the earth agayne.

<sup>h</sup> *Bynempt a sacred vow.*] i. e. *took* a sacred vow; from the Germ. *nehmen*, to take, with the prefix *by*. The word "bynempt" also occurs in "The Shep. Cal." vol. i. p. 126; but there it seems rather to mean to *name*, or *mention*. Todd would here also understand "bynempt" as *named*; but he was mistaken in the etymology: it has in this place no connection with the German word *beiname*, a nickname. C.

<sup>i</sup> *With which he cutt a lock of all their heare.*] This seems an allusion to the custom of cutting off a lock of hair of dying persons, which was looked on as a kind of offering to the infernal deities. Juno orders Iris to perform this office to Dido, Virgil, *Æn.* vi. 694. And in the "Alcestis of Euripides," Death says he is come to perform this office to Alcestis. There was likewise another ceremony, which was for the friends and relations of the deceased to cut off their own hair, and to scatter it upon the dead corse. "Nec traxit cæfas per tua membra comas." *Consol. ad Liv.* ver. 98. UPTON.

<sup>k</sup> *Which medling.*] *Mixing* the hair, &c. Fr. *mêler*. So, in "The Shep. Cal." April, [vol. i. p. 46]:

"The red rose *medled* with the white yfere."

Again, in May, [vol. i. p. 65]:

"Thus *medled* his talk with many a tear." CHURCH.

In both places E. K. has supplied the gloss, viz. "medled, mingled," and we have thought it needless to add to it. C.





## CANTO II.

*Babes bloody handes may not be clenſd.  
The face of golden Meane :  
Her ſiſters, two Extremities,  
Strive her to baniſh cleane.*

I.



THUS when Sir Guyon with his faithful  
guyde  
Had with dew rites and dolorous lament  
The end of their ſad Tragedie uptyde,  
The litle babe up in his armes he hent ;<sup>a</sup>  
Who with ſweet pleaſaunce, and bold blandiſhment,  
Gan ſmyle on them, that rather ought to weepe,  
As careleſſe of his woe, or innocent  
Of that was doen ; that ruth emperced deepe  
In that knightes hart, and wordes with bitter teares did  
ſteepe :

2.

“ Ah ! luckleſſe babe, borne under cruell ſtarre,  
And in dead parents balefull aſhes bred,  
Full little weeneſt thou what ſorrowes are  
Left thee for porcion of thy livelyhed ;  
Poore Orphane ! in the wild world ſcattered,  
As budding braunch rent from the native tree,

---

<sup>a</sup> *in his armes he bent.*] In his arms he took: A. S. *bentan*. Shake-  
ſpeare repeatedly uſes both “ hent ” and hint ; the laſt as a ſubſtantive. C.



And throwen forth, till it be withered.  
Such is the state of men: Thus enter we  
Into this life with woe, and end with miseriee!"

## 3.

Then, soft himselfe inclyning on his knee  
Downe to that well, did in the water weene  
(So love does loath disdainefull nicitee)  
His guiltie handes from bloody gore to cleene.  
He washt them oft and oft, yet nought they beene  
For all his washing cleaner. Still he strove;  
Yet still the litle hands were bloody seene:  
The which him into great amaz'ment drove,  
And into diverse doubt his wavering wonder clove.

## 4.

He wist not whether blott of fowle offence  
Might not be purgd with water nor with bath;  
Or that high God, in lieu of innocence,  
Imprinted had that token of his wrath,  
To shew how sore bloodguiltinesse he hat'th;<sup>b</sup>  
Or that the charme and veneme which they dronck,  
Their blood with secret filth infected hath,  
Being diffused through the fenceless tronck,  
That through the great contagion direful deadly stonck.

## 5.

Whom thus at gaze the Palmer gan to bord<sup>c</sup>  
With goodly reason, and thus fayre bespake;  
"Ye bene right hard amated,<sup>d</sup> gracious Lord,

<sup>b</sup> *To shew how sore bloodguiltinesse he hat'th.*] We meet with *blood-guiltinesse* again in St. 30; and again in F. Q. ii. vii. 19. This is a word which would have been ranked among Spenser's obsolete terms, had it not been accidentally preserved to us in the translation of the Psalms used in our Liturgy, and by that means rendered familiar. "Deliver me from *blood-guiltiness*, O God." Psal. li. 14. T. WARTON.

<sup>c</sup> *the Palmer gan to bord.*] To "bord," from the Fr. *aborder*, means, to *approach*, or *accost*. To *accost*, is strictly to come up to the side of; and to "bord," to advance to a limit or boundary. C.

<sup>d</sup> *Ye bene right hard amated.*] The etymology of the verb to



And of your ignorance great mervell make,  
 Whiles cause not well conceived ye mistake:  
 But know, that secret vertues are infusd  
 In every fountaine, and in everie lake,  
 Which who hath skill them rightly to have chusd,  
 To prooffe of passing wonders hath full often usd:

6.

"Of those, some were so from their fourse indewd  
 By great Dame Nature, from whose fruitfull pap  
 Their welheads spring, and are with moisture deawd;  
 Which feedes each living plant with liquid sap,  
 And filles with flowres fayre Floraes painted lap:  
 But other some, by guifte of later grace,  
 Or by good prayers, or by other hap,  
 Had vertue pourd into their waters bace,  
 And thenceforth were renowmd, and sought from place  
 to place.

7.

"Such is this well, wrought by occasion straunge,  
 Which to her Nymph befell. Upon a day,  
 As she the woodes with bow and shaftes did raunge,  
 The hartlesse Hynd and Robucke to dismay,  
 Dan Faunus chaunst to meet her by the way,  
 And, kindling fire at her faire-burning eye,  
 Inflamed was to follow beauties pray,"

---

"amate" has been variously given: to mate, is to *confound*; and here "amated" is, probably, to be understood as *confounded*, *puzzled*, *perplexed*, which last is the sense given by Todd. The Spanish *matar*, to kill, is the same as the Italian *amazzare*; and to *mate*, in English, is frequently used for to *destroy*. The text of the 4to. 1590 is, "Ye bene right *hart* amated;" and if we take "hart-amated" as a compound, we are not by any means sure that it is not right: Guyon might be amated in *heart*; but later impressions read "hard amated." C.

<sup>e</sup> to follow beauties pray.] It is "beauties *chace*" in all the old impressions; but the rhyme shows it to be wrong. Church did not at all know what word to substitute; and Todd suggested *ray*, as the conjecture of the editor of "The Sad Shepherd" of Ben Jonson. Drayton, in his copy of the folio 1611, has, doubtless, furnished the right word,



And chaced her that fast from him did fly;  
As hynd from her, so she fled from her enemy.

8.

“At last, when fayling breath began to faint,  
And saw no meanes to scape; of shame affrayd,  
She set her downe to weepe for fore constraint;  
And to Diana calling lowd for ayde,  
Her deare besought to let her die a mayd.  
The goddesse heard; and suddeine, where she fate  
Welling out streames of teares, and quite dismayd  
With stony feare of that rude rustick mate,  
Transformd her to a stone from stedfast virgins state.

9.

“Lo! now she is that stone; from whose two heads,  
As from two weeping eyes, fresh streames do flow,  
Yet colde through feare and old conceived dreads;  
And yet the stone her semblance seemes to show,  
Shapt like a maide, that such ye may her know:  
And yet her vertues in her water byde,  
For it is chaste and pure as purest snow,  
Ne lets her waves with any filth be dyde;  
But ever, like herselfe, unstayned hath beene tryde.

10.

“From thence it comes, that this babes bloody hand  
May not be clenfd with water of this well:  
Ne certes, Sir, strive you it to withstand,  
But let them still be bloody, as befell,  
That they his mothers innocence may tell,

---

“pray,” i. e. *prey*: Faunus was inflamed to follow “beauty’s prey,” or the beautiful prey of which he was in chase. We have therefore had no hesitation in inserting “pray” in the text, being convinced, on the authority of Drayton, supported by the rhyme and the obvious sense of the passage, that “pray” must have been Spenser’s word. Above, we ought possibly to read *a Nymph*, instead of “her Nymph,” unless we are to suppose that “her” applies to the well. Drayton here placed a mark in his margin, but made no alteration. C.



As she bequeathd in her last testament ;  
 That, as a sacred Symbole, it may dwell  
 In her sonnes flesh, to mind revengement,  
 And be for all chaste Dames an endlesse moniment."

## 11.

He hearkned to his reason, and the childe  
 Uptaking, to the Palmer gave to beare ;  
 But his sad fathers armes with blood defilde,  
 An heavie load, himselfe did lightly reare ;  
 And turning to that place, in which whyleare  
 He left his loftie steed with golden fell  
 And goodly gorgeous barbes, him found not theare :  
 By other accident, that earst befell,  
 He is convaide ; but how, or where, here fits not tell.

## 12.

Which when Sir Guyon saw, all were he wroth,  
 Yet algates mote he soft himselfe appease,  
 And fairely fare on foot, how ever loth :  
 His double burden did him fore disease.  
 So long they traveled with litle ease,  
 Till that at last they to a Castle came,  
 Built on a rocke adjoyning to the seas :  
 It was an auncient worke of antique fame,<sup>f</sup>  
 And wondrous strong by nature, and by skilfull frame.

## 13.

Therein three sisters dwelt of fundry sort,  
 The children of one fyre by mothers three ;<sup>g</sup>

<sup>f</sup> *It was an auncient worke of antique fame.*] This is the reading of Spenser's second edition. The first reads *frame*, which Mr. Church follows, but, at the same time, admits that *fame* seems to be right, and that *auncient work* and *antique frame* are synonymous expressions. Mr. Upton notices the similar error of *fame* for *frame*, in F. Q. i. x. 59, and here reads *fame*. TODD. It is "fame" in the folios. C.

<sup>g</sup> *The children of one fyre by mothers three.*] The *three* different mothers, I interpret from Plato to be those three parts, which he appropriates to the soul, Λογιστικὴ, from whom was born *Medina*; and Ἐπιθυμητικὴ, and Θυμητικὴ, from whom were born *the other two way-*



Who dying whylome did divide this fort  
 To them by equall shares in equall fee:  
 But stryfull mind and diverse qualitee  
 Drew them in partes, and each made others foe:  
 Still did they strive and daily disagree;  
 The eldest did against the youngest goe,  
 And both against the middest meant to worken woe.

14.

Where when the knight arriv'd, he was right well  
 Receiv'd, as knight of so much worth became,  
 Of second sister, who did far excell  
 The other two: Medina was her name,  
 A sober sad and comely courteous Dame;  
 Who rich arayd, and yet in modest guise,  
 In goodly garments that her well became,  
 Fayre marching forth in honorable wize,  
 Him at the threshold mett, and well did enterprize.

15.

She led him up into a goodly bowre,  
 And comely courted with meet modestie;  
 Ne in her speach, ne in her haviour,  
 Was lightnesse seene or looser vanitie,  
 But gracious womanhood, and gravitie,  
 Above the reason of her youthly yeares.  
 Her golden lockes she roundly did uptye  
 In breaded tramels, that no looser heares  
 Did out of order stray about her daintie eares.

16.

Whilest she her selfe thus busily did frame  
 Seemely to entertaine her new-come guest,  
 Newes hereof to her other sisters came,  
 Who all this while were at their wanton rest,

---

ward and froward *sisters*. See "Plat. Repub." L. iv. p. 439; L. ix. p. 580, edit. Steph. Who is the *one syre* that acts upon these three powers of the Soul? Is it not Mind? UPTON.



Accourting each her frend with lavish fest :  
 They were two knights of perelesse puiſſaunce,  
 And famous far abroad for warlike geſt,<sup>h</sup>  
 Which to theſe Ladies love did countenaunce,  
 And to his miſtreſſe each himſelfe ſtrove to advaunce.

17.

He that made love unto the eldeſt Dame,  
 Was hight Sir Huddibras, an hardy man ;  
 Yet not ſo good of deedes as great of name,  
 Which he by many raſh adventures wan,  
 Since errant armes to ſew<sup>i</sup> he firſt began :  
 More huge in ſtrength then wiſe in workes he was,  
 And reaſon with foole-hardize over ran ;  
 Sterne melancholy did his courage paſſe,  
 And was, for terrour more, all armd in ſhyning bras.

18.

But he that lov'd the youngeſt was Sanſloy ;  
 He, that faire Una late fowle outraged,  
 The moſt unruly and the boldeſt boy  
 That ever warlike weapons menaged,  
 And all to lawleſſe luſt encouraged  
 Through ſtrong opinion of his matchleſſe might ;  
 Ne ought he car'd whom he endamaged  
 By tortious wrong, or whom bereav'd of right :  
 He, now this Ladies Champion, choſe for love to fight.

19.

Theſe two gay knights, vowd to ſo diſverſe loves,  
 Each other does envy with deadly hate,  
 And daily warre againſt his foeman moves,  
 In hope to win more favour with his mate,  
 And th' others pleaſing ſervice to abate,  
 To magnifie his owne. But when they heard

<sup>h</sup> *And famous far abroad for warlike geſt.*] See the note on *geſt*,  
 F. Q. i. x. 15 ; this vol. p. 27. C.

<sup>i</sup> *Since errant armes to ſew.*] *Purſue*, follow. CHURCH.



How in that place straunge knight arrived late,  
Both knightes and ladies forth right angry far'd,  
And fercely unto battell sterne themselves prepar'd.

20.

But ere they could proceede unto the place  
Where he abode, themselves at discord fell,  
And cruell combat joynd in middle space :  
With horrible assault, and fury fell,  
They heapt huge strokes the scorned life to quell,  
That all on uprore from her settled feat  
The house was rayfd, and all that in did dwell.  
Seemd that lowde thunder with amazement great  
Did rend the ratling skyes with flames of fouldring heat.<sup>k</sup>

21.

The noyse thereof cald forth that straunger knight,  
To weet what dreadfull thing was there in hond ;<sup>l</sup>  
Where whenas two brave knightes in bloody fight  
With deadly rancour he enraunged fond,  
His sunbroad shield about his wrest he bond,  
And shyning blade unsheatht, with which he ran  
Unto that stead, their strife to understond ;  
And at his first arrivall them began  
With goodly meanes to pacifie, well as he can.

22.

But they, him spying, both with greedy forse  
Attonce upon him ran, and him beset  
With strokes of mortall steele without remorse,  
And on his shield like yron sledges bet.  
As when a Beare and Tygre, being met

<sup>k</sup> *with flames of fouldring heat.*] "Fouldring" is *thundering*: Fr. *fouldroyant*. Church proposed to read *smouldring* heat; but "*smouldring* heat" seems the very opposite of what the poet intended: it was a sudden outburst of fury. C.

<sup>l</sup> *was there in hond.*] In the edit. 1590 only, "hond" is printed *band*: it rhymes with "fond," "bond," and "understond;" all forms originating in the then broad pronunciation of the letter *a*. C.



In cruell fight on Lybicke Ocean wide,<sup>m</sup>  
 Espye a traveiler with feet furbet,<sup>n</sup>  
 Whom they in equall pray hope to divide,  
 They stint their strife and him assayle on everie side.

23.

But he, not like a weary traveilere,  
 Their sharp assault right boldly did rebut,  
 And suffred not their blowes to byte him nere,  
 But with redoubled buffes them backe did put:  
 Whose grieved mindes, which choler did englut,  
 Against themselves turning their wrathfull spight,  
 Gan with new rage their shieldes to hew and cut;  
 But still, when Guyon came to part their fight,  
 With heavie load on him they freshly gan to smight.

24.

As a tall ship tossed in troublous seas,  
 Whom raging windes, threatning to make the pray  
 Of the rough rockes, doe diversly diseafe,  
 Meetes two contrarie billowes by the way,  
 That her on either side doe fore assay,  
 And boast to swallow her in greedy grave;  
 Shee, scorning both their spights, does make wide way,  
 And with her brest breaking the fomy wave,  
 Does ride on both their backs, and faire her self doth save.

25.

So boldly he him beares, and rusheth forth  
 Betweene them both by conduct of his blade.

---

<sup>m</sup> *In cruell fight on Lybicke Ocean wide.*] The *Lybicke Ocean* means those mounds of sands in the Libyc deserts, whose wide and extended plains may be imagined an *ocean*; and these desert plains are elegantly named by Plutarch, in the Life of Crassus, πελάγιον τι χεῦμα, Lond. edit. p. 277. UPTON.

<sup>n</sup> *Espye a traveiler with feet furbet.*] *Wearied*, or *bruised*. The word is borrowed from the farmer's phraseology. See Cotgrave, "A *furbate*, or *furbating*. *Surbatture*, &c. The *furbating* of the feet of cattell. *Mesmachure*." TODD. Elsewhere Spenser spells it *furbate*; but here he alters the word on the compulsion of the rhyme. C.



Wondrous great prowesse and heroick worth  
 He shewd that day, and rare ensample made,  
 When two so mighty warriours he dismade.  
 Attonce he wards and strikes; he takes and paies;  
 Now forst to yield, now forcing to invade;  
 Before, behind, and round about him laies:  
 So double was his paines, so double be his praise.

26.

Straunge sort of fight, three valiaunt knights to see  
 Three combates joine in one, and to darraine  
 A triple warre with triple enmitee,  
 All for their Ladies froward love to gaine,  
 Which gotten was but hate. So love does raine  
 In stoutest minds, and maketh monstrous warre;  
 He maketh warre, he maketh peace againe,  
 And yett his peace is but continual jarre:  
 O miserable men, that to him subject arre!

27.

Whilst thus they mingled were in furious armes,  
 The faire Medina, with her tresses torne  
 And naked brest, in pittie of their harmes,  
 Emongst them ran; and, falling them beforne,  
 Besought them by the womb which them had born,  
 And by the loves which were to them most deare,  
 And by the knighthood which they fure had sworn,  
 Their deadly cruell discord to forbear,  
 And to her just conditions of faire peace to heare.

28.

But her two other sisters, standing by,  
 Her lowd gainsaid; and both their champions bad<sup>o</sup>

---

<sup>o</sup> *Her lowd gainsaid; and both their champions bad.*] The reading of Spenser's first edition is *her champions*. The second reads, "and both *their champion* bad," which the folios adopt. Mr. Upton follows neither, but reads "*their champions*." I have followed the amendment made by Mr. Upton. TODD. It seems not unlikely that Spenser wrote "and *each* her champion bad," which was afterwards corrupted. C.



Purſew the end of their ſtrong enmity,  
 As ever of their loves they would be glad :  
 Yet ſhe with pittthy words, and counſell ſad,  
 Still ſtrove their ſtubborne rages to revoke ;  
 That at the laſt, ſuppreſſing fury mad,  
 They gan abſtaine from dint of direfull ſtroke,  
 And hearken to the ſober ſpeeches which ſhe ſpoke.

29.

“ Ah, uiſſaunt Lords ! what curſed evill ſpright,  
 Or fell Erinnys, in your noble harts  
 Her helliſh brond hath kindled with deſpight,  
 And ſtird you up to worke your wilfull ſmarts ?  
 Is this the joy of armes ? be theſe the parts  
 Of glorious knighthood, after blood to thruſt,  
 And not regard dew right and juſt deſarts ?  
 Vaine is the vaunt, and victory unjuſt,  
 That more to mighty hands then rightfull cauſe doth  
 truſt.

30.

“ And were there rightfull cauſe of difference,  
 Yet were not better fayre it to accord  
 Then with bloodguiltineſſe to heape offence,  
 And mortal vengeance joyne to crime abhord ?  
 O ! fly from wrath ; fly, O my liefeſt Lord !  
 Sad be the fights, and bitter fruites of warre,  
 And thouſand furies wait on wrathfull ſword ;  
 Ne ought the praiſe of prowefſſe more doth marre  
 Then fowle revenging rage, and baſe contentious jarre.

31.

“ But lovely concord, and moſt ſacred peace,  
 Doth nourish vertue, and faſt friendſhip breeds ;  
 Weake ſhe makes ſtrong, and ſtrong thing does increace,  
 Till it the pitch of higheſt praiſe exceeds :  
 Brave be her warres, and honorable deeds,  
 By which ſhe triumphes over yre and pride,



And winnes an Olive girland for her meeds.  
 Be, therefore, O my deare Lords! pacifide,  
 And this misseeming discord meekely lay aside."

32.

Her gracious words their rancour did appall,  
 And funcke so deepe into their boyling brefts,  
 That downe they lett their cruell weapons fall,  
 And lowly did abase their lofty crefts  
 To her faire presence and discrete behests.  
 Then she began a treaty to procure,  
 And stablish terms betwixt both their requests,  
 That as a law for ever should endure;  
 Which to observe in word of knights they did assure.

33.

Which to confirme, and fast to bind their league,  
 After their weary sweate and bloody toile,  
 She them besought, during their quiet treague,<sup>p</sup>  
 Into her lodging to repaire a while,  
 To rest themselves, and grace to reconcile.  
 They soone consent: so forth with her they fare;  
 Where they are well receivd, and made to spoile  
 Themselves of soiled armes, and to prepare  
 Their minds to pleasure, and their mouths to dainty fare.

34.

And those two froward sisters, their faire loves,  
 Came with them eke, all were they wondrous loth,  
 And fained cheare, as for the time behoves,  
 But could not colour yet so well the troth,  
 But that their natures bad appeard in both;  
 For both did at their second sister grutch  
 And inly grieve, as doth an hidden moth  
 The inner garment frett, not th' utter touch:

---

<sup>p</sup> *during their quiet treague.*] A *truce*, or cessation of arms. Ital.  
 [and Span.] *tregua*. UPTON. We believe, only used by Spenser. C.



One thought her cheare<sup>a</sup> too litle, th' other thought too mutch.

35.

Eliffa (so the eldest hight) did deeme  
Such entertainment base, ne ought would eat,  
Ne ought would speake, but evermore did seeme  
As discontent for want of merth or meat:  
No solace could her Paramour intreat  
Her once to show, ne court, nor dalliaunce;  
But with bent lowring browes, as she would threat,  
She scould, and frownd with froward countenaunce;  
Unworthy of faire Ladies comely governaunce.

36.

But young Periffa was of other mynd,  
Full of disport, still laughing, loosely light,  
And quite contrary to her sisters kynd;<sup>r</sup>  
No measure in her mood, no rule of right,  
But poured out in pleasure and delight:  
In wine and meats she flowd above the banck,  
And in excesse exceeded her owne might;  
In sumptuous tire she joyd her selfe to pranck,<sup>s</sup>  
But of her love too lavish: (litle have she thanck!)

37.

Fast by her side did sitt the bold Sanfloy,  
Fitt mate for such a mincing mineon,<sup>t</sup>  
Who in her looseness tooke exceeding joy;

<sup>a</sup> *One thought her cheare.*] This is the reading of the first edition, which both Upton and Church adopt. The second reads "*their cheare*," which the folios and some later editions follow. Todd.

<sup>r</sup> *And quite contrary to her sisters kynd.*] *Nature*. The word "*kynd*" occurs, in precisely the same sense, vol. i. p. 210. C.

<sup>s</sup> *In sumptuous tire she joyd her selfe to pranck.*] See "*prancke* their ruffes," vol. i. p. 230: it generally refers to the ostentatious display of attire, as on p. 127. C.

<sup>t</sup> *Fitt mate for such a mincing mineon.*] Todd has a long and utterly needless note upon "*mineon*," derived from the Fr. *mignon*. No word is more common in all our old poets; and nothing can be easier than to illustrate words that do not require illustration. C.



Might not be found a francker franion,<sup>u</sup>  
 Of her leawd parts to make companion :  
 But Huddibras, more like a malecontent,  
 Did see and grieve at his bold fashon ;  
 Hardly could he endure his hardiment,  
 Yett still he satt, and inly did him selfe torment.

38.

Betwixt them both the faire Medina fate  
 With sober grace and goodly carriage :  
 With equall measure she did moderate  
 The strong extremities of their outrage.  
 That forward paire she ever would asswage,  
 When they would strive dew reason to exceed ;  
 But that same froward twaine would accorage,  
 And of her plenty adde unto their need :  
 So kept she them in order, and her selfe in heed.

39.

Thus fairely shee attempered her feast,  
 And pleasd them all with meete satiety.  
 At last, when lust of meat and drinke was ceast,  
 She Guyon deare besought of curtesie  
 To tell from whence he came through jeopardy,  
 And whether now or new adventure bownd :  
 Who with bold grace, and comely gravity,

---

<sup>u</sup> *Might not be found a francker franion.*] So in Heywood's "Edward IV." 4to. bl. l. 1600, Sign. c. 5, "He's a *frank franion*, a merry companion," &c. Todd. He might here have usefully added one or two quotations to illustrate the use of the less common word "*franion*." We have it, also with the epithet *frank*, in "The Rare Triumphs of Love and Fortune," 1589, Sign. C 4:

"I am a gentleman, a Courtier, and a merry *franke franion*."

Earlier it seems to have been spelt *fronion*, a form not noticed :

"To practise that whereby to set their *fronions* harts on fire."

"Turbervile's Poems," 1569, ed. 1584. And again in his "First History ;"

"That had in chase a *fronion* fresh of hewe."

Richardson conjectures that it is from the A. S. *freon*, a friend. C.



Drawing to him the eies of all arownd,  
From lofty siege began<sup>x</sup> these words aloud to fownd.

40.

“ This thy demaund, O Lady ! doth revive  
Fresh memory in me of that great Queene,  
Great and most glorious virgin Queene alive,  
That with her foveraine power, and scepter shene,  
All Faery lond does peaceably sustene.  
In widest Ocean she her throne does reare,  
That over all the earth it may be seene ;  
As morning Sunne her beames dispredden cleare,  
And in her face faire peace and mercy doth appeare.

41.

In her the richesse of all heavenly grace  
In chiefe degree are heaped up on hye :  
And all, that els this worlds enclosure bace  
Hath great or glorious in mortall eye,  
Adornes the person of her Majestye ;  
That men, beholding so great excellence  
And rare perfection in mortalitye,  
Doe her adore with sacred reverence,  
As th' Idole of her makers great magnificence.

42.

“ To her I homage and my service owe,  
In number of the noblest knightes on ground ;  
Mongst whom on me she deigned to bestowe  
Order of Maydenhead, the most renownd  
That may this day in all the world be found.  
An yearely solemne feast she wontes to hold,<sup>y</sup>

---

<sup>x</sup> *From lofty siege began.*] Virgil, *Æn.* ii. 2 :

“ *Inde toro pater Æneas sic orsus ab alto.*”

Which Douglas translates, “ his *sege* riall.” “ Siege ” is *seat*. Fr. *Siège*.  
UPTON. Many writers use the word in this sense. C.

<sup>y</sup> *she wontes to hold.*] “ Hold ” is *make* in all the old editions ; and  
we may be sure that “ hold ” was Spenser’s word, not only because the



The day that first doth lead the yeare around,  
To which all knights of worth and courage bold  
Resort, to heare of straunge adventures to be told.

43.

“There this old Palmer shewd himselfe that day,  
And to that mighty Princeffe did complaine  
Of grievous mischiefes which a wicked Fay  
Had wrought, and many whelmd in deadly paine;  
Whereof he crav'd redresse. My Soveraine,  
Whose glory is in gracious deeds, and joyes  
Throughout the world her mercy to maintaine,  
Eftsoones devisd redresse for such annoyas:  
Me, all unfitt for so great purpose, she employes.

44.

“Now hath faire Phebe with her silver face  
Thrise seene the shadowes of the neather world,  
Sith last I left that honorable place,  
In which her roiall presence is entrold;<sup>2</sup>  
Ne ever shall I rest in house nor hold,  
Till I that false Acrasia have wonne;  
Of whose fowle deedes, too hideous to bee told,  
I witnesse am, and this their wretched sonne,  
Whose wofull parents she hath wickedly fordonne.”

45.

“Tell on, fayre Sir,” said she, “that dolefull tale,  
From which sad ruth does seeme you to restraine,  
That we may pittie such unhappie bale,

---

rhyme requires it, but because it is written in the margin opposite to *make* in Drayton's copy of the folio 1611, now before us. We have, therefore, not hesitated regarding the substitution. C.

<sup>2</sup> *her roiall presence is entrold.*] Church says definitively, that “entrold” should be *enrold*, that is, “encircled;” and he is probably right, but not so certainly as to warrant us, as regards an author like Spenser, in running the risk of altering his language. In addition, we may mention that Drayton does not alter *introld*, as it is printed in the folio 1611, nor by any mark indicate the fitness of a change. C.



And learne from pleasures poyson to abstaine :  
Ill by ensample good doth often gayne."  
Then forward he his purpose gan pursew,  
And told the story of the mortall payne,  
Which Mordant and Amavia did rew,  
As with lamenting eyes him selfe did lately vew.

46.

Night was far spent ; and now in Ocean deep  
Orion, flying fast from hissing snake,  
His flaming head did hasten for to steep,  
When of his pitteous tale he end did make :  
Whilst with delight of that he wisely spake  
Those guesstes, beguyled, did beguyle their eyes  
Of kindly sleepe that did them overtake.  
At last, when they had markt the chaunged skyes,  
They wist their houre was spent ; then each to rest him  
hyes.







### CANTO III.

*Vaine Braggadocchio, getting Guyons  
horse, is made the scorne  
Of knighthood trew; and is of fayre  
Belphebe fowle forlorne.*

I.



SOONE as the morrow fayre with purple  
beames  
Disperst the shadowes of the misty night,  
And Titan, playing on the eastern  
streames,

Gan cleare the deawy ayre with springing light,  
Sir Guyon, mindfull of his vow yplight,  
Uprose from drowsie couch, and him addrest  
Unto the journey which he had behight :<sup>a</sup>  
His puissant armes about his noble brest,  
And many-folded shield he bound about his wrest.

2.

Then, taking Congè of that virgin pure,  
The bloody-handed babe unto her truth  
Did earnestly committ, and her conjure  
In vertuous lore to traine his tender youth,  
And all that gentle noriture ensueth ;

---

<sup>a</sup> *which he had behight.*] “Behight” here, as sometimes elsewhere, means *promised*; but Spenser, in his “Shep. Cal.” for May, uses the same word for *called*, or *named*. See vol. i. p. 63 :

“Now I, a wayfull widdowe behight.” C.



And that, so foone as ryper yeares he rought,<sup>b</sup>  
 He might, for memory of that dayes ruth,  
 Be called Ruddymane; and thereby taught  
 T' avenge his Parents death on them that had it wrought.

3.

So forth he far'd, as now befell, on foot,  
 Sith his good steed is lately from him gone;  
 Patience perforce:<sup>c</sup> helplesse what may it boot  
 To frett for anger, or for grieve to mone?  
 His Palmer now shall foot no more alone.  
 So fortune wrought, as under greene woodes fyde  
 He lately hard that dying Lady grone,  
 He left his steed without, and speare besyde,  
 And rushed in on foot to ayd her ere she dyde.

4.

The whyles a losell<sup>d</sup> wandring by the way,  
 One that to bountie never cast his mynd,  
 Ne thought of honour ever did assay  
 His baser brest, but in his kestrell kynd<sup>e</sup>  
 A pleasing vaine of glory he did fynd,<sup>f</sup>  
 To which his flowing tounge and troublous spright  
 Gave him great ayd, and made him more inclynd:

<sup>b</sup> *as ryper yeares he rought.*] i. e. *attained*, or more properly *reached*. Shakespeare repeatedly uses "raught" in the same manner; but he also employs it for *rest*, or *bereft*: see Index to Collier's "Shakespeare," edit. 1858, vi. 713. C.

<sup>c</sup> *Patience perforce.*] The whole proverb is, *Patience perforce is a medicine for a mad dog*. UPTON. Under the abbreviated form adopted by Spenser, it constantly occurs in writers of the time. C.

<sup>d</sup> *The whyles a losell.*] A *loose, good-for-nothing* fellow; as the poet explains it in the next line. Lye [properly, as the etymology, vol. i. p. 83, shows] makes it of the same signification with *lorell*. CHURCH.

<sup>e</sup> *His baser brest, but in his kestrell kynd.*] In his *base* kind, or nature. "Kestrell" is a bastard kind of hawk. See Skinner. UPTON.

<sup>f</sup> *A pleasing vaine of glory he did fynd.*] This is the reading of the first edition. Spenser's second edition reads, "A pleasing veine of glory *vaine* did fynd;" to which the folios adhere. Such a jingle, however, is here so extremely displeasing, that we may at least be justified in preferring the original reading. TODD.



He, that brave steed there finding ready dight,  
Purloynd both steed and speare, and ran away full light.

5.

Now gan his hart all swell in jollity,  
And of him selfe great hope and help conceiv'd,  
That puffed up with smoke of vanity,  
And with selfe-loved personage deceiv'd,  
He gan to hope of men to be receiv'd  
For such as he him thought, or faine would bee :  
But for in court gay portance he perceiv'd,  
And gallant shew to be in greatest gree,<sup>s</sup>  
Eftsoones to court he cast t' advaunce his first degree.

6.

And by the way he chaunced to espy  
One sitting ydle on a funny banck,  
To whom avaunting in great bravery,  
As Peacocke that his painted plumes doth pranck,  
He smote his courser in the trembling flank,  
And to him threatned his hart-thrilling speare :  
The feely man, seeing him ryde so ranck,  
And ayme at him, fell flatt to ground for feare,  
And crying, "Mercy!" loud, his pitious handes gan reare.

7.

Thereat the Scarcrow waxed wondrous proud,  
Through fortune of his first adventure fayre,  
And with big thundring voice revyld him lowd :  
"Vile caytive, vassall of dread and despayre,  
Unworthie of the commune breathed ayre,  
Why livest thou, dead dog, a lenger day,  
And doest not unto death thyselfe prepayre ?  
Dy, or thyselfe my captive yield for ay.  
Great favour I thee graunt for aunswere thus to stay."

---

<sup>s</sup> *in greatest gree.*] In greatest *estimation*, or *liking*. Todd. Perhaps, to be in chief *rank*: see vol. i. p. 87. C.



8.

“ Hold, O deare Lord ! hold your dead-doing hand,”  
 Then loud he cryde ; “ I am your humble thrall.”  
 “ Ah wretch,” (qd. he) “ thy destinies withstand  
 My wrathfull will, and doe for mercy call.  
 I give thee life : therefore prostrated fall,  
 And kisse my stirrup ; that thy homage bee.”  
 The Miser threw him selfe, as an Offall,  
 Streight at his foot in base humilitee,  
 And cleeped him his liege,<sup>h</sup> to hold of him in fee.

9.

So happy peace they made and faire accord.  
 Eftsoones this liegeman gan to wexe more bold,  
 And when he felt the folly of his Lord,  
 In his owne kind he gan him selfe unfold ;  
 For he was wylie witted, and growne old  
 In cunning sleighes and practick knavery.  
 From that day forth he cast for to uphold  
 His ydle humour with fine flattery,  
 And blow the bellows to his swelling vanity.

10.

Trompart, fitt man for Braggadochio,  
 To serue at court in view of vaunting eye.  
 Vaine-glorious man, when fluttring wind does blow  
 In his light winges, is lifted up to skye ;  
 The scorne of knighthood and trew chevalrye,  
 To thinke, without desert of gentle deed  
 And noble worth, to be aduanced hye :  
 Such prayse is shame ; but honour, vertues meed,  
 Doth beare the fayrest flowre in honourable feed.

11.

So forth they pas, a well confor ted payre,  
 Till that at length with Archimage they meet :

---

<sup>h</sup> *And cleeped him his liege.*] And called him his liege : A. S. *clypian*.  
 It is, of course, not to be confounded with *clippan*, to embrace. C.



Who seeing one, that shone in armour fayre,  
 On goodly course[r] thondring with his feet,  
 Eftsoones supposed him a person meet  
 Of his revenge to make the instrument;  
 For since the Redcrosse knight he erst did weete  
 To been with Guyon knitt in one consent,  
 The ill, which earst to him, he now to Guyon ment.

## 12.

And coming close to Trompart gan inquire  
 Of him, what mightie warriour that mote bee,  
 That rode in golden fell with single spere,  
 But wanted sword to wreake his enmitee?  
 "He is a great adventurer," (saide he)  
 "That hath his sword through hard assay forgone,  
 And now hath vowd, till he avenged bee  
 Of that despight, never to wearen none:  
 That speare is him enough to doen a thousand grone."

## 13.

Th' enchaunter greatly joyed in the vaunt,  
 And weened well ere long his will to win,  
 And both his foen with equall foyle to daunt.  
 Tho to him louting lowly did begin  
 To plaine of wronges, which had committed bin  
 By Guyon, and by that false Redcrosse knight;  
 Which two, through treason and deceitfull gin,<sup>i</sup>  
 Had slayne Sir Mordant and his Lady bright:  
 That mote him honour win to wreak so foule despight.

## 14.

Therewith all fuddeinly he seemd enragd,  
 And threatned death with dreadfull countenance,  
 As if their lives had in his hand beene gagd;  
 And with stiffe force shaking his mortall launce,

---

<sup>i</sup> *and deceitfull gin.*] "Gin" is the abbreviation of *engine*, and it sometimes means any sort of plot, contrivance, or snare: we have had it before, and it will often occur hereafter. C.



To let him weet his doughtie valiaunce,  
 Thus faid: "Old man, great fure shalbe thy meed,  
 If, where those knights for feare of dew vengeance  
 Doe lurke, thou certainly to mee areed,  
 That I may wreake on them their hainous hateful deed."

15.

"Certes, my Lord," (saide he) "that shall I soone,  
 And give you eke good helpe to their decay.  
 But mote I wisely you advise to doon,  
 Give no ods to your foes, but doe purvay  
 Your selfe of sword before that bloody day;  
 For they be two the prowest knights on grownd,  
 And oft approv'd in many hard assay;  
 And eke of surest steele that may be fownd,  
 Do arme your self against that day, them to confownd."

16.

"Dotard," (saide he) "let be thy deepe advise:  
 Seemes that through many yeares thy wits thee faile,  
 And that weake eld hath left thee nothing wise;  
 Els never should thy judgement be so frayle  
 To measure manhood by the sword or mayle.  
 Is not enough fowre quarters of a man,  
 Withouten sword or shield, an hoste to quayle?  
 Thou litle wotest what this right-hand can:<sup>k</sup>  
 Speake they which have beheld the battailes which it wan."

17.

The man was much abashed at his boast;  
 Yet well he wist that whoso would contend  
 With either of those knightes on even coast,  
 Should neede of all his armes him to defend,  
 Yet feared least his boldnesse should offend,

---

<sup>k</sup> *Thou litle wotest what this right-hand can.*] i. e. "Thou little knowest," &c. Todd misprinted "what" *that*, and his text, which varies from all the old copies, has been generally followed; but not by Professor Child in his edit. of Spenser, Boston, 1855.



When Braggadocchio faide; "Once I did sweare,  
 When with one sword seven knightes I brought to end,  
 Thenceforth in battaile never sword to beare,  
 But it were that which noblest knight on earth doth  
 weare."

18.

"Perdy, Sir knight," faide then th' enchaunter blive,<sup>1</sup>  
 "That shall I shortly purchase to your hond;  
 For now the best and noblest knight alive  
 Prince Arthur is, that wonnes in Faerie lond:  
 He hath a sword that flames like burning brond.  
 The fame by my device I undertake  
 Shall by to morrow by thy side be fond."  
 At which bold word that boaster gan to quake,  
 And wondred in his minde what mote that Monster make.

19.

He stayd not for more bidding, but away  
 Was suddein vanished out of his sight:  
 The Northerne winde his wings did broad display  
 At his commaund, and reared him up light  
 From of the earth<sup>m</sup> to take his aerie flight.  
 They lookt about, but no where could espye  
 Tract of his foot: then dead through great affright  
 They both nigh were, and each bad other flye:  
 Both fled attonce, ne ever backe retourned eye;

20.

Till that they come unto a Forrest greene,  
 In which they shrowd themselves from causeles feare;  
 Yet feare them followes still where so they beene:

---

<sup>1</sup> *faide then th' enchaunter blive.*] "Blive" is the same as belive, and bylive; viz. *quickly, speedily, actively*. We have already seen it so applied in the "Shepherd's Calendar" for Sept. vol. i. p. 110. See also F. Q. B. ii. C. viii. St. 18, &c. C.

<sup>m</sup> *From of the earth.*] Another instance in which *off* is printed "of." Todd and others make no scruple of altering the word, without notice, though professing to follow Spenser's orthography. C.



Each trembling leafe and whistling wind they heare,  
 As ghastly bug, does greatly them affeare :<sup>n</sup>  
 Yet both doe strive their fearefulnesse to faine.  
 At last they heard a horne that shrilled cleare  
 Throughout the wood that ecchoed againe,  
 And made the Forrest ring, as it would rive in twaine.

## 21.

Eft through the thicke they heard one rudely rush ;  
 With noyse whereof he from his loftie steed  
 Downe fell to ground, and crept into a bush,  
 To hide his coward head from dying dread :  
 But Trompart stoutly stayd to taken heed  
 Of what might hap. Eftsoone there stepped foorth  
 A goodly Ladie clad in hunters weed,  
 That seemd to be a woman of great worth,  
 And by her stately portance borne of heavenly birth.

## 22.

Her face so faire as flesh it seemed not,  
 But heavenly pourtraict of bright Angels hew,  
 Cleare as the skye, withouten blame or blot,  
 Through goodly mixture of complexions dew ;  
 And in her cheekes the vermeill red did shew  
 Like roses in a bed of lillies shed,  
 The which ambrosiall odours from them threw,

<sup>n</sup> *As ghastly bug, does greatly them affeare.*] The first edition reads, "does unto them affeare;" which is corrected in the errata *greatly*. The second edition, instead of this perspicuous emendation, reads,

"As ghastly bug *their haire on end does reare*:"

which alteration is admitted into every subsequent edition, except those of Church and Upton; in which the original emended reading is restored. That Shakespeare also preferred this reading, is manifest in the following simlar phraseology, "K. Henry VI." P. iii. [A. v. Sc. 2];

"For Warwick was a *bug* that *fear'd* us all:"

that is, a *monster* that *frighted* us all. *Bug* is a common word, in our old poetry, for any frightful appearance. And, in the ancient English version of the 91st Psalm, "the *terroure* by night" is rendered "the *bugge* by night." Todd.



And gazers fence with double pleasure fed,  
Hable to heale the sicke, and to revive the ded.

23.

In her faire eyes two living lamps did flame,  
Kindled above at th' heavenly makers light,  
And darted fyrie beames out of the fame,  
So passing perfant, and so wondrous bright,  
That quite bereav'd the rash beholders sight:  
In them the blinded god his lustfull fyre  
To kindle oft assayd, but had no might;  
For with dredd Majestie, and awfull yre,  
She broke his wanton darts, and quenched bace defyre.

24.

Her yvorie forehead, full of bountie brave,  
Like a broad table did it selfe dispred,  
For Love his loftie triumphes to engrave,  
And write the battailes of his great godhed:  
All good and honour might therein be red,  
For there their dwelling was. And, when she spake,  
Sweete wordes like dropping honny she did shed;  
And twixt the perles and rubins softly brake  
A silver found, that heavenly musicke seemd to make.

25.

Upon her eyelids many Graces fate,<sup>o</sup>

<sup>o</sup> *Upon her eyelids many Graces fate.* So, in Sonnet xl.

"When on each eyelid sweetly do appeare

"An hundred Graces as in shade to fit."

And, in a verse of his "Pageants," preserved by E. K. in the notes on June, "Shep. Cal."

"An hundred Graces on her eyelids fate:"

which he drew from a modern Greek poem ascribed to Musæus. In the "Hymne of Beauty" we find "a thousand Graces:"

"Sometimes upon her forehead they behold

"A thousand Graces masking in delight."

The thought of the Graces *sitting under the shade of her eyebrows*, is exactly like what Tasso says of Cupid, "Amint." A. ii. S. i.

"\_\_\_\_\_ sotto al ombra

"De le palpebre." T. WARTON.



Under the shadow of her even browes,  
 Working belgardes<sup>p</sup> and amorous retrate;  
 And everie one her with a grace endowes,  
 And everie one with meekenesse to her bowes.  
 So glorious mirrhour of celestiall grace,  
 And foveraine moniment of mortall vowes,  
 How shall frayle pen describe her heavenly face,  
 For feare, through want of skill, her beauty to disgrace?

26.

So faire, and thousand thousand times more faire,  
 She seemd, when she presented was to fight;  
 And was yclad, for heat of scorching aire,  
 All in a filken Camus<sup>q</sup> lilly whight,  
 Purfled upon with many a folded plight,  
 Which all above besprinckled was throughout  
 With golden aygulets, that glistred bright  
 Like twinckling starres; and all the skirt about  
 Was hemd with golden fringe.<sup>r</sup>

<sup>p</sup> *Working belgardes.*] *Sweet or beautiful looks.* Spenser uses the same word in *F. Q.* iii. ix. 52. TODD.

<sup>q</sup> *All in a filken Camus.*] Spenser spells it *Camis* in *F. Q.* B. v. C. v. St. 2, which comes nearer the Fr. *chemise*. Todd merely calls it "a thin transparent drefs;" but it was not necessarily thin, or transparent. He adds that "purfled," in the next line, means "wrought, or embroidered;" but Upton is wrong when he calls "aygulets" *tagged points*: they here mean spangles, as is evident from the context. The same remark will apply to "an hood with *aglets* sprad," of *F. Q.* B. vi. C. ii. St. 5, which Todd again ill explains as *tags of a lace*. It is not by any means the same as the "aglet baby" of Shakespeare, "Taming of the Shrew," A. i. Sc. 2, which is certainly to be understood as the metal point of a lace, the same as the "aglottes of sylver feyn," quoted from the 25th Coventry Play, in a note in "Shakespeare" by Collier, vol. ii. p. 464. In Spenser's text, "aygulets" is rather to be rendered *eyelets* than *tagged points*. C.

<sup>r</sup> *Was hemd with golden fringe.*] This is the first instance in our poet of leaving his verse imperfect and broken. Other instances of these hemistichs, or half verses, the reader will find in C. viii. St. 55; *F. Q.* iii. iv. 39. So again, C. vi. St. 26.

"To seek the fugitive ———."



27.

Below her ham her weed did somewhat trayne,  
 And her streight legs most bravely were embayld<sup>s</sup>  
 In gilden buskins of costly Cordwayne,<sup>t</sup>  
 All bard with golden bendes, which were entayld<sup>u</sup>  
 With curious antickes, and full fayre aumayld:  
 Before, they fastned were under her knee  
 In a rich jewell, and therein entrayld  
 The ends of all the knots, that none might see  
 How they within their fouldings close enwrapped bee:

28.

Like two faire marble pillours they were seene,  
 Which doe the temple of the Gods support,  
 Whom all the people decke with girlands greene,  
 And honour in their festivall resort;  
 Those fame with stately grace and princely port  
 She taught to tread, when she herselfe would grace;  
 But with the woody Nymphes when she did play,  
 Or when the flying Libbard she did chace,  
 She could them nimbly move, and after fly apace.

But this verse is thus left only in the old quartos, being filled up in the other editions,

“To seeke the fugitive *both farre and nere.*”

There is but one more instance in this large work, viz. B. iii. C. ix. St. 37. UPTON. It would be difficult, says Mr. Church, to fill up this hemistich to any advantage. It is thus supplied in a copy of the first edition belonging to Thomas Park, Esq. “*most gorgeously set out;*” which apposite words are written in an old hand, and probably coeval with that of the poet. TODD. There exists no printed authority for any addition in this case. C.

<sup>s</sup> *most bravely were embayld.*] Bound up. Fr. *emballer*; Germ. *einballen*. UPTON.

<sup>t</sup> *buskins of costly Cordwayne.*] So, in F. Q. vi. ii. 6. “Buskins he wore of costliest cordwayne.” The leather prepared at Cordova, or Corduba, in Spain, was much in request, and was so called. It is mentioned by Chaucer, and by many subsequent poets; and Spanish leather, under that name, is still employed. The mode of curing it was derived from the Moors, who carried it with them into the Peninsula. C.

<sup>u</sup> *which were entayld.*] Engraved, or carved. In the next line, “aumayld” is *enamelled*; and “entrayld,” two lines lower, is *twisted*. C.



29.

And in her hand a sharpe bore-speare she held,  
And at her backe a bow and quiver gay,  
Stuft with steele-headed dartes, wherewith she queld  
The salvage beastes in her victorious play,  
Knit with a golden bauldricke, which forelay  
Athwart her snowy brest, and did divide  
Her daintie paps; which, like young fruit in May,  
Now little gan to swell, and being tide  
Through her thin weed their places only signified.

30.

Her yellow lockes, crisped like golden wyre,  
About her shoulders weren loosely shed,  
And, when the winde emongst them did inspire,  
They waved like a penon wyde dispred,  
And low behinde her backe were scattered:  
And, whether art it were or heedlesse hap,  
As through the flouring Forrest rash she fled,  
In her rude heares sweet flowres themselves did lap,  
And flourishing fresh leaves and blossomes did enwrap.

31.

Such as Diana by the sandy shore  
Of swift Eurotas, or on Cynthus greene,  
Where all the Nymphes have her unwares forlore,  
Wandreth alone with bow and arrowes keene,  
To seeke her game: Or as that famous Queene  
Of Amazons, whom Pyrrhus did destroy,  
The day that first of Priame she was seene,  
Did shew her selfe in great triumphant joy,  
To succour the weake state of sad afflicted Troy.

32.

Such when as hartlesse Trompart her did vew,  
He was dismayed in his coward minde,  
And doubted whether he himselfe should shew,  
Or fly away, or bide alone behinde;



Both feare and hope he in her face did finde ;

When she at last him spying thus bespake :

“ Hayle, Groome!<sup>x</sup> didst not thou see a bleeding  
Hynde,

Whose right haunch earst my stedfast arrow strake ?  
If thou didst, tell me, that I may her overtake.”

33.

Wherewith reviv'd, this answere forth he threw :

“ O Goddesse, (for such I thee take to bee)

For nether doth thy face terrestriall shew,

Nor voyce found mortall ; I avow to thee,

Such wounded beast as that I did not see,

Sith earst into this Forrest wild I came.

But mote thy goodlyhed forgive it mee,

To weete which of the gods I shall thee name,

That unto thee dew worship I may rightly frame.”

34.

To whom she thus—but ere her words ensawd,

Unto the bush her eye did suddein glaunce,

In which vaine Braggadocchio was mewd,

And saw it stirre : she leste her percing launce,

And towards gan a deadly shafte advaunce,

In mind to marke the beast. At which sad stowre

Trompart forth stept to stay the mortall chaunce,

Out crying ; “ O ! what ever heavenly powre,

Or earthly wight thou be, withhold this deadly howre.

35.

“ O ! stay thy hand ; for yonder is no game

For thy fiers arrowes, them to exercize ;

But loe ! my Lord, my liege, whose warlike name

---

<sup>x</sup> *Hayle, Groome.*] *Young man.* See Skinner, V. *Groome*. See also Cotgrave's Fr. Dict. V. *Valet*, “ A *groome*, yeoman, or household servant of the meaner sort. In old time it was a more honourable title ; for all *young gentlemen*, untill they came to be eightene yeares of age, were, as at this day batchelers in Britaine are, tearmed so.” TODD.



Is far renown'd through many bold emprize ;<sup>y</sup>  
 And now in shade he shrowded yonder lies."  
 She staid : with that he crauld out of his nest,  
 Forth creeping on his caitive hands and thies ;  
 And standing stoutly up his lofty creft  
 Did fiercely shake, and rowze as comming late from rest.

36.

As fearfull fowle, that long in secret cave  
 For dread of foring hauke her selfe hath hid,  
 Not caring how, her silly life to save,  
 She her gay painted plumes disorderid ;  
 Seeing at last her selfe from daunger rid,  
 Peepes forth, and soone renews her native pride :  
 She gins her feathers fowle disfigured  
 Prowdly to prune, and sett on every side ;  
 She shakes off shame, ne thinks how erst she did her hide.

37.

So when her goodly visage he beheld,  
 He gan himselfe to vaunt : but, when he vewd  
 Those deadly tooles which in her hand she held,  
 Soone into other fitts he was transmewd,  
 Till she to him her gracious speach renewd :  
 "All haile, Sir knight ! and well may thee befall,  
 As all the like, which honor have purfewd  
 Through deeds of armes and prowesse martiall.  
 All vertue merits praise, but such the most of all."

38.

To whom he thus : "O fairest under skie !  
 Trew be thy words, and worthy of thy praise,  
 That warlike feats doest highest glorifie.

---

<sup>y</sup> *through many bold emprize.*] Jortin, not without some show of reason, would read "through many *a* bold emprize ;" but we do not take upon ourselves to amend the old text, and it is possible that Spenser intended "emprize" to be taken as the plural "through many bold emprizes." C.



Therein I have spent all my youthly daies,  
 And many battailes fought and many fraies  
 Throughout the world, wher so they might be found,  
 Endeavoring my dreaded name to raise  
 Above the Moone, that fame may it resound  
 In her eternall tromp, with laurell girlond cround.

39.

“But what art thou, O Lady! which doest raunge  
 In this wilde forest, where no pleasure is,  
 And doest not it for joyous court exchange,  
 Emongst thine equall peres, where happy blis  
 And all delight does raigne, much more then this?  
 There thou maist love, and dearly loved be,  
 And swim in pleasure, which thou here doest mis;  
 There maist thou best be seene, and best maist see:  
 The wood is fit for beasts, the court is fitt for thee.”

40.

“Who so in pompe of prowde estate” (qd. she)  
 “Does swim, and bathes him selfe in courtly blis,  
 Does waste his daies in darke obscuritee,  
 And in oblivion ever buried is;  
 Where ease abownds yt’s eath to doe amis:<sup>2</sup>  
 But who his limbs with labours, and his mynd  
 Behaves with cares,<sup>a</sup> cannot so easy mis.  
 Abroad in armes, at home in studious kynd,  
 Who seekes with painfull toile shall honor soonest fynd:

41.

“In woods, in waves, in warres, she wons to dwell,

<sup>2</sup> *yt’s eath to doe amis.*] It is *easy* to do amis; “uneath” is *uneasy*, or *difficult*. See “Shep. Cal.” vol. i. p. 103,

“Eche thing imparted is more *eath* to beare.” C.

<sup>a</sup> *Behaves with cares.*] Here is an instance of “behaves” used in its primitive sense, Germ. *haben*, A. S. *habban*, *gehabban*, to *possess*, *use*, or *occupy*: Somn. “Who behaves, *employes*, *uses*, &c. his limbs with labour, and his mind with *cares*,” i. e. with *study*, and *thought*; as *cura* is used in Latin. UPTON.



And wilbe found with perill and with paine ;  
 Ne can the man that moulds in ydle cell  
 Unto her happy mansion attaine :  
 Before her gate high God did Sweate ordaine,  
 And wakefull watches ever to abide ;  
 But easy is the way and passage plaine  
 To pleasures pallace : it may soone be spide,  
 And day and night her dores to all stand open wide.

42.

“ In Princes court ”—The rest she would have sayd,  
 But that the foolish man, fild with delight  
 Of her sweete words that all his fence dismayd,  
 And with her wondrous beauty ravisht quight,  
 Gan burne in filthy lust ; and, leaping light,  
 Thought in his bastard armes her to embrace.  
 With that she, swarving backe, her Javelin bright  
 Against him bent, and fiercely did menace :  
 So turned her about, and fled away apace.

43.

Which when the Pesaunt saw, amazd he stood,  
 And grieved at her flight ; yet durst he not  
 Purfew her steps through wild unknownen wood :  
 Besides he feard her wrath, and threatned shott,  
 Whiles in the bush he lay, not yet forgott :  
 Ne car'd he greatly for her presence vayne,  
 But turning said to Trompart ; “ What fowle blott  
 Is this to knight, that Lady should agayne  
 Depart to woods untoucht, and leave so proud disdayne.”

44.

“ Perdy,” (said Trompart) “ lett her pas at will,  
 Least by her presence daunger mote befall ;  
 For who can tell (and sure I feare it ill)  
 But that shee is some powre celestiall ?  
 For whiles she spake her great words did appall  
 My feeble corage, and my heart oppresse,



That yet I quake and tremble over all."

"And I," (saide Braggadocchio) "thought no lesse,  
When first I heard her horn found with such ghastlinesse.

45.

"For from my mothers wombe this grace I have  
Me given by eternall destiny,  
That earthly thing may not my corage brave  
Dismay with feare, or cause on foote to flye,<sup>b</sup>  
But either hellish feends, or powres on hye:  
Which was the cause, when earst that horne I heard,  
Weening it had beene thunder in the skye,  
I hid my selfe from it, as one affeard;  
But, when I other knew, my self I boldly reard.

46.

"But now, for feare of worse that may betide,  
Let us soone hence depart." They soone agree:  
So to his steed he gott, and gan to ride  
As one unfitt therefore, that all might see  
He had not trayned bene in chevalree.  
Which well that valiaunt courser did discerne;  
For he despisd to tread in dew degree,  
But chaufd and fom'd with corage fiers and sterne,  
And to be easd of that base burden still did erne.<sup>c</sup>

---

<sup>b</sup> *or cause on foote to flye.*] Some ambiguity is produced here by the spelling of *one* "on," which was by no means unusual. We must understand the speaker to mean "or cause *one* foote to flye;" and so Todd and other modern editors have printed without notice: it is, however, "*one* foote" in the folio 1611. C.

<sup>c</sup> *still did erne.*] i. e. still did *yearn*, or *long for*: the word is sometimes spelt "erne," as here, but oftener *earne* (from whence *earnest*) and in modern times "yearn." It is from the A. S. *yrnan*, meaning simply to *run*; and hence to *run after*, to *pursue* with anxiety. Shakespeare uses the verb to "yearn" in the sense of to *grieve*, or *vex*—"It yearns me not," "K. Henry V." A. iv. Sc. 3; and Robert Greene, as shown in a note on that passage, (Collier's "Shakesp." iii. 610) uses the epithet "yearnfull," for *grief-full*. The etymology appears to be the same; and Richardson gives as one sense of "yearn" to be *grievously affected*: he there spells the A. S. verb, not *yrnan*, but *gyrnan*: they are in truth the same word. In Spenser, "erne," of the 4to. 1590, became *yerne* in the folio 1611. C.





## CANTO IV.

*Guyon does Furor bind in chaines,  
And stops occasion:  
Delivers Phaon,<sup>a</sup> and therefore  
By strife is rayld uppon.*

I.



N brave poursuitt of honorable deed,  
There is I know not (what) great difference  
Betweene the vulgar and the noble seed,  
Which unto things of valorous pretence  
Seemes to be borne by native influence;  
As feates of armes, and love to entertaine:  
But chiefly skill to ride seemes a science  
Proper to gentle blood: some others faine  
To menage steeds, as did this vaunter, but in vaine.

2.

But he, the rightfull owner of that steede,  
Who well could menage and subdew his pride,  
The whiles on foot was forced for to yeed  
With that blacke Palmer, his most trusty guide,  
Who suffred not his wandring feete to slide;  
But when strong passion, or weake fleshlineffe,  
Would from the right way seeke to draw him wide,

---

<sup>a</sup> *Delivers Phaon.*] This is the reading of the first edition. See also St. 36. The second edition reads *Phedon*, and is followed by every subsequent old edition. Todd.



He would, through temperaunce and stedfastnesse,  
Teach him the weak to strengthen, and the strong sup-  
presse.

3.

It fortun'd, forth faring on his way,  
He saw from far, or seemed for to see,  
Some troublous uprore or contentious fray,  
Whereto he drew in hast it to agree.  
A mad man, or that feigned mad to bee,  
Drew by the heare along upon the grownd  
A handfom stripling with great crueltee,  
Whom fore he bett, and gor'd with many a wownd,  
That cheekes with teares, and fydes with blood, did all  
abownd.

4.

And him behynd a wicked Hag did stalke,  
In ragged robes and filthy disaray;  
Her other leg was lame,<sup>b</sup> that she no'te walke,  
But on a staffe her feeble steps did stay:  
Her lockes, that loathly were and hoarie gray,  
Grew all afore, and loosly hong unrold;  
But all behinde was bald, and worne away,  
That none thereof could ever taken hold;  
And eke her face ill-favour'd, full of wrinckles old.

5.

And ever as she went her tounge did walke  
In fowle reproch, and termes of vile despight,  
Provoking him, by her outrageous talke,  
To heape more vengeance on that wretched wight:  
Sometimes she raught him stones,<sup>c</sup> wherwith to smite,

---

<sup>b</sup> *Her other leg was lame.*] Literally from Homer, Il. 6. 217. Φολλὰς ἔην, χωρὶς δ' ἑτέρον πόδα. UPTON. "That she no'te walke" ought properly, as elsewhere, to be printed "n'ote walke," meaning *ne wote* to walk, or *knew not* how to walk. C.

<sup>c</sup> *Sometimes she raught him stones.*] i. e. she *reached* him, or brought to him stones. We have had "raught" so used before, p. 126. C.



Sometimes her staffe, though it her one leg were,  
 Withouten which she could not goe upright;  
 Ne any evill meanes she did forbear,  
 That might him move to wrath, and indignation reare.

6.

The noble Guyon, mov'd with great remorse,  
 Approching, first the Hag did thrust away;  
 And after, adding more impetuous force,  
 His mighty hands did on the madman lay,  
 And pluckt him backe; who, all on fire streight way,  
 Against him turning all his fell intent,  
 With beastly brutish rage gan him assay,  
 And smott, and bitt, and kickt, and scratcht, and rent,  
 And did he wist not what in his avengement.

7.

And sure he was a man of mickle might,  
 Had he had governaunce it well to guyde;  
 But, when the frantick fitt inflamd his spright,  
 His force was vaine, and strooke more often wyde,  
 Then at the aymed marke which he had eyde:  
 And oft himselfe he chaunst to hurt unwares,  
 Whylest reason, blent through passion, nought de-  
   scryde;<sup>d</sup>  
 But, as a blindfold Bull, at randon fares,<sup>e</sup>  
 And where he hits nought knowes, and whom he hurts  
   nought cares.

8.

His rude assault and rugged handeling  
 Straunge seemed to the knight, that aye with foe

---

<sup>d</sup> *Whylest reason, blent through passion, nought descryde.*] Cicero thus defines *furor*, viz. "Mentis ad omnia cæcitas," "Tusc. Disput." iii. 5. UPTON. "Blent" is *blinded*; from the A. S. *blinnan*. Of course "whylest" is to be read in the time of a monosyllable; and it is *whilst* in later editions. C.

<sup>e</sup> *at randon fares.*] At *random* goes, as we now write it; but *random* was perhaps older: see note to "Shep. Cal." vol. i. p. 57. C.



In fayre defence and goodly menaging  
 Of armes was wont to fight ; yet nathemoe  
 Was he abashed now, not fighting so ;  
 But more enfierced through his currish play,  
 Him sternly grypt, and hailing to and fro,  
 To overthrow him strongly did assay,  
 But overthrew him selfe unwares, and lower lay :

9.

And being downe the villein fore did beate  
 And bruze with clownish fistes his manly face ;  
 And eke the Hag, with many a bitter threat,  
 Still cald upon to kill him in the place.  
 With whose reproch, and odious menace,  
 The knight emboyling in his haughtie hart  
 Knitt all his forces, and gan soone unbrace  
 His grasping hold : so lightly did upstart,  
 And drew his deadly weapon to maintaine his part.

10.

Which when the Palmer saw, he loudly cryde,  
 “ Not so, O Guyon ! never thinke that so  
 That Monster can be maistred or destroyd :  
 He is not, ah ! he is not such a foe,  
 As steele can wound, or strength can overthrowe.  
 That same is Furor, cursed cruel wight,  
 That unto knighthood workes much shame and woe ;  
 And that same Hag, his aged mother, hight  
 Occasion ; the roote of all wrath and despight.

11.

“ With her, who so will raging Furor tame,  
 Must first begin, and well her amenge :  
 First her restraine from her reprochfull blame  
 And evill meanes, with which she doth enrage  
 Her frantick sonne, and kindles his corage ;  
 Then, when she is withdrawne or strong withstood,  
 It's eath his ydle fury to aswage,

11.

L



And calme the tempest of his passion wood :  
The bankes are overflowne when stopped is the flood."

12.

Therewith Sir Guyon left his first emprise,  
And, turning to that woman, fast her hent  
By the hoare lockes that hong before her eyes,  
And to the ground her threw : yet n'ould she stent  
Her bitter rayling and foule revilement,  
But still provokt her sonne to wreake her wrong ;  
But nathelesse he did her still torment,  
And, catching hold of her ungratious tonge<sup>f</sup>  
Thereon an yron lock did fasten firme and strong.

13.

Then, whenas use of speach was from her rest,  
With her two crooked handes she signes did make,  
And beckned him, the last help she had left ;  
But he that last left helpe away did take,  
And both her handes fast bound unto a stake,  
That she note stirre.<sup>g</sup> Then gan her sonne to flye  
Full fast away, and did her quite forsake ;  
But Guyon after him in hast did hye,  
And soone him overtooke in sad perplexitye.

14.

In his strong armes he stifly him embraste,  
Who him gainstriving nought at all prevaild ;  
For all his power was utterly defaste,  
And furious fitts at earst quite weren quaild :

<sup>f</sup> *her ungratious tonge.*] It may deserve noting that whereas in the edit. 1590 this word stands *tongue*, it is amended to "tonge" in the errata at the end, as if *tongue* did not at that time afford the rhyme required. Todd tells us that "tonge" was subsequently printed *tong* ; but this is a mistake, for in the folio 1611 he would have seen that it stands, as in the 4to. 1590, *tongue*. C.

<sup>g</sup> *That she note stirre.*] "Note" is printed without the apostrophe in the old copies ; but Todd added it, and in the wrong place, as we have before shown : if the apostrophe be inserted, it ought not to be "no'te," but *n'ote*, the abridgment for *ne wote*, i. e. knew not how. C.



Oft he re'nforst, and oft his forces fayld,  
 Yet yield he would not, nor his rancor slack.  
 Then him to ground he cast, and rudely hayld,  
 And both his hands fast bound behind his backe,  
 And both his feet in fetters to an yron racke.

15.

With hundred yron chaines he did him bind,  
 And hundred knots, that did him fore constrain;  
 Yet his great yron teeth he still did grind  
 And grimly gnash, threatning revenge in vaine:  
 His burning eyen, whom bloody strakes did staine,  
 Stared full wide, and threw forth sparkes of fyre;  
 And more for ranck despight then for great paine,  
 Shakt his long locks colourd like copper-wyre,  
 And bitt his tawny beard to shew his raging yre.

16.

Thus whenas Guyon Furor had captivd,  
 Turning about he saw that wretched Squyre,  
 Whom that mad man of life nigh late deprivd,  
 Lying on ground, all soild with blood and myre:  
 Whom whenas he perceived to respyre,  
 He gan to comfort, and his woundes to dresse.  
 Being at last recured, he gan inquire  
 What hard mishap him brought to such distresse,  
 And made that caytives thrall, the thrall of wretchednesse.

17.

With hart then throbbing, and with watry eyes,  
 "Fayre Sir" (qd. he)<sup>h</sup> "what man can shun the hap,

---

<sup>h</sup> "Fayre Sir" (qd. he), &c.] The following story, which this young man tells, is taken from the fifth book of "Orlando Furioso." Harington, who translated Ariosto, [in 1591] mentions that this story too was written by Mr. Turberville. Part of the tale Shakespeare has formed into his play, called "Much Ado about Nothing." UPRON. If Turberville translated the story his poem has been lost, unless Sir John Harington confounded Peter Beverley with Turberville: Beverley rendered "Ariodante and Geneura" into English, and it was licensed for the press in 1565, and



That hidden lyes unwares him to surpryse?  
 Misfortune waites advantage to entrap  
 The man most wary in her whelming lap:  
 So me weake wretch, of many weakeſt wretch,  
 Unweeting and unaware of ſuch miſhap,  
 She brought to miſchiefe through her guiltful trech,  
 Where this ſame wicked villein did me wandring ketch.<sup>1</sup>

18.

“It was a faithleſſe Squire, that was the ſourſe  
 Of all my ſorrow and of theſe ſad teares,  
 With whom from tender dug of commune nourſe  
 Attonce I was upbrought; and eft, when yeares  
 More rype us reaſon lent to choſe our Peares,  
 Our ſelves in league of vowed love wee knitt;  
 In which we long time, without gealous feares  
 Or faultie<sup>k</sup> thoughts, contynewd as was fitt;  
 And for my part I vow diſſembled not a whitt.

19.

“It was my fortune, commune to that age,  
 To love a Lady fayre of great degree,

printed by Thomas Eaſt for Francis Coldocke ſoon afterwards (“*Extr. from the Stationers’ Registers*,” i. 140); and again, if Warton be correct, in the ſame year in which “*Much Ado about Nothing*” came out, viz. 1600. This ſtatement is, however, to be doubted, and no ſuch edition is known. C.

<sup>1</sup> *did me wandring ketch.*] Where we can do ſo, we always prefer the text of the oldeſt impreſſion, which we here give; but the 4to. 1596 (followed by the folios) alters the four laſt lines thus:—

“So me weake wretch, of many weakeſt one,  
 Unweeting and unaware of ſuch miſhap  
 She brought to miſchiefe through occaſion,  
 Where this ſame wicked villein did me light upon.”

Various editors have followed various methods, ſome preferring a text made up of the two impreſſions; but we ſee no ſuch obvious and abſolute improvement in the paſſage ſubſtituted, as to induce us to abandon the principle on which we have hitherto proceeded. We place both verſions before our readers, and leave them to judge as to the preference. C.

<sup>k</sup> *Or faultie.*] In the folios this paſſage is thus corrupted, “*Our faultie,*” &c. TODD.



The which was borne of noble parentage,  
And set in highest feat of dignitee,  
Yet seemd no lesse to love then loved to bee :  
Long I her serv'd, and found her faithfull still,  
Ne ever thing could cause us disagree.  
Love, that two harts makes one, makes eke one will ;  
Each strove to please, and others pleasure to fulfill.

20.

“ My friend, hight Philemon, I did partake  
Of all my love and all my privitie ;  
Who greatly joyous seemed for my sake,  
And gracious to that Lady as to mee ;  
Ne ever wight that mote so welcome bee  
As he to her, withouten blott or blame ;  
Ne ever thing that she could think or see,  
But unto him she would impart the same.  
O wretched man, that would abuse so gentle Dame !

21.

“ At last such grace I found, and meanes I wrought,  
That I that Lady to my spouse had wonne ;  
Accord of friendes, consent of Parents sought,  
Affyaunce made, my happinesse begonne,  
There wanted nought but few rites to be donne,  
Which mariage make : that day too farre did seeme.  
Most joyous man, on whom the shining Sunne  
Did shew his face, myselfe I did esteeme,  
And that my falser friend did no less joyous deeme.

22.

“ But ear that wished day his beame disclofd,  
He, either envying my toward good,  
Or of him selfe to treason ill disposd,  
One day unto me came in friendly mood,  
And told for secret, how he understood  
That Lady, whom I had to me assynd,  
Had both distaind her honorable blood,



And eke the faith which she to me did bynd;  
And therefore wisht me stay, till I more truth should fynd.

23.

“The gnawing anguish, and sharp gelosy,  
Which his sad speach infixed in my brest,  
Ranckled so fore, and festred inwardly,  
That my engreeved mind could find no rest,  
Till that the truth thereof I did out wrest;  
And him besought, by that same sacred band  
Betwixt us both, to counsell me the best:  
He then with solemne oath and plighted hand  
Affurd, ere long the truth to let me understand.

24.

“Ere long with like againe he boorded mee,<sup>1</sup>  
Saying, he now had boulded all the floure,<sup>m</sup>  
And that it was a groome of base degree,  
Which of my love was partener Paramoure:  
Who used in a darke some inner bowre  
Her oft to meete: which better to approve,  
He promised to bring me at that howre,  
When I should see that would me nearer move,  
And drive me to withdraw my blind abused love.

25.

“This gracelesse man, for furtherance of his guile,  
Did court the handmayd of my Lady deare,  
Who, glad t’ embosome his affection vile,  
Did all she might more pleasing to appeare.  
One day, to worke her to his will more neare,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Ere long with like againe he boorded mee.*] He accosted, or addressed me—literally, *came up to my side.* C.

<sup>m</sup> *Saying, he now had boulded all the floure.*] Had sifted the whole affair; *bolted* it all to the very bran. Chaucer, “Nonnes Pr. T.” 1281,

“But I ne cannot *boulte* it to the brenne.”

That is, I cannot *sift* it, *examine* it thoroughly. Hence comes *bolting*, an exercise of Gray’s Inn, so named from sifting or examining into some law points. UPTON.



He woo'd her thus ; Pryene, (so she hight,)  
What great despight doth fortune to thee beare,  
Thus lowly to abase thy beautie bright,  
That it should not deface all others lesser light ?

26.

“ But if she had her least helpe to thee lent,  
T' adorne thy forme according thy defart,  
Their blazing pride thou wouldest soone have blent,  
And staynd their prayfes with thy least good part ;  
Ne should faire Claribell with all her art,  
Tho' she thy Lady be, approach thee neare :  
For prooffe thereof, this evening, as thou art,  
Aray thyselfe in her most gorgeous geare,  
That I may more delight in thy embracement deare.

27.

“ The Mayden, proud through praise and mad through  
love,  
Him hearkned to, and soone her selfe arayd,  
The whiles to me the treachour did remove  
His craftie engin ; and, as he had sayd,  
Me leading, in a secret corner layd,  
The sad spectatour of my Tragedie :  
Where left, he went, and his owne false part playd,  
Disguised like that groome of base degree,  
Whom he had feignd th' abuser of my love to bee.

28.

“ Eftsoones he came unto th' appointed place,  
And with him brought Pryene, rich arayd,  
In Claribellaes clothes. Her proper face  
I not discerned in that darke some shade,  
But weend it was my love with whom he playd.  
Ah God ! what horreur and tormenting grieve  
My hart, my handes, mine eies, and all assayd !  
Me lieber were ten thousand deathes priefe  
Then wounde of gealous worme, and shame of such re-  
priefe.



29.

“ I home retourning, fraught with fowle despight,  
And chawing vengeance all the way I went,  
Soone as my loathed love appeard in fight,  
With wrathfull hand I flew her, innocent,  
That after soone I dearely did lament;  
For, when the cause of that outrageous deede  
Demaunded, I made plaine and evident,  
Her faultie Handmayd, which that bale did breede,  
Confest how Philemon her wrought to chaunge her weede.

30.

“ Which when I heard, with horrible affright  
And hellish fury all enragd, I fought  
Upon myselfe that vengeable despight  
To punish: yet it better first I thought  
To wreake my wrath on him that first it wrought:  
To Philemon, false faytour Philemon,  
I cast to pay that I so dearely bought.  
Of deadly drugs I gave him drinke anon,  
And washt away his guilt with guilty potion.

31.

“ Thus heaping crime on crime, and grieve on grieve,  
To losse of love adjoyning losse of frend,  
I meant to purge both with a third mischief,  
And in my woes beginner it to end:  
That was Pryene; she did first offend,  
She last should smart: with which cruell intent,  
When I at her my murderous blade did bend,  
She fled away with ghastly dreriment,  
And I, pursewing my fell purpose, after went.

32.

“ Feare gave her winges, and rage enforst my flight;  
Through woods and plaines so long I did her chace,  
Till this mad man, whom your victorious might  
Hath now fast bound, me met in middle space.



As I her, so he me pourfewd apace,  
And shortly overtooke : I, breathing yre,  
Sore chauffed at my stay in such a cace,  
And with my heat kindled his cruell fyre ;  
Which kindled once, his mother did more rage inspyre.

33.

“ Betwixt them both they have me doen to dye,  
Through wounds, and strokes, and stubborne handeling,  
That death were better then such agony  
As grieve and fury unto me did bring ;  
Of which in me yet stickes the mortall sting,  
That during life will never be appeasd ! ”  
When he thus ended had his forrowing,  
Said Guyon ; “ Squire, fore have ye beene diseasd ;  
But all your hurts may soone through temperance be easd. ”

34.

Then gan the Palmer thus ; “ Most wretched man,  
That to affections does the bridle lend !  
In their beginning they are weake and wan,  
But soone through suff’rance growe to fearefull end :  
Whiles they are weake, betimes with them contend ;  
For, when they once to perfect strength do grow,  
Strong warres they make, and cruell battry bend  
Gainst fort of Reason, it to overthrow :  
Wrath, gelosy, grieve, love, this Squire have laide thus low.

35.

“ Wrath, gealosie, grieve, love, do thus expell :  
Wrath is a fire ; and gealosie a weede ;  
Grieve is a flood ; and love a monster fell ;  
The fire of sparkes, the weede of little feede,  
The flood of drops, the Monster filth did breede :  
But sparks, feed, drops, and filth, do thus delay ;  
The sparks soone quench, the springing feed outweed,  
The drops dry up, and filth wipe cleane away :  
So shall wrath, gealosy, grieve, love, die and decay. ”



36.

“Unlucky Squire,” (saide Guyon) “fith thou hast  
 Falne into mischiefe through intemperaunce,  
 Henceforth take heede of that thou now hast past,  
 And guyde thy waies with warie governaunce,  
 Least worse betide thee by some later chaunce.  
 But read how art thou nam’d, and of what kin?”  
 “Phaon I hight,” (quoth he) “and do advaunce  
 Mine auncestry from famous Coradin,  
 Who first to rayse our house to honour did begin.”

37.

Thus as he spake, lo! far away they spyde  
 A Varlet ronning towards hastily,  
 Whose flying feet so fast their way applyde,  
 That round about a cloud of dust did fly,  
 Which, mingled all with sweate, did dim his eye.  
 He soone approched, panting, breathlesse, whot,  
 And all so soyld that none could him descry:  
 His countenaunce was bold, and bashed not  
 For Guyons lookes, but scornefull eyglaunce at him shot.

38.

Behind his backe he bore a brasen shield,  
 On which was drawen faire, in colours fit,  
 A flaming fire in midst of bloody field,  
 And round about the wreath this word was writ,<sup>n</sup>  
*Burnt I doe burne.* Right well beseemed it  
 To be the shield of some redoubted knight;  
 And in his hand two dartes, exceeding flit  
 And deadly sharp, he held, whose heads were dight  
 In poyson and in blood of malice and despight.

---

<sup>n</sup> *And round about the wreath this word was writ.*] This motto, as Mr. Church observes. Hughes’s second edition, and Tonson’s edition of 1758, read “*these words were writ.*” But this obtrusive emendation is unnecessary. TODD. It is “this word” in every ancient impression from 1590 to 1611. C.



39.

When he in prefence came, to Guyon first  
 He boldly spake; "Sir knight, if knight thou bee,  
 Abandon this forestalled place at erst,  
 For feare of further harme, I counsell thee;  
 Or bide the chaunce at thine owne jeoparddee."  
 The knight at his great boldnesse wondered;  
 And, though he scorn'd his ydle vanitee,  
 Yet mildly him to purpose answered;  
 For not to grow of nought he it conjectured.

40.

"Varlet, this place most dew to me I deeme,  
 Yielded by him that held it forcibly:  
 But whence shold come that harme, which thou dost  
 feeme  
 To threat to him that mindes his chaunce t' abyey?"  
 "Perdy," (sayd he) "here comes, and is hard by,  
 A knight of wondrous powre and great assay,  
 That never yet encountred enemy  
 But did him deadly daunt, or fowle dismay;  
 Ne thou for better hope, if thou his prefence stay."

41.

"How hight he then," (sayd Guyon) "and from  
 whence?"  
 "Pyrochles is his name, renowned farre  
 For his bold feates and hardy confidence,  
 Full oft approvd in many a cruell warre;  
 The brother of Cymochles; both which arre  
 The sonnes of old Acrates and Despight;  
 Acrates, sonne of Phlegeton and Jarre;  
 But Phlegeton is sonne of Herebus and Night;  
 But Herebus sonne of Aeternitie is hight.

---

° *his chaunce t' abyey.*] To "abyey" and to *abide* were used almost indifferently by our old poets: to aby the chance is to await the issue. C.



42.

“ So from immortall race he does proceede,  
 That mortall hands may not withstand his might,  
 Drad for his derring doe<sup>p</sup> and bloody deed;  
 For all in blood and spoile is his delight.  
 His am I Atin, his in wrong and right,  
 That matter make for him to worke upon,  
 And stirre him up to strife and cruell fight.  
 Fly therefore, fly this fearefull stead anon,  
 Least thy foolhardize worke thy sad confusion.”

43.

“ His be that care, whom most it doth concerne,”  
 (Sayd he) “ but whether with such hasty flight  
 Art thou now bownd? for well mote I discerne  
 Great cause, that carries thee so swifte and light.”  
 “ My Lord,” (qd. he) “ me sent, and streight behight  
 To seeke Occasion, where so she bee:<sup>q</sup>  
 For he is all disposd to bloody fight,  
 And breathes out wrath and hainous crueltee:  
 Hard is his hap that first fals in his jeoparddee.”

44.

“ Mad man,” (saide then the Palmer) “ that does seeke  
 Occasion to wrath, and cause of strife:  
 Shee comes unsought, and shonned followes eke.  
 Happy! who can abstaine, when Rancor rife  
 Kindles Revenge, and threats his rusty knife.  
 Woe never wants where every cause is caught;  
 And rash Occasion makes unquiet life!”

---

<sup>p</sup> *Drad for his derring doe.*] i. e. dreaded for his daring atchievements. See vol. i. p. 117, &c. C.

<sup>q</sup> *To seeke Occasion, where so she bee.*] It was the custom of our old poets to make the terminations *tion* and *fion* either one syllable or two syllables, according to the requirements of the line. It is hardly necessary to mention this fact, and not at all necessary to prove it by examples. In the seventh line of the very next stanza “Occasion” is only a trisyllable, *fion* being there only one syllable. C.



“Then loe! wher bound she fits, whom thou hast  
fought,”

Said Guyon: “let that message to thy Lord be brought.”

45.

That when the varlett heard and saw, streight way  
He waxed wondrous wroth, and said; “Vile knight,  
That knights and knighthood doest with shame upbray,  
And shewst th’ ensample of thy childishe might,  
With filly weake old woman that did fight!<sup>r</sup>  
Great glory and gay spoile,<sup>s</sup> sure, hast thou gott,  
And stoutly prov’d thy puissance here in fight.  
That shall Pyrochles well requite, I wott,  
And with thy blood abolish so reprochfull blott.”

46.

With that one of his thrillant darts he threw,<sup>t</sup>  
Headed with yre and vengeable despight.  
The quivering Steele his ayimed end wel knew,  
And to his brest it selfe intended right:  
But he was wary, and, ere it empight  
In the meant marke, advaunst his shield atweene,  
On which it seizing no way enter might,  
But backe rebownding left the forckhead keene:  
Eftsoones he fled away, and might no where be seene.

<sup>r</sup> *that did fight.*] These words are altered in the edit. 1596 to “*thus to fight*;” but nothing is gained by the, apparently arbitrary, change, and we adhere to the ancient text. C.

<sup>s</sup> *Great glory and gay spoile.*] Church thought it necessary to state, and Todd to repeat, in a distinct note, that this sentence was “ironically spoken.” Defoe, it is said, was punished because some of his readers did not understand irony; but surely Spenser’s irony is obvious enough. C.

<sup>t</sup> *his thrillant darts he threw.*] To “thrill” and to *drill* are the same word, and mean, of course, to pierce through: “thrillant” is Spenser’s mode of forming the participle. A. S. *thirlian* became *drillan* in Dutch. Chaucer writes the word *thirl*, and *thirled*. C.





## CANTO V.

*Pyrochles does with Guyon fight,  
And Furors chayne untyes,  
Who him sore wounds : whiles Atin to  
Cymochles for ayd flyes.<sup>a</sup>*

### I.



HO ever doth to temperaunce apply  
His stedfast life, and all his actions frame,  
Trust me, shal find no greater enemy  
Then stubborne perturbation to the same;  
To which right wel the wise doe give  
that name,  
For it the goodly peace of staied mindes  
Does overthrow,<sup>b</sup> and troublous warre proclame :

<sup>a</sup> *Cymochles for ayd flyes.*] This is the reading of the first edition, [excepting that the edit. 1590 spells the name Gymochles]: the second edition reads,

“ And Furors chayne *unbinds*:  
“ *Of whome sore hurt, for his revenge*  
“ *Atin Cymochles finds.*” TODD.

<sup>b</sup> *Does overthrow.*] *Perturbatio*, à *perturbando*; for it does overthrow the peace of the mind. “To which right well *the wise* do give that name.” See Cicero, “*Tusc. Disp.*” iii. 11. “*Perturbatio, animi motus, vel rationis expers, vel rationem aspernans, vel rationi non obediens: isque motus aut boni aut mali opinione excitatur.*” Again, iv. 15. “*Perturbationes, quæ sunt turbidi animorum concitatieque motus, averfi à ratione, et inimicissimi menti vitæque tranquillæ.*” See also “*De Finib.*” iii. 11, where we find the four perturbations here characterized by Spenser; *ægritudo*, i. e. sorrow and discomfort, exemplified in the mother of the Babe with the bloody hand; *formido*, in Braggadocchio and Trompart; *libido*, in Cymochles and Acrafia; *ἡδονή*, i. e. *lætitia*, seu *gestientis animi elatio voluptuaria*, in Phædria. UPTON.



His owne woes author, who so bound it findes,  
As did Pyrochles, and it wilfully unbindes.

2.

After that varlets flight, it was not long  
Ere on the plaine fast pricking Guyon spide  
One in bright armes embatteiled full strong,  
That, as the funny beames do glaunce and glide  
Upon the trembling wave, so shined bright,  
And round about him threw forth sparkling fire,  
That seemd him to enflame on every side:  
His steed was bloody red, and fomed yre,  
When with the maistring spur he did him roughly fire.

3.

Approching nigh, he never staid to greete,  
Ne chaffar words,<sup>c</sup> prowde corage to provoke,  
But prickt so fiers, that underneath his feete  
The smouldring dust did rownd about him smoke,  
Both horse and man nigh able for to choke;  
And fayrly couching his steeleheaded speare,  
Him first saluted with a sturdy stroke:  
It booted nought Sir Guyon, comming neare,  
To thincke such hideous puissaunce on foot to beare;

4.

But lightly shunned it; and, passing by,  
With his bright blade did smite at him so fell,  
That the sharpe steele, arriving forcibly  
On his broad shield, bitt not, but glauncing fell  
On his horse necke before the quilted fell,  
And from the head the body fundred quight.  
So him dismounted low he did compell  
On foot with him to matchen equall fight:  
The truncked beast fast bleeding did him fowly dight.

<sup>c</sup> *Ne chaffar words.*] Nor *exchange* words: to "chaffar," or *chaffer*, is to buy and sell; and the earliest buying and selling was by the *exchange* of commodities. "Chaffar" has been derived from A. S. *ceapan*, or *cypan*, which is now *kaufen* in German. C.



5.

Sore bruized with the fall he flow uprofe,  
 And all enraged thus him loudly fhent;<sup>d</sup>  
 "Disleall Knight, whose coward corage chofe  
 To wreake it felfe on beaft all innocent,  
 And fhund the marke at which it fhould be ment;  
 Therby thine armes feem ftrong, but manhood frayl:  
 So haft thou oft with guile thine honor blent;<sup>e</sup>  
 But litle may fuch guile thee now avayl,  
 If wonted force and fortune doe me not much fayl."<sup>f</sup>

6.

With that he drew his flaming fword, and ftrooke  
 At him fo fiercely, that the upper marge  
 Of his fevenfolded fhield away it tooke,  
 And, glauncing on his helmet, made a large  
 And open gafh therein: were not his targe  
 That broke the violence of his intent,  
 The weary fowle from thence it would difcharge;  
 Natheleffe fo fore a buff to him it lent,  
 That made him reele, and to his brest his bever bent.

7.

Exceeding wroth was Guyon at that blow,  
 And much afhamd that ftroke of living arme  
 Should him difmay, and make him ftoup fo low,  
 Though otherwise it did him litle harme:  
 Tho, hurling high his yron braced arme,  
 He fmote fo manly on his fhoulder plate,  
 That all his left fide it did quite difarme;

<sup>d</sup> *him loudly fhent.*] To "fhend" is to *reprove*, to *rebuke*, to *difhonour*, and fometimes to *hurt* or *destroy*: A. S. *fcendan*. See vol. i. 97. C.

<sup>e</sup> *thine honor blent.*] *Confounded*, fpoiled with mixing. A. S. *blendan*, *miscere*, *confundere*. UPTON.

<sup>f</sup> *If wonted force and fortune doe me not much fayl.*] This is altered in all the editions, but the firft, into "*doe not me much fayl.*" UPTON. This feems faid at random, for the folio 1611 reads *doe not much me faile*. Any way the difference is trifling. C.



Yet there the steel stayd not,<sup>g</sup> but inly bate<sup>h</sup>  
Deepe in his flesh, and opened wide a red floodgate.

8.

Deadly difmayd with horror of that dint  
Pyrochles was, and grieved eke entyre;  
Yet nathemore did it his fury stint,  
But added flame unto his former fire,  
That welnigh molt his hart in raging yre:  
Ne thenceforth his approved skill, to ward,  
Or strike, or hurtle<sup>i</sup> rownd in warlike gyre,  
Remembred he, ne car'd for his saufgard,  
But rudely rag'd, and like a cruell tygre far'd.

9.

He hewd, and lasht, and foynd, and thondred blowes,  
And every way did seeke into his life;  
Ne plate, ne male, could ward so mighty throwes,  
But yeilded passage to his cruell knife.  
But Guyon, in the heat of all his strife,  
Was wary wise, and closely did awayt  
Avauntage, whilest his foe did rage most rife:  
Sometimes athwart, sometimes he strook him strayt,

---

<sup>g</sup> *Yet there the steel stayd not, &c.*] The sword of Michael thus cuts afunder the sword of Satan:—

“ ————— nor staid;

“ But with swift wheel reverse, deep entering, shar'd

“ All his right side ———.” “Par. L.” B. vi. 325.

Spenser uses the same expression, F. Q. iv. iv. 24. “The wicked Steele —staid not,” &c. TODD.

<sup>h</sup> *but inly bate.*] That is, *did bite*. As *ate* from *eat*; *taught* from *teach*; so *bate* from *bite*. UPTON. The nearest analogy seems to be *fate*, from *fit*. We do not recollect any other instance of the use of “bate” as the past tense of *bite*: Spenser and other poets commonly employ *bit*, for *did bite*. C. Warton has adduced various passages from Chaucer in which *biting* is applied to *swords*; and from which, although similar expressions might be cited from other ancient poets, Spenser most probably adopted it. TODD.

<sup>i</sup> *Or strike, or hurtle.*] This is the reading of the first edition. The second edition reads *hurle*; the rest, *hurlen*. TODD. See the note on *hurtle*, F. Q. i. iv. 16; vol. i. p. 231. C.



And falsed oft his blowes t' illude him with such bayt.

10.

Like as a Lyon, whose imperiall powre  
A prowde rebellious Unicorn defyes,  
T' avoide the rash assault and wrathful stowre  
Of his fiers foe, him to a tree applyes,  
And when him ronning in full course he spyes,  
He slips aside; the whiles that furious beast  
His precious horne, sought of his enemyes,<sup>k</sup>  
Strikes in the stocke, ne thence can be releast,  
But to the mighty victor yields a bounteous feast.

11.

With such faire sleight him Guyon often fayld,  
Till at the last all breathlesse, weary, faint,  
Him spying, with fresh onfett he assayld,  
And kindling new his corage seeming queint,<sup>l</sup>  
Strooke him so hugely, that through great constraint  
He made him stoup perforce unto his knee,  
And doe unwilling worship to the Saint,  
That on his shield depainted he did see:  
Such homage till that instant never learned hee.

12.

Whom Guyon seeing stoup, poursewed fast  
The present offer of faire victory,  
And soone his dreadfull blade about he cast,  
Wherewith he smote his haughty crest so hye,  
That streight on grownd made him full low to lye;  
Then on his brest his victor foote he thrust:  
With that he cryde; "Mercy! doe me not dye,  
Ne deeme thy force by fortunes doome unjust,

<sup>k</sup> *His precious borne, sought of his enemyes.*] It is *enemye* in the first impression only; the letter *s* having fallen out at the end of the line. The epithet "precious" is applied to the horn of the unicorn, on account of the medicinal virtues formerly imputed to it. C.

<sup>l</sup> *his corage seeming queint.*] For *quencht*, extinguished. CHURCH.



That hath (maugre her spight)<sup>m</sup> thus low me laid in dust."

13.

Eftsoones his cruel hand Sir Guyon stayd,  
 Tempring the passion with advizement flow,  
 And maistring might on enemy dismayd;  
 For th' equall die of warre he well did know:  
 Then to him said; "Live, and alleagaunce owe  
 To him that gives thee life and liberty;  
 And henceforth by this daies ensample trow,"  
 That hasty wroth, and heedlesse hazardry,  
 Doe breede repentaunce late, and lasting infamy."

14.

So up he let him rise; who, with grim looke  
 And count'naunce sterne, upstanding, gan to grind  
 His grated teeth for great disdeigne, and shooke  
 His sandy lockes, long hanging downe behind,  
 Knotted in blood and dust, for grief of mind  
 That he in ods of armes was conquered:  
 Yet in himselfe some comfort he did find,  
 That him so noble knight had maystered;  
 Whose bounty more then might, yet both, he wondered.

15.

Which Guyon marking said; "Be nought agriev'd,  
 Sir knight, that thus ye now subdewed arre:  
 Was never man, who most conquestes atchiev'd,  
 But sometimes had the worse, and lost by warre,  
 Yet shortly gaynd that losse exceeded farre.

---

<sup>m</sup> *maugre her spight.*] The interpretation of "maugre" here is not easy; and several commentators would understand it as "curse on her spight," taking "maugre" (which it never is elsewhere) as an imprecation. "Maugre" is from the Fr. *malgré*, and is ordinarily translated *in spite of*; and the sense of the whole passage seems to be—"Do not measure thy force by the unjust doom of fortune, that has, in spite of her spite, laid me thus low in dust." C.

<sup>n</sup> *by this daies ensample trow.*] To "trow" is to *believe*—to believe as a truth. A. S. *treowan*. C.



Losse is no shame, nor to bee lesse then foe ;  
 But to bee lesser then himselfe doth marre  
 Both loofers lott, and victours prayse alsoe :  
 Vaine others overthrowes who selfe<sup>o</sup> doth overthrow.

16.

“ Fly, O Pyrochles ! fly the dreadfull warre  
 That in thy selfe thy lesser partes do move ;  
 Outrageous anger, and woe working jarre,  
 Direfull impatience, and hartmurdring love :  
 Those, those thy foes, those warriours far remove,  
 Which thee to endlesse bale captived lead.  
 But sith in might thou didst my mercy prove,  
 Of courtesie to mee the cause aread  
 That thee against me drew with so impetuous dread.”

17.

“ Dreadlesse,” (saide he) “ that shall I soone declare.  
 It was complaind that thou hadst done great tort<sup>p</sup>  
 Unto an aged woman, poore and bare,  
 And thralld her in chaines with strong effort,  
 Voide of all succour and needfull comfort ;  
 That ill beseemes thee, such as I thee see,  
 To worke such shame. Therefore, I thee exhort  
 To chaunge thy will, and set occasion free,  
 And to her captive sonne yield his first libertee.”

18.

Thereat Sir Guyon smylde ; “ And is that all,”  
 (Said he) “ that thee so sore displeased hath ?  
 Great mercy, sure, for to enlarge a thrall,  
 Whose freedom shall thee turne to greatest scath.  
 Nath’lesse now quench thy whott emboyling wrath :  
 Loe ! there they bee ; to thee I yield them free.”

<sup>o</sup> *Vaine others overthrowes who selfe.*] This is the reading of Spenser’s own editions : the rest corruptly read “ *whose selfe.*” TODD.

<sup>p</sup> *thou hadst done great tort.*] i. e. great *wrong*, or *injury*; Fr. *tort*. The word is now only used legally. C.



Thereat he, wondrous glad, out of the path  
 Did lightly leape, where he them bound did see,  
 And gan to breake the bands of their captivitee.

19.

Soone as Occasion felt her selfe untyde,  
 Before her sonne could well affoyled bee,<sup>a</sup>  
 She to her use returnd, and streight defyde  
 Both Guyon and Pyrochles; th' one (said shee)<sup>r</sup>  
 Bycause he wonne; the other, because hee  
 Was wonne. So matter did she make of nought,  
 To stirre up strife, and garre them disagree:<sup>s</sup>  
 But, soone as Furor was enlargd, she fought  
 To kindle his quencht fyre, and thousand causes wrought.

20.

It was not long ere she inflam'd him so,  
 That he would algates with Pyrochles fight,  
 And his redeemer chalengd for his foe,  
 Because he had not well mainteind his right,  
 But yielded had to that same straunger knight.  
 Now gan Pyrochles wex as wood as hee,  
 And him affronted<sup>t</sup> with impatient might:  
 So both together fiers engrasped bee,  
 Whyles Guyon standing by their uncouth strife does see.

21.

Him all that while Occasion did provoke  
 Against Pyrochles, and new matter fram'd  
 Upon the old, him stirring to bee wroke  
 Of his late wronges, in which she oft him blam'd

<sup>a</sup> *could well affoyled bee.*] Released, or freed, [absolved.] TODD.

<sup>r</sup> *said shee.*] The two first editions read *hee*. The folio of 1609 rightly altered it to *shee*, which all other editions have admitted. TODD.

<sup>s</sup> *and garre them disagree.*] Cause. See the note on *garre*, "Shep. Cal." April, ver. 1, [vol. i. p. 43.] The second edition reads *do* instead of *garre*, which many editions have followed. TODD.

<sup>t</sup> *And him affronted.*] Opposed. See the note on *affronted*, F. Q. i. viii. 13, [vol. i. p. 306.] TODD.



For suffering such abuse as knighthood sham'd,  
 And him disabled<sup>u</sup> quyte. But he was wise,  
 Ne would with vaine occasions<sup>x</sup> be inflam'd;  
 Yet others she more urgent did devise;  
 Yet nothing could him to impatience entise.

22.

Their fell contention still increased more,  
 And more thereby increased Furors might,  
 That he his foe has hurt and wounded fore,  
 And him in blood and durt<sup>y</sup> deformed quight.  
 His mother eke, more to augment his spight,<sup>z</sup>  
 Now brought to him a flaming fyer brond,  
 Which she in Stygian lake, ay burning bright,  
 Had kindled: that she gave into his hond,  
 That armd with fire more hardly he mote him withstond.

23.

Tho gan that villein<sup>a</sup> wex so fiers and strong,  
 That nothing might sustaine his furious forse:  
 He cast him downe to ground, and all along  
 Drew him through durt and myre without remorse,  
 And fowly battered his comely corse,  
 That Guyon much disdeignd so loathly fight.  
 At last he was compeld to cry perforce,  
 "Help, O Sir Guyon! helpe, most noble knight,  
 To ridd a wretched man from handes of hellish wight!"

<sup>u</sup> *And him disabled.*] *Lessened.* Lat. *extenuare*. See JUNIUS. CHURCH.

<sup>x</sup> *Ne would with vaine occasions.*] So the first and second editions read. The folios read *occasion*. CHURCH.

<sup>y</sup> *And him in blood and durt.*] We may suspect that Spenser here wrote "blood and *dust*," since "durt" after "hurt," in the preceding line, reads cacophonously, and the printer was very likely to make a mistake between "durt" and *dust*." Yet see "durt" just below. C.

<sup>z</sup> *to augment his spight.*] This is the reading of Spenser's own editions. The rest corruptly read "his *spright*." TODD.

<sup>a</sup> *Tho gan that villein.*] So Spenser's own editions read. The rest read, "Tho gan *the* villein." TODD.



24.

The knight was greatly moved at his playnt,  
 And gan him dight<sup>b</sup> to succour his distresse,  
 Till that the Palmer, by his grave restraynt,  
 Him stayd from yielding pitifull redresse,  
 And said; "Deare sonne, thy causelesse ruth represse,  
 Ne let thy stout hart melt in pittie vayne:  
 He that his sorrow fought through wilfulnesse,  
 And his foe fettred would release agayne,  
 Deserves to taste his follies fruit, repented payne."

25.

Guyon obeyd: So him away he drew  
 From needlesse trouble of renewing fight  
 Already fought, his voyage to pourfew.  
 But rash Pyrochles varlett, Atin hight,  
 When late he saw his Lord in heavie plight  
 Under Sir Guyons puissaunt stroke to fall,  
 Him deeming dead, as then he seemd in fight,  
 Fledd fast away to tell his funerall  
 Unto his brother, whom Cymochles men did call.

26.

He was a man of rare redoubted might,  
 Famous throughout the world for warlike prayse,  
 And glorious spoiles, purchast in perilous fight:  
 Full many doughtie knightes he in his dayes  
 Had doen to death, subdewde in equall frayes;  
 Whose carkases, for terrour of his name,  
 Of fowles and beastes he made the piteous prayes,  
 And hong their conquerd armes,<sup>c</sup> for more defame,  
 On gallow trees, in honour of his dearest Dame.

<sup>b</sup> *And gan him dight.*] Here "dight" is to be taken in its usual sense of *prepare*: Guyon began to prepare to succour Pyrochles. C.

<sup>c</sup> *And hong their conquerd armes, &c.*] It was the custom, in the ages of romance, to suspend the shields of the conquered on trees. Thus, in "Palmerin of England," P. i. Ch. 62, Eng. Transl. "When he had beheld the castle he desired so long to see,—he came to the *tree which*



27.

His dearest Dame is that Enchaunteresse,  
 The vyle Acrafia, that with vaine delightes,  
 And ydle pleasures in her Bowre of Blisse,  
 Does charme her lovers, and the feeble sprighthes  
 Can call out of the bodies of fraile wightes;  
 Whom then she does transforme to monstrous hewes,  
 And horribly misshapes with ugly fightes,  
 Captiv'd eternally in yron mewes  
 And darkfom dens, where Titan his face never shewes.

28.

There Atin fownd Cymochles sojourning,  
 To serve his Lemans love:<sup>d</sup> for he by kynd  
 Was given all to lust and loose living,  
 When ever his fiers handes he free mote fynd:  
 And now he has pourd out his ydle mynd  
 In daintie delices,<sup>e</sup> and lavish joyes,  
 Having his warlike weapons cast behynd,  
 And flowes in pleasures and vaine pleasing toyes,  
 Mingled emongst loose Ladies and lascivious boyes.

29.

And over him art, stryving to compayre

---

*he saw was laden with the sheelds of the vanquished Knights, whose names being subscribed underneath every one, made him to have knowledge of divers that had beene there foyled."* And thus, in Hawes's "Hist. of Graunde Amoure," edit. 1554, Sign. Y. i.

"Besides this gyaunt, upon euery tree

"I did se hang many a goodly shelde

"Of noble Knightes that were of hye degree,

"Which he had flayne," &c. Todd.

<sup>d</sup> *To serve his Lemans love.*] "Leman," or *lemman*, is of doubtful etymology; but it means a *sweetheart*, and was applied to men as well as to women. Some, like Tyrwhitt, derive it from the A. S. *leof*, dear, and *man*; while others think that it originated in the Fr. *l'aimant*. The meaning of the word, as *sweetheart*, *mistress*, or *lover*, has never been doubted. Shakespeare uses it repeatedly. C.

<sup>e</sup> *In daintie delices.*] Chaucer seems responsible for the importation of this French word into our language: the translation of it is *delights*, and Spenser uses it again in F. Q. B. iv. C. x. St. 6. C.



With nature, did an Arber greene dispred,  
 Framed of wanton Yvie, floueing fayre,  
 Through which the fragrant Eglantine did spred  
 His prickling<sup>f</sup> armes, entrayld with roses red,  
 Which daintie odours round about them threw :  
 And all within with flowres was garnished,  
 That, when myld Zephyrus emongst them blew,  
 Did breath out bounteous smels, and painted colors shew.

30.

And fast beside there trickled softly downe  
 A gentle streame, whose murmuring wave did play  
 Emongst the pumy stones, and made a sowne,  
 To lull him soft asleepe that by it lay :  
 The wearie Traveiler, wandring that way,  
 Therein did often quench his thirsty heat,  
 And then by it his wearie limbes display,  
 Whiles creeping slomber made him to forget  
 His former payne, and wypt away his toilsom sweat.

31.

And on the other fyde a pleasaunt grove  
 Was shott up high, full of the stately tree  
 That dedicated is t' Olympick Jove,  
 And to his sonne Alcides, whenas hee  
 In Nemus<sup>g</sup> gayned goodly victoree :  
 Therein the mery birdes of every sorte  
 Chaunted alowd their chearefull harmonie,

<sup>f</sup> *His prickling.*] So the first edition reads: all the rest, including the folios, read *pricking*. TODD.

<sup>g</sup> *In Nemus.*] So Spenser corrected it in the errata subjoined to the first edition. It had been printed *Netmus*, which Mr. Church has admitted into the text. The second edition reads, "*Gaynd in Nemea*," &c. The folios read, "*Gain'd in Nemæa*," &c. TODD. The commentators have disputed about the tree dedicated to Jupiter, and the tree dedicated to Hercules: the first was the oak, and the second the poplar; and if "tree," in the second line of the stanza, had been *trees*, and "is" in the next line *are*, it would hardly have been contended that two very different trees were not intended by the poet. C.



And made emongst them felves a sweete confort,  
That quickned the dull spright with muscally comfort.

32.

There he him found all carelessly displaid,  
In secrete shadow from the sunny ray,  
On a sweet bed of lillies softly laid,  
Amidst a flock of Damzelles fresh and gay,  
That rownd about him dissolute did play  
Their wanton follies and light meriment[s];<sup>h</sup>  
Every of which did loosely disaray  
Her upper partes of meet habiliments,  
And shewd them naked, deckt with many ornaments.

33.

And every of them strove with most delights  
Him to aggrate, and greatest pleasures shew:  
Some framd faire lookes, glancing like evening lights;  
Others sweet wordes, dropping like honny dew;  
Some bathed kisses, and did soft embrew  
The sugred licour<sup>i</sup> through his melting lips:  
One boasts her beautie, and does yield to vew  
Her dainty limbes above her tender hips;  
Another her out boasts, and all for tryall strips.

34.

He, like an Adder lurking in the weedes,  
His wandring thought in deepe desire does sleepe,  
And his frayle eye with spoyle of beauty feedes:  
Sometimes he falsely faines himselfe to sleepe,

---

<sup>h</sup> *and light meriment[s].*] We have inserted the letter *s* between brackets because it is not found in any old copy we have examined: nevertheless, it is clear to us that it had merely dropped out in the press; for "follies," which precedes it, is in the plural, as well as the words "habiliments" and "ornaments," which rhyme with *merriments*. We do not find that any editor has remarked upon the obvious deficiency. C.

<sup>i</sup> *The sugred licour.*] "Sugred," to express excessive sweetness, was a frequent epithet with the poets of this age, and with those of the ages before it. It answered to the *mellitus* of the Romans. T. WARTON.



Whiles through their lids his wanton eies do peepe  
 To steale a snatch of amorous conceipt,  
 Whereby close fire into his hart does creepe :  
 So he them deceives,<sup>k</sup> deceivd in his deceit,  
 Made dronke with drugs of deare voluptuous receipt.

35.

Atin, arriving there, when him he spyde  
 Thus in still waves of deepe delight to wade,  
 Fiercely approching to him lowdly cryde,  
 "Cymochles; oh! no, but Cymochles shade,  
 In which that manly person late did fade.  
 What is become of great Acrates sonne?  
 Or where hath he hong up his mortall blade,  
 That hath so many haughty conquests wonne?  
 Is all his force forlorne, and all his glory donne?"

36.

Then, pricking him with his sharp-pointed dart,  
 He saide; "Up, up! thou womanish weake knight,  
 That here in Ladies lap entombed art,  
 Unmindfull of thy praise and prowest might,  
 And weetlesse eke of lately wrought despight,  
 Whiles sad Pyrochles lies on sencelesse ground,  
 And groneth out his utmost grudging spright  
 Through many a stroke and many a streaming wound,  
 Calling thy help in vaine that here in joyes art dround."

37.

Suddeinly out of his delightfull dreame  
 The man awoke, and would have questiond more;  
 But he would not endure<sup>l</sup> that wofull theame

<sup>k</sup> *So he them deceives.*] Todd and others have disputed on the text here: we give that of the 4to. 1590; but it is unquestionable that "he" was afterwards omitted. Only let the reader deliver "So he" in the time of one syllable, as Spenser no doubt wished, and there is an end of all difficulty. C.

<sup>l</sup> *But he would not endure.*] i. e. Atin would not consent to delay by reciting the particulars. These confusions of persons are not at all unusual in Spenser, as the reader must already have remarked. C.



For to dilate at large, but urged fore,  
With percing wordes and pittifull implore,  
Him hasty to arise. As one affright  
With hellish feends, or Furies mad uprore,  
He then uprofe, inflamd with fell despight,  
And called for his armes, for he would algates fight :

38.

They bene ybrought ; he quickly does him dight,  
And lightly mounted passeth on his way ;  
Ne Ladies loves, ne sweete entreaties, might  
Appease his heat, or hastie passage stay ;  
For he has vowd to beene avengd that day  
(That day it selfe him seemed all too long)  
On him, that did Pyrochles deare dismay :  
So proudly pricketh on his courser strong,  
And Atin ay him pricks with spurs of shame and wrong.







## CANTO VI.

*Guyon is of immodest Merth  
led into loose desyre;  
Fights with Cymochles, whiles his bro-  
ther burns in furious fyre.*

I.



HARDER lesson to learne Continnence  
In joyous pleasure then in grievous paine;  
For sweetnesse doth allure the weaker  
fence  
So strongly, that uneathes it can refraine  
From that which feeble nature covets faine:  
But grieve and wrath, that be her enemies  
And foes of life, she better can abstaine:<sup>a</sup>  
Yet vertue vauntes in both her victories,  
And Guyon in them all shewes goodly maysteries.

2.

Whom bold Cymochles traveiling to finde,  
With cruell purpose bent to wreake on him  
The wrath which Atin kindled in his mind,  
Came to a river, by whose utmost brim  
Wayting to passe, he saw whereas did swim

---

<sup>a</sup> *she better can abstaine.*] “Abstaine” is the word in the edit. 1590, and there is no correction of it among the errata. “Abstaine,” as Upton observed, means to *keep from*, which entirely accords with the sense of the passage. We therefore adhere to it in preference to *restraine*, which was afterwards, and needlessly, substituted by Todd and others. C.



Along the shore, as swift as glaunce of eye,  
 A litle Gondelay, bedecked trim  
 With boughes and arbours woven cunningly,  
 That like a litle forrest seemed outwardly.

3.

And therein fate a Lady fresh and fayre,  
 Making sweete solace to herselfe alone:  
 Sometimes she song as lowd as larke in ayre,  
 Sometimes she laught, as merry as Pope Jone;<sup>b</sup>  
 Yet was there not with her else any one,  
 That to her might move<sup>c</sup> cause of meriment:  
 Matter of merth enough, though there were none,  
 She could devise; and thousand waies invent  
 To feede her foolish humour and vaine jolliment.

4.

Which when far off Cymochles heard and saw,  
 He lowdly cald to such as were aboard  
 The little barke unto the shore to draw,  
 And him to ferry over that deepe ford.  
 The merry mariner unto his word  
 Soone hearkned, and her painted bote streightway  
 Turnd to the shore, where that fame warlike Lord  
 She in receiv'd; but Atin by no way  
 She would admit, albe the knight her much did pray.

5.

Eftsoones her shallow ship away did slide,  
 More swift then swallow sheres the liquid skye,

---

<sup>b</sup> *as merry as Pope Jone.*] This saying was proverbial, as Upton pointed out, being found in Edwards's play of "Damon and Pythias," and in Fox's "Acts and Monuments." Our text is that of the 4to. 1590; but afterwards, for what reason is nowhere stated, it was altered to "that nigh her breath was gone." Opposite these words Drayton placed a mark in the margin of his folio 1611, perhaps to indicate that the poet's original language had been changed, but he did not make any attempt to restore that language. C.

<sup>c</sup> *That to her might move.*] So the first edition reads: all the rest read, "That might to her," &c. TODD.



Withouten oare or Pilot it to guide,  
 Or winged canvas with the wind to fly :  
 Onely she turnd a pin, and by and by  
 It cut away upon the yielding wave,  
 Ne cared she her course for to apply ;  
 For it was taught the way which she would have,  
 And both from rocks and flats it selfe could wisely save.

## 6.

And all the way the wanton Damsell found  
 New merth her passenger to entertaine ;  
 For she in pleasaunt purpose<sup>d</sup> did abound,  
 And greatly joyed merry tales to faine,  
 Of which a store-house did with her remaine :  
 Yet seemed, nothing well they her became ;  
 For all her wordes she drownd with laughter vaine,  
 And wanted grace<sup>e</sup> in utt'ring of the same,  
 That turned all her pleasaunce to a scoffing game.

## 7.

And other whiles vaine toyes she would devize,  
 As her fantasticke wit did most delight :  
 Sometimes her head she fondly would aguize<sup>f</sup>  
 With gaudy girlonds, or fresh flowrets dight  
 About her necke, or rings of rushes plight :<sup>g</sup>

<sup>d</sup> *For she in pleasaunt purpose.*] Spenser seems to use "purpose" in the same way that Shakespeare ("Much Ado about Nothing," A. iii. Sc. 1,) employs *propose*, viz. *conversation*. It is to be observed that in the 4to. edit. of the comedy, in 1600, the word is "propose," while in the folio of 1623 it is altered to *purpose*, as in Spenser. See also "fitting purpose," p. 68. C.

<sup>e</sup> *And wanted grace.*] The second and subsequent folios read, "And wanting grace." TODD. Another proof of Todd's careless collation, for the folio 1611 has "wanted grace," like the 4to. 1590. C.

<sup>f</sup> *she fondly would aguize.*] i. e. dress after a certain way, guise, or fashion: Spenser was fond of the word, and we shall find it occurring elsewhere. *Guise* is, in fact, the same word as A. S. *wise*, way, or mode. C.

<sup>g</sup> *About her necke, or rings of rushes plight.*] *Folded*, [perhaps *plaited*.] So Chaucer, "Tr. and Cr." ii. 1204, of a letter :

"Yeve me the labour it to sowe and *plite* :"  
 that is, to stitch and *fold* it. T. WARTON.



Sometimes, to do him laugh, she would assay  
 To laugh at shaking off the leaves light,  
 Or to behold the water worke and play  
 About her little frigot, therein making way.

8.

Her light behaviour and loose dalliaunce  
 Gave wondrous great contentment to the knight,  
 That of his way he had no sovenaunce,<sup>h</sup>  
 Nor care of vow'd revenge and cruell fight,  
 But to weake wench did yield his martiall might :  
 So easie was to quench his flamed minde  
 With one sweete drop of sensuall delight.  
 So easie is t'appease the stormy winde  
 Of malice in the calme of pleasaunt womankind.

9.

Diverse discourses in their way they spent ;  
 Mongst which Cymochles of her questioned  
 Both what she was, and what that usage ment,  
 Which in her cott<sup>i</sup> she daily practized ?  
 " Vaine man," (saide she) " that wouldest be reckoned  
 A straunger in thy home, and ignoraunt  
 Of Phædria, (for so my name is red)  
 Of Phædria, thine owne fellow fervaunt ;  
 For thou to serve Acrasia thy selfe doest vaunt.

10.

" In this wide Inland sea, that hight by name  
 The Idle lake, my wandring ship I row,  
 That knowes her port, and thether sayles by ayme,  
 Ne care, ne feare I how the wind do blow,

<sup>h</sup> *That of his way he had no sovenaunce.*] Remembrance, Fr. CHURCH.

<sup>i</sup> *Which in her cott.*] "Cott" is a *little boat*. "They call, in Ireland, *cots*, things like boats, but very unshapely, being nothing but square pieces of timber made hollow." See Gerard Boate's "Nat. Hist. of Ireland," [1652,] p. 64. CHURCH. Perhaps Spenser derived the word from Ireland; or perhaps we are to take "cott" (not *cote* as in Richardson) merely for a dwelling-place, a place of abode. C.



Or whether swift I wend, or whether flow :  
 Both flow and swift alike do serve my tourne ;  
 Ne swelling Neptune ne lowd thundring Jove  
 Can chaunge my cheare, or make me ever mourne :  
 My litle boat can safely passe this perilous bourne."<sup>k</sup>

## 11.

Whiles thus she talked, and whiles thus she toyd,  
 They were far past the passage which he spake,  
 And come unto an Island waste and voyd,  
 That floted in the midst of that great lake ;  
 There her small Gondelay her port did make,  
 And that gay payre, issewing on the shore,  
 Disburdned her. Their way they forward take  
 Into the land that lay them faire before,  
 Whose pleasaunce she him shewd, and plentifull great  
 store.

## 12.

It was a chosen plott of fertile land,  
 Emongst wide waves sett, like a litle nest,  
 As if it had by Natures cunning hand  
 Bene choycely picked out from all the rest,  
 And laid forth for ensample of the best :  
 No daintie flowre or herbe that growes on grownd,

---

<sup>k</sup> *My litle boat can safely passe this perilous bourne.*] *Bourn* is simply nothing more than a *boundary*. Dover-cliff is called, in "K. Lear," "this chalky *bourne*," that is, this chalky *boundary* of England towards France, A. iv. Sc. 6. See also Furetiere in *Borne*, and Du Cange in *Borna*. In Saxon, *burn*, or *burna*, is a *stream of water*, as is *bourne* at present in some counties ; and, as rivers were the most distinguishable aboriginal separations or divisions of property, might not the Saxon word give rise to the French *borne*? In the present passage, *bourne* is a *river*, or rather a *strait* ; but seemingly also in the sense of *division* or *separation* ; for afterwards this *bourne* is styled a *shard*, St. 38. Here, indeed, is a metathesis ; and the active participle *sharing* is confounded with the passive *shared*. This "perilous *bourne*" was the *boundary* or *division* which parted the main land from Phædria's Isle of Bliss, to which it served as a defence. In the mean time, *shard* may signify the *gap* made by the ford or frith between the two lands. But such a sense is unwarrantably catachrestical and licentious. T. WARTON.



No arborett with painted blossomes drest  
 And smelling sweete, but there it might be fownd  
 To bud out faire, and throwe<sup>1</sup> her sweete smels al arownd.

13.

No tree whose braunches did not bravely spring;  
 No braunch whereon a fine bird did not fitt;  
 No bird but did her shrill notes sweetely sing;  
 No song but did containe a lovely ditt.  
 Trees, braunches, birds, and songs, were framed fitt  
 For to allure fraile mind to carelesse ease:  
 Carelesse the man soone woxe, and his weake witt  
 Was overcome of thing that did him please;  
 So pleased did his wrathfull purpose faire appease.

14.

Thus when shee had his eyes and senses fed  
 With false delights, and fild with pleasures vayn,  
 Into a shady dale she soft him led,  
 And layd him downe upon a grassy playn;  
 And her sweete selfe without dread or disdayn  
 She sett beside, laying his head disarmd  
 In her loose lap, it softly to sustayn,  
 Where soone he flumbred fearing not be harmd:  
 The whils with a love lay<sup>m</sup> she thus him sweetly charmd.

15.

“Behold, O man! that toilesome paines doest take,  
 The flowrs, the fields, and all that pleasaunt growes,  
 How they them selves doe thine ensample make,  
 Whiles nothing envious nature them forth throwes  
 Out of her fruitfull lap; how no man knowes,  
 They spring, they bud, they blossom fresh and faire,

<sup>1</sup> *To bud out faire, and throwe.*] In the second and later impressions the word “throwe” is, perhaps accidentally, postponed in this line till after the word “smels:” we prefer the original construction. C.

<sup>m</sup> *The whils with a love lay.*] The second edition, probably by an error of the press, reads “a loud lay;” but only the folios have rejected the genuine reading, “a love lay.” TODD.



And decke the world with their rich pompous showes ;  
Yet no man for them taketh paines or care,  
Yet no man to them can his carefull paines compare.

16.

“ The lilly, Lady of the flowring field,”  
The flowre-deluce, her lovely Paramoure,  
Bid thee to them thy fruitlesse labors yield,  
And foone leave off this toylsome weary stoure :  
Loe, loe ! how brave she decks her bounteous boure,  
With filkin curtens and gold coverletts,  
Therein to shrowd her sumptuous Belamoure ;  
Yet nether spinnes nor cards, ne cares nor fretts,  
But to her mother Nature all her care she letts.

17.

“ Why then doest thou, O man ! that of them all  
Art Lord, and eke of nature Soveraine,  
Wilfully make thyselfe a wretched thrall,  
And waste thy joyous howres in needelesse paine,  
Seeking for daunger and adventures vaine ?  
What bootes it al to have, and nothing use ?  
Who shall him rew that swimming in the maine  
Will die for thrift, and water doth refuse ?  
Refuse such fruitlesse toile, and present pleasures chuse.”

18.

By this she had him lulled fast asleepe,  
That of no worldly thing he care did take :  
Then she with liquors strong his eies did steepe,  
That nothing should him hastily awake.

---

<sup>n</sup> *The lilly, Lady of the flowring field.*] So Shakespeare, in “K. Henry VIII.” [A. iii. Sc. 1,]

“ ————— like the lily,

“ That once was mistress of the field and flourished,

“ I’ll hang my head, and perish.”

In Spenser there is a manifest allusion to those sacred words, “ Consider the lilies of the field how they grow ; they toil not, neither do they spin.” The poet ought not to have placed them where he has. JORTIN.



Such as he saw she gan him lay before,  
 And all, though pleasaunt, yet she made much more:  
 The fields did laugh, the flowres did freshly spring,  
 The trees did bud, and early blossomes bore;  
 And all the quire of birds did sweetly sing,  
 And told that gardins pleasures in their caroling.

25.

And she, more sweete then any bird on bough,  
 Would oftentimes emongst them beare a part,  
 And strive to passe (as she could well enough)  
 Their native musicke by her skilful art:  
 So did she all that might his constant hart  
 Withdraw from thought of warlike enterprize,  
 And drowne in dissolute delights apart,  
 Where noise of armes, or vew of martiall guize,  
 Might not revive desire of knightly exercize.

26.

But he was wise, and wary of her will,  
 And ever held his hand upon his hart;  
 Yet would not seeme so rude, and thewed ill,<sup>s</sup>  
 As to despise so curteous seeming part  
 That gentle Lady did to him impart:  
 But, fairly tempring, fond desire subdewd,  
 And ever her desired to depart.  
 She list not heare, but her disports pourfewd,  
 And ever bad him stay till time the tide renewd.

27.

And now by this Cymochles howre was spent,  
 That he awoke out of his ydle dreme;  
 And, shaking off his drowsy dreriment,  
 Gan him avize, howe ill did him beseme  
 In slouthfull sleepe his molten hart to steme,  
 And quench the brond of his conceived yre:

---

<sup>s</sup> and thewed ill.] *Ill-bred, ill-mannered; malè moratus.* CHURCH.



Tho up he started, stird with shame extreme,  
Ne staied for his Damsell to inquire,  
But marched to the Strond their passage to require.<sup>t</sup>

28.

And in the way he with Sir Guyon mett,  
Accompanyde with Phædria the faire :  
Eftsoones he gan to rage, and inly frett,  
Crying ; " Let be that Lady debonaire,  
Thou recreaunt knight, and soone thyselfe prepaire  
To batteile, if thou meane her love to gayn.  
Loe, loe ! already how the fowles in aire  
Doe flocke, awaiting shortly to obtayn  
Thy carcas for their pray, the guerdon of thy payn."

29.

And therewithall he fierfly at him flew,  
And with importune outrage<sup>u</sup> him assayld ;  
Who, soone prepar'd to field, his sword forth drew,  
And him with equall valed counterwayld :<sup>x</sup>

---

<sup>t</sup> *their passage to require.*] The meaning, of course, is *there*, or at that place, "passage to require;" and it was certainly not very usual of old to spell *there* "their," but it was sometimes done, as will be seen in several instances hereafter. C.

<sup>u</sup> *And with importune outrage.*] This is the reading of the first edition. The second edition, by a manifest error of the press, reads "with *importance* outrage," which the first folio, by a supposed emendation, converted into "*important* outrage," and to which the subsequent folios adhere. *Importune*, as Mr. Upton observes, is *cruel, savage, &c.* as *importunus* in Latin; and thus Spenser has "*importune* fate." TODD.

<sup>x</sup> *And him with equall valed counterwayld.*] In the time of Spenser "value" and *valour* were used almost indifferently. T. Lodge, in his translation of Seneca, fol. 1614, p. 7, has this expression: "The Emperour or Chiefetaine of an army geveth a chaine of gold to some one souldier of his, that approved his *valed* in some difficult enterprife." Just afterwards he uses "value" with the modern spelling and in the modern sense: "These ensignes of magistracie, the axe, and rods, what *value* are they of?" In E. Tylney's "*Flower of Friendship*," 8vo. 1568, we meet with "valour" used for *value*: "For that which is most excellent is to be preferred before things of lower *valour*." It would be easy to multiply proofs either way. C.



Such as he saw she gan him lay before,  
 And all, though pleasaunt, yet she made much more:  
 The fields did laugh, the flowres did freshly spring,  
 The trees did bud, and early blossomes bore;  
 And all the quire of birds did sweetly sing,  
 And told that gardins pleasures in their caroling.

25.

And she, more sweete then any bird on bough,  
 Would oftentimes emongst them beare a part,  
 And strive to passe (as she could well enough)  
 Their native musicke by her skilful art:  
 So did she all that might his constant hart  
 Withdraw from thought of warlike enterprize,  
 And drowne in dissolute delights apart,  
 Where noise of armes, or vew of martiall guize,  
 Might not revive desire of knightly exercize.

26.

But he was wise, and wary of her will,  
 And ever held his hand upon his hart;  
 Yet would not seeme so rude, and thewed ill,<sup>s</sup>  
 As to despise so curteous seeming part  
 That gentle Lady did to him impart:  
 But, fairly tempring, fond desire subdewd,  
 And ever her desired to depart.  
 She list not heare, but her disports pourfewd,  
 And ever bad him stay till time the tide renewd.

27.

And now by this Cymochles howre was spent,  
 That he awoke out of his ydle dreme;  
 And, shaking off his drowsy dreriment,  
 Gan him avize, howe ill did him befeme  
 In slouthfull sleepe his molten hart to steme,  
 And quench the brond of his conceived yre:

---

<sup>s</sup> and thewed ill.] *Ill-bred, ill-mannered; malè moratus.* CHURCH.



Tho up he started, fird with shame extreme,  
 Ne staied for his Damsell to inquire,  
 But marched to the Strond their passage to require.<sup>t</sup>

28.

And in the way he with Sir Guyon mett,  
 Accompanyde with Phædria the faire :  
 Eftsoones he gan to rage, and inly frett,  
 Crying ; " Let be that Lady debonaire,  
 Thou recreaunt knight, and soone thyselfe prepaire  
 To batteile, if thou meane her love to gayn.  
 Loe, loe ! already how the fowles in aire  
 Doe flocke, awaiting shortly to obtayn  
 Thy carcas for their pray, the guerdon of thy payn."

29.

And therewithall he fierfly at him flew,  
 And with importune outrage<sup>u</sup> him assayld ;  
 Who, soone preparad to field, his sword forth drew,  
 And him with equall valed counterwayld :<sup>x</sup>

<sup>t</sup> *their passage to require.*] The meaning, of course, is *there*, or at that place, "passage to require;" and it was certainly not very usual of old to spell *there* "their," but it was sometimes done, as will be seen in several instances hereafter. C.

<sup>u</sup> *And with importune outrage.*] This is the reading of the first edition. The second edition, by a manifest error of the press, reads "with importance outrage," which the first folio, by a supposed emendation, converted into "important outrage," and to which the subsequent folios adhere. *Importune*, as Mr. Upton observes, is *cruel, savage, &c.* as *importunus* in Latin; and thus Spenser has "*importune fate.*" Todd.

<sup>x</sup> *And him with equall valed counterwayld.*] In the time of Spenser "value" and *valour* were used almost indifferently. T. Lodge, in his translation of Seneca, fol. 1614, p. 7, has this expression: "The Emperour or Chiefetaine of an army geveth a chaine of gold to some one souldier of his, that approved his *valed* in some difficult enterprise." Just afterwards he uses "value" with the modern spelling and in the modern sense: "These ensignes of magistracie, the axe, and rods, what *value* are they of?" In E. Tylney's "*Flower of Friendship*," 8vo. 1568, we meet with "valour" used for *value*: "For that which is most excellent is to be preferred before things of lower *valour.*" It would be easy to multiply proofs either way. C.



Their mightie strokes their haberjeons dismayld,<sup>y</sup>  
 And naked made each others manly spalles;<sup>z</sup>  
 The mortall steele despiteously entayld<sup>a</sup>  
 Deepe in their flesh, quite through the yron walles,  
 That a large purple streame adown their giambeux falles.<sup>b</sup>

30.

Cymochles, that had never mett before  
 So puissant foe, with envious despight  
 His prowde presumed force increased more,  
 Disdeigning to bee held so long in fight.  
 Sir Guyon, grudging not so much his might  
 As those unknighly raylinges which he spoke,  
 With wrathfull fire his corage kindled bright,  
 Thereof devising shortly to be wroke,  
 And doubling all his powres redoubled every stroke.

31.

Both of them high attonce their hands enhaunst,  
 And both attonce their huge blowes down did sway.  
 Cymochles sword on Guyons shield yglaunst,

<sup>y</sup> *their haberjeons dismayld.*] Armour covering the neck and breast. See Cotgrave's Fr. Dict. V. *Haubergeon*. It is the diminutive of *haubert*, a coat of mail. TODD.

<sup>z</sup> *each others manly spalles.*] Shoulders; Fr. *espaules*. G. Douglas has *spaldis* for *shoulders* or *arms*. UPTON.

<sup>a</sup> *despiteously entayld.*] "Entayled" is usually employed for *carved*, or *engraved*. See Cotgrave, V. *Intailed*. So, in "Pierce the Ploughmans Crede," the "chapitre house" is thus described, Sign. B. i. edit. 1553:—

"Coruen, and couered, and queyntelyche *entayled*

"With femliche felure yseet on losfe,

"As a parlement hous ypeynted about."

Chaucer also uses *entailed* for *carved*. Spenser's rhyme introduced it here for *cut*. TODD.

<sup>b</sup> *That a large purple streame adown their giambeux falles.*] Spenser probably drew "giambeux," that is, *boots*, from this passage in the "Rime of Sir Topas," ver. 3380:—

"His *jambeux* were of cure buly;"

which line is more French than English:—

"Ses *jambeux* estoient de cuir bouilli;"

that is, his *boots* were made of tanned [boiled] leather. T. WARTON.



And thereof nigh one quarter sheard away ;  
 But Guyons angry blade so fiers did play  
 On th' others helmet, which as Titan shone,  
 That quite it clove his plumed crest in tway,  
 And bared all his head unto the bone ;  
 Where-with astonisht, still he stood as sencelesse stone.

32.

Still as he stood, fayre Phædria, that beheld  
 That deadly daunger, soone atweene them ran ;  
 And at their feet her selfe most humbly feld,  
 Crying with pitteous voyce, and count'nance wan,  
 " Ah, well away ! most noble Lords, how can  
 Your cruell eyes endure so pitteous fight,  
 To shed your lives on ground ? Wo worth the man,  
 That first did teach the cursed Steele to bight  
 In his owne flesh, and make way to the living spright !

33.

" If ever love of Lady did empierce  
 Your yron brestes, or pittie could find place,  
 Withhold your bloody handes from battaill fierce ;  
 And, sith for me ye fight, to me this grace  
 Both yield, to stay your deadly stryfe a space."  
 They stayd a while, and forth she gan proceede :  
 " Most wretched woman and of wicked race,  
 That am the authour of this hainous deed,  
 And cause of death betweene two doughtie knights do  
 breed !

34.

" But, if for me ye fight, or me will serve,  
 Not this rude kynd of battaill, nor these armes  
 Are meet, the which doe men in bale to sterve,<sup>c</sup>  
 And doolefull sorrow heape with deadly harmes :

---

<sup>c</sup> *the which doe men in bale to sterve.*] Which cause mankind to  
*perish* in trouble: *stearfan*, *mori*; though now used in a particular sense,  
*to die with hunger*. UPTON. *Sterben* in modern German. C.



Such cruell game my scarmoges difarmes.<sup>d</sup>  
 Another warre, and other weapons, I  
 Doe love, where love does give his sweet Alarmes  
 Without bloodshed, and where the enemy  
 Does yield unto his foe a pleasaunt victory.

35.

“ Debatefull strife, and cruell enmity,  
 The famous name of knighthood fowly shend;  
 But lovely peace, and gentle amity,  
 And in Amours the passing howres to spend,  
 The mightie martiall handes doe most commend:  
 Of love they ever greater glory bore  
 Then of their armes; Mars is Cupidoes frend,  
 And is for Venus loves renowned more  
 Then all his wars and spoiles, the which he did of yore.”

36.

Therewith she sweetly smyld. They, though full bent  
 To prove extremities of bloody fight,  
 Yet at her speach their rages gan relent,  
 And calme the sea of their tempestuous spight.  
 Such powre have pleasing wordes: such is the might  
 Of courteous clemency in gentle hart.  
 Now after all was ceast, the Faery knight  
 Besought that Damzell suffer him depart,  
 And yield him ready passage to that other part.

37.

She no lesse glad then he desirous was  
 Of his departure thence; for of her joy  
 And vaine delight she saw he light did pas,<sup>e</sup>

---

<sup>d</sup> *Such cruell game my scarmoges difarmes.*] This is more poetical and elegant than if written, “*Such cruell scarmoges my game difarms.*” “*Scarmoges*,” *skirmishes*; Ital. *scaramuchia*; Gall. *escarmouche*. UPTON. We do not find it spelt “*scarmoges*” in any author but Spenser, and it runs through all the old editions. C.

<sup>e</sup> *And vaine delight she saw he light did pas.*] He made light of; he passed over lightly. UPTON.



A foe of folly and immodest toy,  
 Still solemne sad, or still disdainfull coy;  
 Delighting all in armes and cruell warre,  
 That her sweet peace and pleasures did annoy,  
 Troubled with terrour and unquiet jarre,  
 That she well pleased was thence to amove him farre.

38.

Tho him she brought aboard, and her swift bote  
 Forthwith directed to that further strand;  
 The which on the dull waves did lightly flote,  
 And soone arrived on the shallow sand,  
 Where gladsome Guyon salied<sup>f</sup> forth to land,  
 And to that Damsell thanks gave for reward.  
 Upon that shore he spyed Atin stand,  
 There by his maister left, when late he far'd  
 In Phædrias flitt barck over that perlous shard.<sup>g</sup>

39.

Well could he him remember, fith of late  
 He with Pyrochles sharp debatement made:  
 Streight gan he him revyle, and bitter rate,  
 As Shepheardes curre, that in darke eveninges shade  
 Hath tracted forth some salvage beastes trade:<sup>h</sup>

<sup>f</sup> *Where gladsome Guyon salied.*] So Spenser's own editions read. "Salied," that is, *leaped*. Lat. *salio*. The word well expresses the alacrity of Sir Guyon. The folios read *saied*. CHURCH.

<sup>g</sup> *over that perlous shard.*] i. e. over that perilous division occasioned by the "dull waves." "Shard" is used by Spenser with license for the sake of his rhyme; and no author has been pointed out who employs it in a similar manner: it means, as Richardson truly remarks, "anything separated or divided." *Shore* seems merely to be part of the verb to *shear*. See also T. Warton's note on p. 177. C.

<sup>h</sup> *some salvage beastes trade.*] The *tread* or *footsteps* of the animal: the word *trade* was constantly thus applied; and there are two nearly adjoining passages in Painter's "Palace of Pleasure," where "trade" is first used as "vestigia," and afterwards in the common sense of "merchandise:" they both occur on fol. 63, b. of vol. i. edit. Marsh.—"That which not onely did appertayne and belong to gentlemen, but also that which was incident to the *trade* and course of youth." Again: "They began to lend out their money in usurie, and fortune was so favourable



“Vile miscreant,” (saide he) whether dost thou flye  
The shame and death, which will thee soone in-  
vade?

What coward hand shall doe thee next to dye,  
That art thus fowly fledd from famous enemy?”

40.

With that he stiffly shooke his steelhead dart:  
But sober Guyon, hearing him so rayle,  
Though somewhat moved in his mightie hart,  
Yet with strong reason maistred passion fraile,  
And passed fayrely forth. He, turning taile,  
Backe to the strond retyrd, and there still stayd,  
Awaiting passage which him late did faile;  
The whiles Cymochles with that wanton mayd  
The hasty heat of his avowd revenge delayd.<sup>i</sup>

41.

Whylest there the varlet stood, he saw from farre  
An armed knight that towardes him fast ran;  
He ran on foot, as if in lucklesse warre  
His forlorne steed from him the victour wan:  
He seemed breathlesse, hartlesse, faint, and wan;  
And all his armour sprinckled was with blood,  
And soyled with durtie gore, that no man can  
Discerne the hew thereof. He never stood,  
But bent his hastie course towardes the ydle flood.

42.

The varlett saw, when to the flood he came,  
How without stop or stay he fierfly lept,  
And deepe him selfe beducked in the same,

---

unto them by that *trade*, that in a few yeares they had gayned a verie notable summe.” On fol. 101 of the same volume we read, “Imitate and follow the *trade* (i. e. footsteps) of your ancestors, which ever loved better one day of honour, then a hundred living years of shame.” C.

<sup>i</sup> *The hasty heat of his avowd revenge delayd.*] “Delayd” is *put away*, removed from him. See F. Q. ii. iv. 35. CHURCH. His “avowd revenge” was the vengeance he had sworn, or vowed. C.



That in the lake his loftie creft was ftept,  
 Ne of his fafetie feemed care he kept;  
 But with his raging armes he rudely flafht  
 The waves about, and all his armour fwapt,  
 That all the blood and filth away was wafht;  
 Yet ftill he bet the water, and the billowes dafht.

43.

Atin drew nigh to weet what it mote bee,  
 For much he wondred at that uncouth fight:  
 Whom fhould he but his own deare Lord there fee,  
 His owne deare Lord Pyrochles in fad plight,  
 Ready to drowne him felfe for fell defpight:  
 "Harrow now, out and well away!"<sup>k</sup> he cryde,  
 "What difmall day hath lent this curfed light,  
 To fee my Lord fo deadly damnifyde?  
 Pyrochles, O Pyrochles! what is thee betyde?"

44.

"I burne, I burne, I burne!" then lowd he cryde,  
 "O! how I burne with implacable fyre;  
 Yet nought can quench mine inly flaming fyde,  
 Nor fea of licour cold, nor lake of myre:  
 Nothing but death can doe me to refpyre."

<sup>k</sup> *Harrow now, out and well away.*] So Chaucer, "Reves Tale," 964,

"And gan to cry *harrow* and *weal-away*."

*Haro* is a form of exclamation anciently used in Normandy, to call for help, or to raife the *Hue and Cry*. See Gloss. Urry's "Chaucer." T. WARTON. "Harrow" is a frequent exclamation in our own old Miracle-plays, and we probably had it from the French: in *Le Miftère de la Paffion*, printed at Paris by Alain Lotrian, 4to. *n. d.* we find it in feveral places. When Satan firft hears of the advent of the Saviour, he burfts out,—

*Haro! tu me fais enrager,*

*Quant il fault que telz motz efcouté.* Sig. B. iij.

It is, no doubt, connected with the verb to *harrow*, to ruin, deftroy, or conquer. In the next line, editions differ; the earlieft giving, "hath lent *but* this *his* curfed light." Todd rightly preferred the text of the 4to. 1596, to which, though he does not ftate it, the folios judiciously conform. C.



“ Ah ! be it,” (saide he) “ from Pyrochles farre  
 After pursewing death once to requyre,  
 Or think, that ought those puissant hands may marre :  
 Death is for wretches borne under unhappy starre.”

45.

“ Perdye, then is it fitt for me,” (saide he)  
 “ That am, I weene, most wretched man alive ;  
 Burning in flames, yet no flames can I see,  
 And dying dayly, dayly yet revive.  
 O Atin ! helpe to me last death to give.”  
 The varlet at his plaint was grieved so fore,  
 That his deepe wounded hart in two did rive ;  
 And, his owne health remembring now no more,  
 Did follow that ensample which he blam'd afore.

46.

Into the lake he leapt his Lord to ayd,  
 (So Love the dread of daunger doth despise)  
 And of him catching hold him strongly stayd  
 From drowning. But more happy he then wise,  
 Of that seas nature did him not avise :  
 The waves thereof so flow and sluggish were,  
 Engroft with mud which did them fowle agrise,<sup>1</sup>  
 That every weighty thing they did upbeare,  
 Ne ought mote ever sinck downe to the bottom there.

47.

Whiles thus they strugled in that ydle wave,  
 And strove in vaine, the one him selfe to drowne,  
 The other both from drowning for to save,

---

<sup>1</sup> *which did them fowle agrise.*] To “agrise” seems properly to mean to *dread*; but here it is rather to be taken as indicating the object of dread: the waves were thickened with mud, which rendered them the object of horror and disgust. Richardson, by a mere misprint, *ayrise* for “agrise,” renders it doubtful whether, in his quotation, the word have not reference to “upbeare” in the next line. Upton, not unreasonably, supposes that Spenser, in his description of his Idle Lake, had the lake Asphaltus, or Dead Sea in his mind. C.



Lo! to that shore one in an auncient gowne,  
 Whose hoary locks great gravitie did crowne,  
 Holding in hand a goodly arming sword,  
 By fortune came, ledd with the troublous fowne:  
 Where drenched deepe he fownd in that dull ford  
 The carefull servaunt stryving with his raging Lord.

48.

Him Atin spyng knew right well of yore,  
 And lowdly cald; "Help, helpe! O Archimage!  
 To save my Lord in wretched plight forlore;  
 Helpe with thy hand, or with thy counsell sage:  
 Weake handes, but counsell is most strong in age."  
 Him when the old man saw, he woundred fore  
 To see Pyrochles there so rudely rage;  
 Yet fithens helpe, he saw, he needed more  
 Then pittie, he in hast approched to the shore,

49.

And cald; "Pyrochles! what is this I see?  
 What hellish fury hath at earst thee hent?  
 Furious ever I thee knew to bee,  
 Yet never in this straunge astonishment."  
 "These flames, these flames" (he cryde) "doe me  
 torment."  
 "What flames," (qd. he) "when I thee present see  
 In daunger rather to be drent then brent?"  
 "Harrow! the flames which me consume," (saide hee)  
 "Ne can be quencht, within my secreet bowelles bee.

50.

"That cursed man, that cruel feend of hell,  
 Furor, oh! Furor hath me thus bedight:  
 His deadly woundes within my liver swell,  
 And his whott fyre burnes in mine entralles bright,  
 Kindled through his infernall brond of spight,  
 Sith late with him I batteill vaine would bofte;  
 That now, I weene, Joves dreaded thunder light



Does scorch not halfe so fore, nor damned ghoste  
In flaming Phlegeton does not so felly roste."

51.

Which when as Archimago heard, his grieve  
He knew right well, and him attonce disarm'd ;  
Then searcht his secreet woundes, and made a priefe  
Of every place that was with bruizing harmd,  
Or with the hidden fier inly warmd.<sup>m</sup>  
Which doen, he balmes and herbes thereto applyde,  
And evermore with mightie spels them charmd ;  
That in short space he has them qualifyde,  
And him restor'd to helth that would have algates dyde.

---

<sup>m</sup> *the hidden fier inly warmd.*] So the first edition reads. The second and every other subsequent edition read, "Or with the hidden *fire too* inly warm'd." But *too* appears needless ; and *fier*, pronounced as two syllables, is not uncommon in Spenser [as well as in Shakespeare, and other poets of his day]. I retain therefore the original reading. Todd.







## CANTO VII.

*Guyon findes Mamon in a delve  
 sunning his threasure hore;  
 Is by him tempted, and led downe  
 To see his secrete store.*

I.



S Pilot well expert in perilous wave,  
 That to a stedfast starre<sup>a</sup> his course hath  
 bent,  
 When foggy mistes or cloudy tempests  
 have

The faithfull light of that faire lampe yblent,  
 And cover'd heaven with hideous dreriment,  
 Upon his card and compas firmes his eye,  
 The maysters of his long experiment,  
 And to them does the steddy helme apply,  
 Bidding his winged vessell fairely forward fly :

2.

So Guyon having lost his trustie guyde,  
 Late left beyond that Ydle lake, proceedes  
 Yet on his way, of none accompanyde ;  
 And evermore himselfe with comfort feedes  
 Of his own vertues and praise-worthie deedes.  
 So, long he yode, yet no adventure found,

---

<sup>a</sup> *That to a stedfast starre.*] So all the editions. I think Spenser gave, "to the stedfast starre," meaning thereby the *pole-star*; as he calls it *the faithfull light*. CHURCH.



Which fame of her shrill trompet worthy reedes ;  
 For still he traveild through wide wastfull ground,  
 That nought but desert wildernesse shewed all around.

3.

At last he came unto a gloomy glade,  
 Cover'd with boughes and shrubs from heavens light,  
 Whereas he sitting found in secret shade  
 An uncouth, salvage, and uncivile wight,  
 Of griesly hew and fowle ill favour'd fight ;  
 His face with smoke was tand, and eies were beard,  
 His head and beard with snot were ill bedight,  
 His cole-blacke hands did seeme to have ben feard  
 In smythes fire-spitting forge,<sup>b</sup> and nayles like clawes  
 appeard.

4.

His yron cote, all overgrowne with rust,  
 Was underneath enveloped with gold ;  
 Whose gliftring glosse, darkned with filthy dust,  
 Well yet appeared<sup>c</sup> to have beene of old  
 A worke of rich entayle<sup>d</sup> and curious mould,  
 Woven with antickes and wyld ymagery ;  
 And in his lap a masse of coyne he told,

---

<sup>b</sup> *In smythes fire-spitting forge.*] *Spett* seems anciently to have more simply signified *disperse*, without the low idea which we at present affix to it. Thus Milton, in "Comus," ver. 131:—

" ————— When the dragon woom

" Of Stygian darkness *spets* her thickest gloom."

And Drayton, in the "Barons Wars," of an exhalation, "*Spetteth* his lightening forth," B. ii. St. 35. T. WARTON. It is remarkable, however, that both Spenser's own editions read, "fire-spitting," not *spetting*. TODD. It is "fire-spetting" in the folio 1611. C.

<sup>c</sup> *Well yet appeared.*] So the first edition reads. Spenser's second edition reads, less perspicuously, "Well it appeared;" and has been followed by all the folios. TODD.

<sup>d</sup> *A worke of rich entayle.*] *Carving, sculpture.* So Chaucer, "Rom. R." 162:—

" An image of another *entaile*."

Ital. *intagliare, intaglio*. UPTON. To "entayl" is merely to *cut* as with a sword, in this vol. p. 184. C.



And turned upside downe, to feede his eye  
And covetous desire with his huge threafury.

5.

And round about him lay on every side  
Great heapes of gold that never could be spent;  
Of which some were rude owre, not purifide  
Of Mulcibers devouring element;  
Some others were new driven, and distent  
Into great Ingowes and to wedges square;  
Some in round plates withouten moniment;<sup>e</sup>  
But most were stampd, and in their metal bare  
The antique shapes of kings and kefars straung and rare.

6.

Soone as he Guyon saw, in great affright  
And haste he rose for to remove aside  
Those pretious hils from straungers envious fight,  
And downe them poured through an hole full wide  
Into the hollow earth, them there to hide.  
But Guyon, lightly to him leaping, stayd  
His hand that trembled as one terrifyde;  
And though him selfe were at the sight dismayd,  
Yet him perforce restraynd, and to him doubtfull sayd:

7.

“What art thou, man, (if man at all thou art)  
That here in desert hast thine habitaunce,  
And these rich hils<sup>f</sup> of welth doest hide apart  
From the worldes eye, and from her right usaunce?”

---

<sup>e</sup> *Some in round plates withouten moniment.*] Spelt as the Ital. *monimento*: meaning here, *image, superscription, ornament*; γνέρισμα, *gnorisma, monumentum*. UPTON.

<sup>f</sup> *And these rich hils.*] This is the reading of Spenser's first edition: all other editions read “rich *heapes*.” Mr. Upton, however, acknowledges that “hils” is not improper here. Thus Barnefield, in his “*Lady Pecunia*,” 1605, St. 14, has “*mounts of money*.” TODD. Barnefield's poem was originally printed in 1598, an edition with which Todd was not acquainted; but the expression is the same in both. C.



Thereat, with staring eyes fixed askaunce,  
 In great disdaine he answerd: "Hardy Elfe,  
 That darest view my direfull countenaunce,  
 I read thee rash and heedlesse of thy selfe,  
 To trouble my still seate, and heapes of pretious pelfe.

8.

"God of the world and worldlings I me call,  
 Great Mammon, greatest god below the skye,  
 That of my plenty poure out unto all,  
 And unto none my graces do envye:  
 Riches, renowme, and principality,  
 Honour, estate, and all this worldes good,  
 For which men fwinck and sweat incessantly,  
 Fro me do flow into an ample flood,  
 And in the hollow earth have their eternall brood.

9.

"Wherefore, if me thou deigne to serve and sew,  
 At thy commaund lo! all these mountaines bee:  
 Or if to thy great mind, or greedy vew,  
 All these may not suffice, there shall to thee  
 Ten times so much be nombred francke and free."  
 "Mammon," (saide he) "thy godheads vaunt is vaine,  
 And idle offers of thy golden fee;  
 To them that covet such eye-glutting gaine  
 Proffer thy giftes, and fitter servaunts entertaine.

10.

"Me ill befits,<sup>s</sup> that in derdoing armes  
 And honours suit my vowed daies do spend,  
 Unto thy bounteous baytes and pleasing charmes,  
 With which weake men thou witchest, to attend;  
 Regard of worldly mucke doth fowly blend,

---

<sup>s</sup> *Me ill befits.*] Not *befits*, as amended in the folios, but "befits," as the word is printed in the 4tos. 1590 and 1596. See the notes upon "fits," vol. i. pp. 125, 186, 312. The meaning is the same as *befits*, i. e. "it ill *beseems*, or *befuits* me." C.



And low abase the high heroicke spright,  
 That joyes for crownes and kingdomes to contend :  
 Faire shields, gay steedes, bright armes be my delight ;  
 Those be the riches fit for an advent'rous knight."

## 11.

"Vaine glorious Elfe," (saide he) "doest not thou weet,  
 That money can thy wantes at will supply ?  
 Shields, steedes, and armes, and all things for thee meet,  
 It can purvay in twinckling of an eye ;  
 And crownes and kingdomes<sup>h</sup> to thee multiply.  
 Do not I kings create, and throw the crowne  
 Sometimes to him that low in dust doth ly,  
 And him that raignd into his rowme thrust downe,  
 And whom I lust do heape with glory and renowne ?"

## 12.

"All otherwise" (saide he) "I riches read,  
 And deeme them roote of all disquietnesse ;  
 First got with guile, and then preserv'd with dread,  
 And after spent with pride and lavishnesse,  
 Leaving behind them grieve and heavinesse :  
 Infinite mischiefes of them doe arize,  
 Strife and debate, bloodshed and bitternesse,  
 Outrageous wrong, and hellish covetize,  
 That noble heart in great dishonour<sup>i</sup> doth despize.

## 13.

"Ne thine be kingdomes, ne the scepters thine ;  
 But realmes and rulers thou doest both confound,  
 And loyall truth to treason doest incline :

---

<sup>h</sup> *And crownes and kingdomes.*] We only note this word "kingdomes" as a proof of the facility with which old printers confounded the letters *m* and *w*, a fruitful source of errors, especially in the early editions of Shakespeare, (see "Coriolanus," A. iii. Sc. 3, edit. Collier, 1858): in the 4to. F. Q. 1590 "kingdomes" is misprinted *kingdowes*. C.

<sup>i</sup> *That noble heart in great dishonour.*] "In" was afterwards needlessly altered to *as*; and a parenthesis introduced, which is entirely avoided by adopting the text of the 4to. of 1590. C.



Witnesse the guiltlesse blood pourd oft on ground,  
 The crowned often slaine, the slayer cround;  
 The sacred Diademe in peeces rent,  
 And purple robe gored with many a wound,  
 Castles surprizd, great cities sackt and brent:  
 So mak'ft thou kings, and gaynest wrongfull government.

14.

“Long were to tell the troublous stormes that tosse  
 The private state, and make the life unsweet:  
 Who swelling sayles in Caspian sea doth crosse,  
 And in frayle wood on Adrian gulf doth fleet,  
 Doth not, I weene, so many evils meet.”  
 Then Mammon waxing wroth; “And why then,” sayd,  
 “Are mortall men so fond and undiscreet  
 So evill thing to seeke unto their ayd,  
 And having not complaine, and having it upbrayd?”

15.

“Indeede,” (quoth he) “through fowle intemperaunce,  
 Frayle men are oft captiv'd to covetise;  
 But would they thinke with how small allowaunce  
 Untroubled Nature doth her selfe suffice,  
 Such superfluties they would despise,  
 Which with sad cares empeach<sup>k</sup> our native joyes.  
 At the well-head the purest streames arise;  
 But mucky filth his braunching armes annoyes,  
 And with uncomely weedes the gentle wave accloyes.<sup>1</sup>

16.

“The antique world, in his first flowring youth,  
 Fownd no defect in his Creators grace;  
 But with glad thankes, and unreproved truth,

<sup>k</sup> *empeach our native joyes.*] Here “empeach” is to be understood as *binder*, (Fr. *empêcher*) and not in the sense of *accuse*, which also is one of the meanings of the word: see vol. i. p. 313. C.

<sup>1</sup> *the gentle wave accloyes.*] To “accloy” is to *load*, *burden*, or *clog*, (see vol i. p. 27): the water is loaded with uncomely weeds. C.



The guifts of foveraine bounty did embrace :  
 Like Angels life was then mens happy cace ;  
 But later ages pride, like corn-fed ſteed,  
 Abufd her plenty and fat ſwolne encrease  
 To all licentious luſt, and gan exceed  
 The meafure of her meane and naturall firſt need.

17.

“ Then gan a curſed hand the quiet wombe  
 Of his great Grandmother with ſteele to wound,  
 And the hid treasures in her ſacred tombe  
 With Sacriledge to dig. Therein he fownd  
 Fountaines of gold and ſilver to abownd,  
 Of which the matter of his huge deſire  
 And pompous pride eſtſoones he did compownd ;  
 Then avarice gan through his veines inſpire  
 His greedy flames, and kindled life-devouring fire.”

18.

“ Sonne,” (ſaid he then) “ lett be<sup>m</sup> thy bitter ſcorne,  
 And leave the rudeneſſe of that antique age  
 To them that liv’d therin in ſtate forlorne :  
 Thou, that doeſt live in later times, muſt wage  
 Thy workes for wealth, and life for gold engage.  
 If then thee liſt my offred grace to uſe,  
 Take what thou pleaſe of all this ſurpluſage ;  
 If thee liſt not, leave have thou to reſuſe :  
 But thing reſuſed doe not afterward accuſe.”

19.

“ Me liſt not” (ſaid the Elfin knight) “ receave  
 Thing offred, till I know it well be gott ;  
 Ne wote I but thou didſt theſe goods bereave  
 From rightfull owner by unrighteous lott,  
 Or that bloodguiltineſſe or guile them blott.”  
 “ Perdy,” (qd. he) “ yet never eie did vew,

---

<sup>m</sup> lett be thy bitter ſcorne.] Leave off; away with it. CHURCH.



Ne tong did tell, ne hand these handled not ;  
 But safe I have them kept in secret mew  
 From heavens sight, and powre of al which them pourfew."

20.

"What secret place" (qd. he) "can safely hold  
 So huge a masse, and hide from heavens eie ?  
 Or where hast thou thy wonne,<sup>n</sup> that so much gold  
 Thou canst preserve from wrong and robbery ?"  
 "Come thou," (qd. he) "and see." So by and by  
 Through that thick covert he him led, and fownd  
 A darksome way, which no man could descry,  
 That deep descended through the hollow grownd,  
 And was with dread and horror compassed arownd.

21.

At length they came into a larger space,  
 That stretcht itselfe into an ample playne ;  
 Through which a beaten broad high way did trace,  
 That streight did lead to Plutoes griesly rayne.  
 By that wayes side there sate internall Payne,<sup>o</sup>  
 And fast beside him sat tumultuous Strife :  
 The one in hand an yron whip did strayne,  
 The other brandished a bloody knife ;  
 And both did gnash their teeth, and both did threaten life.

22.

On thother side in one consort there sate  
 Cruell Revenge, and rancorous Despight,  
 Disloyall Treason, and hart-burning Hate ;

---

<sup>n</sup> *where hast thou thy wonne.*] *Habitation*. The word is often thus used as a substantive. UPTON. See "*habitaunce*," p. 195. C.

<sup>o</sup> *there sate internall Payne.*] So the 4to. 1590, but afterwards "*internal*" was corrupted to *infernal*. It may be not unreasonably doubted whether the poet's own word were not *eternal*, in reference to the lasting character of suffering. Some editors have adopted "*internal*," (which we see no sufficient reason to change) and others have preferred "*infernal*," which little agrees with the epithets applied to Strife, Revenge, Despight, &c. C.



But gnawing Gealofy, out of their fight  
 Sitting alone, his bitter lips did bight;  
 And trembling Feare still to and fro did fly,  
 And found no place wher safe he shroud him might:  
 Lamenting Sorrow did in darknes lye,  
 And shame his ugly face did hide from living eye.

23.

And over them sad horror with grim hew  
 Did alwaies fore, beating his yron wings;  
 And after him Owles and Night-ravens flew,  
 The hatefull messengers of heavy things,  
 Of death and dolor telling sad tidings;  
 Whiles sad Celeno, sitting on a clifte,  
 A song of bale and bitter sorrow sings,<sup>p</sup>  
 That hart of flint a sonder could have rifte;  
 Which having ended after him she flyeth swifte.

24.

All these before the gates of Pluto lay,  
 By whom they passing spake unto them nought;  
 But th' Elfin knight with wonder all the way  
 Did feed his eyes, and fild his inner thought.  
 At last him to a litle dore he brought,  
 That to the gate of Hell, which gaped wide,  
 Was next adjoyning, ne them parted nought:<sup>q</sup>  
 Betwixt them both was but a litle stride,  
 That did the house of Richeffe from hellmouth divide.

25.

Before the dore sat selfe-consuming Care,  
 Day and night keeping wary watch and ward,  
 For feare least Force or Fraud should unaware

<sup>p</sup> *A song of bale and bitter sorrow sings.*] These verses are finely turned; and the repetition of the letters has a visible force. "In præruptâ confedit rupe Celæno, infelix vates," Virg. *Æn.* iii. 245. UPRON.

<sup>q</sup> *ne them parted nought.*] i. e. did *not* part them: the reduplication of negatives was common; and we here, as elsewhere, adhere to the intelligible text of the earliest impressions: the folios have *ought*. C.



Breake in, and spoile the treasure there in gard :  
 Ne would he suffer Sleepe once thether-ward  
 Approch, albe his drowfy den were next ;  
 For next to death is Sleepe to be compard ;<sup>r</sup>  
 Therefore his house is unto his annex :  
 Here Sleep, there Richesse, and Helgate them both  
 betwext.

26.

So soon as Mammon there arrivd, the dore  
 To him did open and affoorded way :  
 Him followed eke Sir Guyon evermore,  
 Ne darknesse him, ne daunger might dismay.  
 Soone as he entred was, the dore streight way  
 Did shutt, and from behind it forth there lept  
 An ugly feend, more fowle then dismall day,  
 The which with monstrous stalke behind him stept,  
 And ever as he went dew watch upon him kept.

27.

Well hoped hee, ere long that hardy guest,  
 If ever covetous hand, or lustfull eye,  
 Or lips he layd on thing that likt him best,  
 Or ever sleepe his eiestrings did untye,  
 Should be his pray. And therefore still on hye  
 He over him did hold his cruell clawes,  
 Threatning with greedy gripe to doe him dye,  
 And rend in peeces with his ravenous pawes,  
 If ever he transgreest the fatall Stygian lawes.

28.

That houses forme within was rude and strong,  
 Lyke an huge cave hewne out of rocky clifte,

---

<sup>r</sup> *For next to death is Sleepe to be compard.*] Death and Sleep were brothers ; both sons of Night and Erebus : hence Homer, Il. ξ. 231 ;

Ἐνθ' ὕπνῳ ξύμβλητο κασιγνήτῳ Θανάτῳ.

Hence too Virg. *Æn.* vi. 278 ;

“ Tum confanguineus Lethi Sopor.” UPTON.



From whose rough vault the ragged breaches hong  
 Embost with massy gold of glorious guifte,  
 And with rich metall loaded every rifte,  
 That heavy ruine they did seeme to threath;  
 And over them Arachne high did lifte  
 Her cunning web, and spred her subtile nett,  
 Enwrapped in fowle smoke and clouds more black then  
 Jett.

29.

Both rooffe, and floore, and walls, were all of gold,  
 But overgrowne with dust and old decay,  
 And hid in darknes, that none could behold  
 The hew thereof; for vew of cherefull day  
 Did never in that house it selfe display,  
 But a faint shadow of uncertein light:  
 Such as a lamp, whose life does fade away,  
 Or as the Moone, cloathed with cloudy night,  
 Does shew to him that walkes in feare and sad affright.

30.

In all that rowme was nothing to be seene  
 But huge great yron chests, and coffers strong,  
 All bard with double bends, that none could weene  
 Them to efforce<sup>s</sup> by violence or wrong:  
 On every side they placed were along;  
 But all the grownd with sculs was scattered,  
 And dead mens bones, which round about were flong;  
 Whose lives, it seemed, whilome there were shed,  
 And their vile carcases now left unburied.

31.

They forward passe; ne Guyon yet spoke word,  
 Till that they came unto an yron dore,

---

<sup>s</sup> *Them to efforce.*] It is "efforce" in every old impression, a word constantly employed by Spenser, (see p. 217, &c.); but Todd printed *enforce*, and has misled various followers. Professor Child, of Cambridge, U. S., is an honourable exception in his edit. Boston, 1855. C.



Which to them opened of his owne accord,  
And shewd of richesse such exceeding store,  
As eie of man did never see before,  
Ne ever could within one place be fownd,  
Though all the wealth which is, or was of yore,  
Could gathered be through all the world arownd,  
And that above were added to that under grownd.

32.

The charge thereof unto a covetous Spright  
Commaunded was, who thereby did attend,  
And warily awaited day and night,  
From other covetous feends it to defend,  
Who it to rob and ranfacke did intend.  
Then Mammon, turning to that warriour, said ;  
“ Loe ! here the worldes blis : loe ! here the end,  
To which al men do ayme, rich to be made :  
Such grace now to be happy is before thee laid.”

33.

“ Certes,” (sayd he) “ I n’ill thine offred grace,  
Ne to be made so happy doe intend :  
Another blis before mine eyes I place,  
Another happines, another end.  
To them that list these base regards I lend ;  
But I in armes, and in atchievements brave,  
Do rather choose my flitting houres to spend,  
And to be Lord of those that riches have,  
Then them to have my selfe, and be their servile sclave.”

34.

Thereat the feend his gnashing teeth did grate,  
And griev’d so long to lacke his greedie pray ;  
For well he weened that so glorious bayte  
Would tempt his guest to take thereof assay :  
Had he so doen, he had him snatcht away,  
More light then Culver in the Faulcons fist.  
Eternall God thee save from such decay !



But, whenas Mammon saw his purpose mist,  
Him to entrap unwares another way he wist.

35.

Thence forward he him ledd, and shortly brought  
Unto another rowme, whose dore forthright  
To him did open, as it had beene taught.  
Therein an hundred raunges weren pight,  
And hundred founaces all burning bright:  
By every founace many feendes did byde,  
Deformed creatures, horrible in fight;  
And every feend his busie paines applyde  
To melt the golden metall, ready to be tryde.

36.

One with great bellows gathered filling ayre,  
And with forst wind the fewell did inflame;  
Another did the dying bronds repayre  
With yron tongs, and sprinckled ofte the same  
With liquid waves, fiers Vulcans rage to tame,  
Who, maystring them, renewd his former heat:  
Some scumd the drosse that from the metall came;  
Some stird the molten owre with ladles great;  
And every one did fwincke, and every one did sweat.

37.

But, when an earthly wight<sup>t</sup> they present saw  
Gliftring in armes and battailous aray,  
From their whot work they did themselves withdraw  
To wonder at the sight; for till that day  
They never creature saw that cam that way:  
Their staring eyes sparckling with fervent fyre  
And ugly shapes did nigh the man dismay,  
That, were it not for shame, he would retyre;  
Till that him thus bespake their foveraine Lord and fyre;

---

<sup>t</sup> *But, when an earthly wight, &c.*] So the first edition reads; the rest read either "when *as*," or "*whenas*." TODD.



38.

“Behold, thou Faeries sonne, with mortall eye,  
 That living eye before did never see.  
 The thing, that thou didst crave so earnestly,  
 To weet whence all the wealth late shewd by mee  
 Proceeded, lo! now is reveald to thee.  
 Here is the fountaine of the worldes good:  
 Now, therefore, if thou wilt enriched bee,  
 Avise thee well, and chaunge thy wilfull mood,  
 Least thou perhaps hereafter wish, and be withstood.”

39.

“Suffise it then, thou Money God,” (qd. hee)  
 “That all thine ydle offers I refuse.  
 All that I need I have: what needeth mee  
 To covet more then I have cause to use?  
 With such vaine shewes thy worldlinges vyle abuse;  
 But give me leave to follow mine emprise.”  
 Mammon was much displeasd, yet no'te he chuse  
 But beare the rigour of his bold mesprise;<sup>u</sup>  
 And thence him forward ledd him further to entise.

40.

He brought him, through a darksom narrow strayt,  
 To a broad gate all built of beaten gold:  
 The gate was open; but therein did wayt  
 A sturdie villein, stryding stiffe and bold,  
 As if the highest God defy he would:<sup>x</sup>

<sup>u</sup> *his bold mesprise.*] *Contempt, or neglect*; Fr. The second edition reads *mesprise*, which some editions have followed. Todd. Such is the case with the fol. 1611, but Drayton corrected the error in his margin. C.

<sup>x</sup> *As if the highest God defy he would.*] According to the errata at the end of the 4to. 1590, it is doubtful whether we ought in this line to read “*that* highest God,” or in a subsequent line in St. 43, “*that* fiers Carle.” Todd preferred the last, and so do we; not so much for the reason he gives, as because we find the stanza quoted in “*England's Parnassus*” precisely as we have given it. That well-known work, consisting of short extracts from many poets, was published in 1600. C.



In his right hand an yron club he held,  
 But he himfelfe was all of golden mould,<sup>y</sup>  
 Yet had both life and fence, and well could weld  
 That curfed weapon, when his cruell foes he queld.

41.

Disdayne he called was,<sup>z</sup> and did disdayne  
 To be fo cald, and who fo did him call:  
 Sterne was his looke,<sup>a</sup> and full of ftomacke vayne;  
 His portaunce terrible, and ftature tall,  
 Far paffing th' hight of men terrestriall,  
 Like an huge Gyant of the Tītans race;  
 That made him fcorne all creatures great and fmall,  
 And with his pride all others powre deface:  
 More fitt emongft black fiendes then men to have his place.

42.

Soone as thofe glitterand armes he did efpye,  
 That with their brightneffe made that darknes light,  
 His harmefull club he gan to hurtle hye,  
 And threaten batteill to the Faery knight;  
 Who likewise gan himfelfe to batteill dight,  
 Till Mammon did his hafty hand withhold,  
 And counfeld him abftaine from perilous fight;

<sup>y</sup> *But he himfelfe was all of golden mould.*] Here we vary from the 4to. 1590, where the line ftands,

“But he himfelfe was all of yron mould,”

not merely becaufe we think it extremely likely, as Upton remarks, that the old compofitor printed *yron* for “golden,” the word *yron* having caught his eye in the line above, but becaufe “golden” is found in all editions fubfequent to the firft. It is alfo deferving of notice that the word is “golden” in the quotation already referred to in “England’s Parnaffus,” 1600. There, too, “But” is fubftituted for *And*, as well as in the 4to. 1596, and in the folios 1609 and 1611. C.

<sup>z</sup> *Disdayne he called was.*] We have another monftrous giant of the fame name in F. Q. vi. vii. 44. Disdain is a Fairy Knight introduced in Ariofto, C. xlii. 53, 64, who frees Rinaldo from the monfter Jealoufy. UPTON.

<sup>a</sup> *Sterne was his looke.*] So the firft edition, and rightly. Δεινὸν δερκόμενος. The fecond edition, and the folio of 1609 read, “Sterne was to looke.” UPTON. So alfo the folio of 1611. C.



For nothing might abash the villein bold,  
Ne mortall Steele emperce his miscreated mould.<sup>b</sup>

43.

So having him with reason pacifyde,  
And that fiers Carle commaunding to forbear,  
He brought him in. The rowme was large and wyde,  
As it some Gyeld<sup>c</sup> or solemne Temple weare.  
Many great golden pillours did upbeare  
The massy rooffe, and riches huge sustayne;  
And every pillour decked was full deare  
With crownes, and Diademes, and titles vaine,  
Which mortall Princes wore whiles they on earth did  
rayne.

44.

A route of people there assembled were,  
Of every fort and nation under skye,  
Which with great uprore preaced to draw nere  
To th' upper part, where was advaunced hye  
A stately siege of soveraine majestye;  
And thereon satt a woman, gorgeous gay,  
And richly cladd in robes of royaltye,  
That never earthly Prince in such aray  
His glory did enhaunce, and pompous pryde display.

45.

Her face right wondrous faire did seeme to bee,  
That her broad beauties beam great brightnes threw  
Through the dim shade, that all men might it see:  
Yet was not that fame her owne native hew,

---

<sup>b</sup> *his miscreated mould.*] Mr. Addison was mistaken in thinking that *miscreated* was a word of Milton's coining. Spenser uses it in *F. Q.* i. ii. 3, and in other places. JORTIN.

<sup>c</sup> *As it some Gyeld.*] *Hall*, a guild-hall. A. S. *gild*; Ger. *gilde*. UPTON. A "guild" strictly appears to mean what was *yielded* or contributed; but it was also used for a society or fraternity, as well as for the place of meeting of such a body. It is in this last sense that Spenser applies the word. C.



But wrought by art and counterfettèd shew,  
 Thereby more lovers unto her to call:  
 Nath'lesse most heavenly faire in deed and vew  
 She by creation was, till she did fall;  
 Thenceforth she sought for helps to cloke her crime  
 withall.

46.

There, as in gliftring glory she did sitt,  
 She held a great gold chaine ylincked well,  
 Whose upper end to highest heaven was knitt,  
 And lower part did reach to lowest Hell;  
 And all that preace did rownd about her swell  
 To catchen hold of that long chaine, thereby  
 To climbe aloft, and others to excell:  
 That was Ambition, rash desire to fly,<sup>d</sup>  
 And every linck thereof a step of dignity.

47.

Some thought to raise themselves to high degree  
 By riches and unrighteous reward;  
 Some by close shouldring; some by flatteree;  
 Others through friendes; others for base regard,  
 And all by wrong waies for themselves prepar'd:  
 Those that were up themselves kept others low;  
 Those that were low themselves held others hard,  
 Ne suffred them to ryse or greater grow;  
 But every one did strive his fellow downe to throw.

48.

Which whenas Guyon saw, he gan inquire,  
 What meant that preace about that Ladies throne,  
 And what she was that did so high aspyre?  
 Him Mammon answered; "That goodly one,  
 Whom all that folke with such contention  
 Doe flock about, my deare, my daughter is:

---

<sup>d</sup> *rash desire to fly.*] To "fly" is to *ascend*. See the note to the Sonnet to the Earl of Essex, vol. i. p. 161; and other places. C.



Honour and dignitie from her alone  
 Derived are, and all this worldes blis,  
 For which ye men doe strive: few gett, but many mis:

49.

“And fayre Philotime she rightly hight,  
 The fairest wight that wonneth under skie,  
 But that this darksom neather world her light  
 Doth dim with horror and deformity;  
 Worthie of heven and hye felicitie,  
 From whence the gods have her for envy thrust:  
 But, sith thou hast found favour in mine eye,  
 Thy spouse I will her make, if that thou lust,  
 That she may thee advance for works and merits just.”

50.

“Gramercy, Mammon,” (saide the gentle knight)  
 “For so great grace and offred high estate;  
 But I, that am fraile flesh and earthly wight,  
 Unworthy match for such immortall mate  
 My selfe well wote, and mine unequall fate:  
 And were I not, yet is my trouth yplight,  
 And love avowd to other Lady late,  
 That to remove the same I have no might:  
 To chaunge love causelesse is reproch to warlike knight.”

51.

Mammon emmoved was with inward wrath;  
 Yet, forcing it to fayne, him forth thence ledd,  
 Through griefly shadowes by a beaten path,  
 Into a gardin goodly garnished  
 With hearbs and fruits, whose kinds mote not be redd:  
 Not such as earth out of her fruitfull woomb  
 Throwes forth to men, sweet and well favored,  
 But direfull deadly black, both leafe and bloom,  
 Fitt to adorne the dead, and deck the drery toombe.

52.

There mournfull Cypresse grew in greatest store,



And trees of bitter Gall, and Heben fad ;  
 Dead sleeping Poppy, and black Hellebore ;  
 Cold Coloquintida, and Tetra mad ;  
 Mortall Samnitis, and Cicuta bad,  
 With which th' unjust Atheniens<sup>e</sup> made to dy  
 Wife Socrates ; who, thereof quaffing glad,  
 Poured out his life and last Philosophy  
 To the fayre Critias, his dearest Belamy !<sup>f</sup>

53.

The Gardin of Proserpina this hight ;  
 And in the midst thereof a silver seat,  
 With a thick Arber goodly over-dight,  
 In which she often usd from open heat  
 Her selfe to shroud, and pleasures to entreat :  
 Next thereunto did grow a goodly tree,  
 With braunches broad dispredd and body great,  
 Clothed with leaves, that none the wood mote see,  
 And loaden all with fruit as thick as it might bee.

54.

Their fruit were golden apples gliftring bright,  
 That goodly was their glory to behold ;  
 On earth like never grew, ne living wight

---

<sup>e</sup> *With which th' unjust Atheniens.*] It is *Which with*, &c. in every old impression, and we hesitate to change it, recollecting that it is only another form of *Wherewith*: if it had stood "*Wherewith th' unjust Atheniens*," &c. nobody would have thought of altering the text. However, as we may easily suppose *which with* to have been an inversion by the printer, we change the places of the two words. When Todd tells us that in Tonson's edition of 1758, the two words are combined by a hyphen, he ought to have known that the insertion of the hyphen had been made about a century and a half earlier, viz. in the folio 1611. Another, and a strong reason with us for reversing the order of *which with* is, that Drayton, in his copy of the folio 1611, has put the figures 1 and 2 over the words, and in his margin, as if to mark the transposition. He therefore, who lived in Spenser's time, was not satisfied by the hyphen in that impression. C.

<sup>f</sup> *his dearest Belamy.*] From the Fr. *bel ami*. Chaucer calls the Pardoner *belamy*; and in the preceding Canto, Spenser has used the word *belamour*. C.



Honour and dignitie from her alone  
 Derived are, and all this worldes blis,  
 For which ye men doe strive: few gett, but many mis:

49.

“And fayre Philotime she rightly hight,  
 The fairest wight that wonneth under skie,  
 But that this darksom neather world her light  
 Doth dim with horror and deformity;  
 Worthie of heven and hie felicitie,  
 From whence the gods have her for envy thrust:  
 But, sith thou hast found favour in mine eye,  
 Thy spouse I will her make, if that thou lust,  
 That she may thee advance for works and merits just.”

50.

“Gramercy, Mammon,” (said the gentle knight)  
 “For so great grace and offred high estate;  
 But I, that am fraile flesh and earthly wight,  
 Unworthy match for such immortall mate  
 My selfe well wote, and mine unequall fate:  
 And were I not, yet is my trouth yplight,  
 And love avowd to other Lady late,  
 That to remove the same I have no might:  
 To chaunge love causelesse is reproch to warlike knight.”

51.

Mammon emmoved was with inward wrath;  
 Yet, forcing it to fayne, him forth thence led  
 Through griesly shadowes by a beaten path,  
 Into a gardin goodly garnished  
 With hearbs and fruits, whose kind  
 Not such as earth out of her f  
 Throwes forth to men, swe  
 But direfull deadly black  
 Fitt to adorne the dead

There mournfull



ide.

e;  
mouth,  
;  
outh,

e;

d bee;

ye:

drinke to mee!"

," (quoth he)

sent fate;

degree,

imperate,<sup>h</sup>

[ This is the text of the 4to. cause the meaning of the poet is example of the advantages of a ter impressions *intemperate* for or and tame: the fate of Tan- the consequences of not being himself. C.



Like ever saw, but they from hence were sold ;  
 For those which Hercules, with conquest bold  
 Got from great Atlas daughters, hence began,  
 And planted there did bring forth fruit of gold ;  
 And those with which th' Eubœan young man wan  
 Swift Atalanta, when through craft he her out ran.

55.

Here also sprong that goodly golden fruit,  
 With which Acontius got his lover trew,  
 Whom he had long time fought with fruitlesse fuit :  
 Here eke that famous golden Apple grew,  
 The which emongst the gods false Ate threw ;  
 For which th' Idæan Ladies disagreed,  
 Till partiall Paris dempt<sup>s</sup> it Venus dew,  
 And had of her fayre Helen for his meed,  
 That many noble Greekes and Trojans made to bleed.

56.

The warlike Elfe much wondred at this tree,  
 So fayre and great that shadowed all the ground,  
 And his broad braunches, laden with rich fee,  
 Did stretch themselves without the utmost bound  
 Of this great gardin, compast with a mound ;  
 Which over-hanging, they themselves did steepe  
 In a blacke flood, which flow'd about it round.  
 That is the river of Cocytus deepe,  
 In which full many foules do endlesse wayle and weepe.

57.

Which to behold he clomb up to the bancke,  
 And looking downe saw many damned wightes  
 In those sad waves, which direfull deadly stancke,  
 Plonged continually of cruell Sprighes,  
 That with their piteous cryes, and yelling shrighes,

---

<sup>s</sup> *Till partiall Paris dempt.] Judged, or deemed. A. S. deman. In the Isle of Man, the civil judge is distinguished, to this day, by the title of the dempster. TODD. Doomster is also in use. C.*



They made the further shore resounden wide.  
 Emongst the rest of those same ruefull fightes,  
 One curfed creature he by chaunce espide,  
 That drenched lay full deepe under the Garden fide.

58.

Deepe was he drenched to the upmost chin,  
 Yet gaped still as coveting to drinke  
 Of the cold liquor which he waded in;  
 And stretching forth his hand did often thinke  
 To reach the fruit which grew upon the brincke;  
 But both the fruit from hand, and flood from mouth,  
 Did fly abacke, and made him vainely swinke;  
 The whiles he sterv'd with hunger, and with drouth,  
 He daily dyde, yet never throughly dyen couth.

59.

The knight, him seeing labour so in vaine,  
 Askt who he was, and what he ment thereby?  
 Who, groning deepe, thus answerd him againe;  
 "Most curfed of all creatures under skye,  
 Lo! Tantalus, I here tormented lye:  
 Of whom high Jove wont whylome feasted bee;  
 Lo! here I now for want of food doe dye:  
 But, if that thou be such as I thee see,  
 Of grace I pray thee, give to eat and drinke to mee!"

60.

"Nay, nay, thou greedy Tantalus," (quoth he)  
 "Abide the fortune of thy present fate;  
 And unto all that live in high degree,  
 Ensamble be of mind more temperate,<sup>h</sup>

---

<sup>h</sup> *Ensamble be of mind more temperate.*] This is the text of the 4to. 1590, from which we do not vary, because the meaning of the poet is quite evident:—Tantalus was to be an example of the advantages of a *more* temperate mind. To say with later impressions *intemperate* for "more temperate" is comparatively poor and tame: the fate of Tantalus was to be a warning to others of the consequences of not being "more temperate" than he had shown himself. C.



To teach them how to use their present state."  
Then gan the curfed wretch alowd to cry,  
Accufing higheft Jove and gods ingrate;  
And eke blaspheming heaven bitterly,  
As author of unjuftice, there to let him dye.

61.

He lookt a litle further, and efpyde  
Another wretch, whose carcas deepe was drent  
Within the river, which the fame did hyde;  
But both his handes, moft filthy feculent,  
Above the water were on high extent,  
And faynd to wafh themselves incessantly,  
Yet nothing cleaner were for fuch intent,  
But rather fowler feemed to the eye;  
So loft his labour vaine and ydle induftry.

62.

The knight him calling asked who he was?  
Who, lifting up his head, him answerd thus;  
" I Pilate am, the falseft Judge, alas!  
And moft unjust; that, by unrighteous  
And wicked doome, to Jewes despiteous  
Delivered up the Lord of life to dye,  
And did acquite a murdrer felonous;  
The whiles my handes I wafht in purity,  
The whiles my foule was foyld with fowle iniquity."

63.

Infinite moe tormented in like paine  
He there beheld, too long here to be told:  
Ne Mammon would there let him long remayne,  
For terrour of the tortures manifold,  
In which the damned foules he did behold,  
But roughly him befpoke: " Thou fearefull foole,  
Why takeft not of that fame fruite of gold?  
Ne fitteft downe on that fame filver ftoole,  
To rest thy weary person in the shadow coole?"



64.

All which he did to do him deadly fall  
In frayle intemperaunce through sinfull bayt;  
To which if he inclyned had at all,  
That dreadfull feend, which did behinde him wayt,  
Would him have rent in thousand peeces strayt:  
But he was wary wise in all his way,  
And well perceived his deceiptfull fleight,  
Ne suffred lust his safety to betray.  
So goodly did beguile the Guyler of his pray.<sup>i</sup>

65.

And now he has so long remained theare,  
That vitall powres gan wexe both weake and wan  
For want of food and sleepe, which two upheare,  
Like mightie pillours, this frayle life of man,  
That none without the fame endure can:  
For now three dayes of men were full outwrought,  
Since he this hardy enterprize began:  
For thy great Mammon fayrely he besought  
Into the world to guyde him backe, as he him brought.

66.

The God, though loth, yet was constraynd t' obay;  
For lenger time then that no living wight  
Below the earth might suffred be to stay:  
So backe againe him brought to living light.  
But all so soone as his enfeebled spright  
Gan sucke this vitall ayre into his brest,  
As overcome with too exceeding might,  
The life did flit away out of her nest,  
And all his fences were with deadly fit opprest.

---

<sup>i</sup> *the Guyler of his pray.*] So the first edition: all the other old impressions read, "*the pray.*" Todd.





## CANTO VIII.

*Sir Guyon, layd in swowne, is by  
Acrates sonnes despoild;  
Whom Arthure soone hath reskewed,  
And Paynim brethren foyld.*

I.



AND is there care in heaven? And is there  
love

In heavenly spirits to these creatures  
bace,

That may compassion of their evils move?

There is: else much more wretched were the cace  
Of men then beasts. But O! th' exceeding grace  
Of highest God that loves his creatures so,  
And all his workes with mercy doth embrace,  
That blessed Angels he sends to and fro,  
To serve to wicked man, to serve his wicked foe.

2.

How oft do they their silver bowers leave,  
To come to succour us that succour want!  
How oft do they with golden pineons cleave  
The flitting skyes, like flying Pursuivant,  
Against fowle feendes to ayd us militant!  
They for us fight, they watch and dewly ward,  
And their bright Squadrons round about us plant;  
And all for love, and nothing for reward.  
O! why should heavenly God to men have such regard?



## 3.

During the while that Guyon did abide  
 In Mamons house, the Palmer, whom whyleare  
 That wanton Mayd of passage had denide,  
 By further search had passage found elsewhere;  
 And, being on his way, approached neare  
 Where Guyon lay in traunce; when suddainly  
 He heard a voyce that called lowd and cleare,  
 "Come hether! come hether!<sup>a</sup> O, come hastily!"  
 That all the fields refounded with the ruefull cry.

## 4.

The Palmer lent his eare unto the noyce,  
 To weet who called so importunely:  
 Againe he heard a more efforced voyce,  
 That bad him come in haste. He by and by  
 His feeble feet directed to the cry;  
 Which to that shady delve him brought at last,  
 Where Mammon earst did sunne his threasury:  
 There the good Guyon he found slumbring fast  
 In fenceles dreame; which fight at first him fore aghast.

## 5.

Befide his head there satt a faire young man,  
 Of wondrous beauty and of freshest yeares,  
 Whose tender bud to blossome new began,  
 And flourish faire above his equall peares:  
 His snowy front, curled with golden heares,  
 Like Phoebus face adornd with sunny rayes,  
 Divinely shone; and two sharpe winged sheares,  
 Decked with diverse plumes, like painted Jayes,  
 Were fixed at his backe to cut his ayery wayes.

## 6.

Like as Cupido on Idæan hill,

---

<sup>a</sup> *Come hether! come hether! &c.*] So Spenser's own editions read;  
 but the folio of 1609, [and the folio of 1611,]—

"Come hither, *hither*, O come hastily!" UPTON.



When having laid his cruell bow away  
 And mortall arrowes, wherewith he doth fill  
 The world with murderous spoiles and bloody pray,  
 With his faire mother he him dights to play,  
 And with his goodly sisters, Graces three :  
 The Goddesse, pleased with his wanton play,  
 Suffers her selfe through sleepe beguild to bee,  
 The whiles the other Ladies mind theyr mery glee.

7.

Whom when the Palmer saw, abasht he was  
 Through fear and wonder that he nought could say,  
 Till him the childe bespoke ; “ Long lackt, alas !  
 Hath bene thy faithfull aide in hard assay,  
 While deadly fitt thy pupill doth dismay.  
 Behold this heavy fight, thou reverend Sire !  
 But dread of death and dolor doe away ;  
 For life ere long shall to her home retire,  
 And he that breathlesse seems shal corage bold respire.

8.

“ The charge, which God doth unto me arrett,<sup>b</sup>  
 Of his deare safety, I to thee commend ;  
 Yet will I not forgoe, ne yet forgett  
 The care thereof my selfe unto the end,  
 But evermore him succour, and defend  
 Against his foe and mine : watch thou, I pray ;  
 For evill is at hand him to offend.”  
 So having said, eftsoones he gan display  
 His painted nimble wings, and vanisht quite away.

9.

The Palmer seeing his lefte empty place,  
 And his flow eies beguiled of their sight,  
 Woxe fore affraid, and standing still a space

---

<sup>b</sup> *God doth unto me arrett.*] *Appoint, allot.* Fr. *arrester, arrêter.*  
 See also F. Q. ii. xi. 7 ; iii. viii. 7. UPTON.



Gaz'd after him, as fowle escapt by flight.  
 At last, him turning to his charge behight,<sup>c</sup>  
 With trembling hand his troubled pulse gan try;  
 Where finding life not yet dislodged quight,  
 He much rejoyft, and courd it tenderly,<sup>d</sup>  
 As chicken newly hatcht, from dreaded destiny.

## 10.

At last he spide where towards him did pace  
 Two Paynim knights al armd as bright as skie,  
 And them beside an aged Sire did trace,  
 And far before a light-foote Page did flie,  
 That breathed strife and troublous enmitie.  
 Those were the two sonnes of Acrates old,  
 Who, meeting earst with Archimago flie  
 Foreby that idle strond, of him were told  
 That he which earst them combatted was Guyon bold.

## 11.

Which to avenge on him they dearly vowd,  
 Where ever that on ground they mote him find:  
 False Archimage provokte their corage prowde,  
 And stryful Atin in their stubborne mind  
 Coles of contention and whot vengeaunce tind.<sup>e</sup>

<sup>c</sup> *to his charge behight.*] To the charge *entrusted* to him. See the note on *bight*, F. Q. i. iv. 6. [Vol. i. p. 228]. TODD.

<sup>d</sup> *and courd it tenderly.*] And *protected* it, as a hen sits cowering over her young chicken. Skinner, "To *coure*, ab Ital. *covare*; Fr. *couver*, incubare; metaphora sumpta a gallinis ovis incubantibus." See Menage in v. *Couver*. But Junius brings it from the old British word, *cwrrian*. Milton applies this expression to the beasts bending or *cowering* down, "Par. Lost," B. viii. 530. But I believe Spenser uses it in the former sense, as Skinner and Menage explain it. In the Glossary, usually printed with Spenser's Works, it is said to be put for *covered*, as if corrupted from it. UPTON. May it not be urged that *cover*, and what we usually spell *cower*, are, in fact, the same? C.

<sup>e</sup> *and whot vengeaunce tind.*] To *tine* is to *kindle*, and figuratively to *excite*; A. S. *tendan*: we still use a substantive made from the verb viz. *tinder*. Somner would derive *teen*, sorrow, from the same A. S. source, but this seems more than doubtful. Spenser again uses "tind" in F. Q. B. iii. C. vii. St. 15. C.



Now bene they come whereas the Palmer fate,  
 Keeping that flombred corse to him affind :  
 Well knew they both his person, fith of late  
 With him in bloody armes they rashly did debate.

12.

Whom when Pyrochles saw, inflam'd with rage  
 That fire he fowl bespake : " Thou dotard vile,  
 That with thy brutenesse shendst thy comely age,<sup>f</sup>  
 Abandon soone, I read, the caytive spoile  
 Of that fame outcast carcass, that erewhile  
 Made it selfe famous through false trechery,  
 And crownd his coward crest with knightly stile ;  
 Loe ! where he now inglorious doth lye,  
 To proove he lived il that did thus fowly dye."

13.

To whom the Palmer fearlesse answered :  
 " Certes, Sir knight, ye bene too much to blame,  
 Thus for to blott the honor of the dead,  
 And with fowle cowardize his carcass shame,  
 Whose living handes immortalizd his name.  
 Vile is the vengeaunce on the ashes cold,  
 And envy base to barke at sleeping fame.  
 Was never wight that treason of him told :  
 Your self his prowesse prov'd, and found him fiers and  
 bold."

14.

Then sayd Cymochles : " Palmer, thou doest dote,  
 Ne canst of prowesse ne of knighthood deeme,  
 Save as thou seest or hearst. But well I wote,  
 That of his puissaunce tryall made extreeme :  
 Yet gold al is not that doth golden seeme ;  
 Ne all good knights that shake well speare and shield.

<sup>f</sup> *That with thy brutenesse shendst thy comely age.*] "Brutenesse" is, of course, *brutishness*, or *stupidity*; and one of the ordinary senses of to "shend" is to *disgrace*. C.



The worth of all men by their end esteeme,  
And then dew praise or dew reproch them yield :  
Bad therefore I him deeme that thus lies dead on field."

15.

"Good or bad," gan his brother fiers reply,  
"What doe I recke, sith that he dide entire?<sup>g</sup>  
Or what doth his bad death now satisfy  
The greedy hunger of revenging yre,  
Sith wrathfull hand wrought not her owne desire?  
Yet since no way is leste to wreake my spight,  
I will him reave of armes, the victors hire,  
And of that shield, more worthy of good knight;  
For why should a dead dog be deckt in armour bright?"

16.

"Fayr Sir," said then the Palmer suppliaunt,  
"For knighthoods love doe not so fowle a deed,  
Ne blame your honor with so shamefull vaunt  
Of vile revenge. To spoile the dead of weed  
Is sacrilege, and doth all finnes exceed :  
But leave these relicks of his living might  
To decke his herce, and trap his tomblacke steed."<sup>h</sup>  
"What herce or steed" (said he) "should he have dight,  
But be entombed in the raven or the kight?"<sup>i</sup>

<sup>g</sup> *sith that he dide entire.*] "Entire," not mangled, or wounded; as we say, *in a whole skin*. And *integer* is thus used by Statius, "*Sylv.*" L. II. i. 156.

"\_\_\_\_\_ Manesque subivit

"*Integer, et nullo temeratus corpora damno.*" UPTON.

<sup>h</sup> *To decke his herce, and trap his tomblacke steede.*] The horses of the dead knights were decked out with *black* trappings, and with their armour; and thus walked in solemn procession to the *tomb*, where their arms and knightly honours were hung up: hence he says, "tomb-black." *Herse* is used for the *tomb*. UPTON.

<sup>i</sup> *But be entombed in the raven or the kight.*] Gorgias Leontinus called vultures *living sepulchres*, γύπες ἐμψυχοὶ τάφοι for which he incurred the censure of Longinus; whether justly or no, I shall not say. JORTIN. Shakespeare ("*Macbeth*," A. iii. Sc. 4) speaks of "the maws of kites" as "monuments" of the dead. C.



17.

With that, rude hand upon his shield he laid,  
 And th' other brother gan his helme unlace,  
 Both fiercely bent to have him difaraid;  
 Till that they spyde where towards them did pace  
 An armed knight, of bold and bounteous grace,  
 Whose squire bore after him an heben launce  
 And coverd shield. Well kend him so far space  
 Th' enchaunter by his armes and amenaunce,<sup>k</sup>  
 When under him he saw his Lybian steed to prounce;

18.

And to those brethren sayd; "Rise, rise bylive,<sup>l</sup>  
 And unto batteil doe your selves addresse;  
 For yonder comes the prowest knight alive,  
 Prince Arthur, flowre of grace and nobilesse,  
 That hath to Paynim knights wrought gret distresse,  
 And thousand Sar'zins fowly donne to dye."  
 That word so deepe did in their harts impresse,  
 That both eftsoones upstarted furiously,  
 And gan themselves prepare to batteill greedily.

19.

But fiers Pyrochles, lacking his owne sword,  
 The want thereof now greatly gan to plaine,  
 And Archimage besought, him that afford  
 Which he had brought for Braggadochio vaine.  
 "So would I," (said th' enchaunter) "glad and faine  
 Beteeme to you this sword,<sup>m</sup> you to defend,  
 Or ought that els your honour might maintaine;  
 But that this weapons powre I well have kend  
 To be contrary to the worke which ye intend:

<sup>k</sup> *amenaunce.*] Carriage, behaviour. Fr. *amener*; Ital. *ammannare*.  
 See also F. Q. ii. ix. 5; iii. i. 41; iv. iii. 5. UPTON.

<sup>l</sup> *Rise, rise bylive.*] i. e. rise quickly, speedily. See vol. i. p. 110. C.

<sup>m</sup> *Beteeme to you this sword.*] The understood sense of "beteeme" is to *allow*, or *bestow*; and it seems so used by Shakespeare in "Midf. Night's Dream," A. i. Sc. 1. See also "Hamlet," A. i. Sc. 2. C.



20.

“ For that fame knights owne sword this is, of yore  
 Which Merlin made<sup>a</sup> by his almightie art  
 For that his nourling, when he knighthood swore,  
 Therewith to doen his foes eternall smart.  
 The metall first he mixt with Medæwart,  
 That no enchauntment from his dint might save;  
 Then it in flames of Aetna wrought apart,  
 And seven times dipped in the bitter wave  
 Of hellish Styx, which hidden vertue to it gave.

21.

“ The vertue is, that nether steele nor stone  
 The stroke thereof from entraunce may defend;  
 Ne ever may be used by his fone,  
 Ne forst his rightful owner to offend;  
 Ne ever will it breake, ne ever bend:  
 Wherefore *Morddure* it rightfully is hight.  
 In vaine therefore, Pyrochles, should I lend  
 The same to thee, against his lord to fight;  
 For sure yt would deceive thy labor and thy might.”

22.

“ Foolish old man,” said then the Pagan wroth,  
 “ That weeneſt words or charms may force with-  
 ſtand:  
 Soone ſhalt thou ſee, and then beleeeve for troth,  
 That I can carve with this inchaunted brond  
 His Lords owne fleſh.” Therewith out of his hond

---

<sup>a</sup> *Which Merlin made.*] “Merlin” mixt the metal with *medæwart*; that is, with the *wort* or herb called *medica*, concerning which ſee Virgil, Georg. i. 215. It availed againſt enchantments, and for this reaſon was uſed by Merlin. This ſword for its virtues was named *Morddure*: it bit hard and ſharp; from *mordre* to bite, and *dur*, hard; or from the Ital. *mordere*, to bite or wound, and *duramente*, cruelly, hardly. From this very quality Orlando’s ſword had its name; and was called *Durenda*, as Turpin writes in his “History of Charles the Great,” Ch. xxi. “*Durenda interpretatur durus iſtus.*” Hence Boyardo and Ariosto have called their heroes’ ſword, *Durlindana*. UPTON.



That vertuous steele he rudely snatcht away,  
 And Guyons shield about his wrest he bond :  
 So ready dight fierce battaile to assay,  
 And match his brother proud in battailous aray.

23.

By this, that straunger knight in presence came,  
 And goodly salued them ;<sup>o</sup> who nought againe  
 Him answered, as courtesie became ;  
 But with sterne lookes, and stomachous disdaine,  
 Gave signes of grudge and discontentment vaine.  
 Then, turning to the Palmer, he gan spy  
 Where at his feet, with sorrowfull demayne<sup>p</sup>  
 And deadly hew, an armed corse did lye,  
 In whose dead face he redd great magnanimity.

24.

Sayd he then to the Palmer : " Reverend Syre,  
 What great misfortune hath betidd this knight ?  
 Or did his life her fatall date expyre,  
 Or did he fall by treason, or by fight ?  
 How ever, sure I rew his pitteous plight."  
 " Not one, nor other," sayd the Palmer grave,  
 " Hath him befallne ; but cloudes of deadly night  
 A while his heavy eylids cover'd have,  
 And all his fences drowned in deep sencelesse wave.

25.

" Which those his cruell foes,<sup>a</sup> that stand hereby,

<sup>o</sup> *And goodly salued them.*] *Saluted* them courteously. It occurs in the form of "falewd" in *F. Q. B. iv. C. vi. St. 25*, yet some editors have here printed the word *salved*. It is from the Fr. *saluer*, and that, of course, from the Latin. It occurs as *faleweth* in Chaucer ("Kn. Tale," edit. Tyrr. v. 1494,) and in Gower, ("Conf. Amantis,") as *salu*. Todd.

<sup>p</sup> *demayne.*] *Demeanour*, or *appearance*. Elsewhere (*F. Q. B. vi. C. vi. St. 18*) Spenser spells it more correctly "demeane," but here he distorts the word a little for rhyme sake. C.

<sup>a</sup> *Which those his cruell foes, &c.*] Corrected from the errata, subjoined to the first edition. In the first and second editions, the verse wants a foot, and reads,—



Making advauntage, to revenge their spight,  
 Would him difarme and treaten shamefully ;  
 Unworthie ufage of redoubted knight.  
 But you, faire Sir, whose honourable fight  
 Doth promise hope of helpe and timely grace,  
 Mote I beseech to succour his sad plight,  
 And by your powre protect his feeble cace ?  
 First prayse of knighthood is fowle outrage to deface."

26.

"Palmer," (said he) "no knight so rude, I weene,  
 As to doen outrage to a sleeping ghost ;  
 Ne was there ever noble corage seene,  
 That in advauntage would his puiffaunce boft :  
 Honour is least where oddes appeareth most.  
 May bee, that better reason will aswage  
 The rash revengers heat. Words, well disposed,  
 Have secreete powre t' appease inflamed rage :  
 If not, leave unto me thy knights last patronage."

27.

Tho, turning to those brethren, thus bespoke :  
 "Ye warlike payre, whose valorous great might,  
 It seemes, just wronges to vengeaunce doe provoke,  
 To wreake your wrath on this dead seeming knight,  
 Mote ought allay the storme of your despight,  
 And settle patience in so furious heat ?  
 Not to debate the challenge of your right,  
 But for his carkas pardon I entreat,  
 Whom fortune hath already laid in lowest feat."

28.

To whom Cymochles said ; "For what art thou,

"Which those *same* foes, that stand hereby,  
 "Making advauntage," &c.

The folios, without referring to the poet's own direction, offer a supposed emendation :

"Which those same foes, that *doen awaite* hereby—" TODD.



That mak'ſt thy ſelfe his dayes-man,<sup>r</sup> to prolong  
 The vengeance preſt?<sup>s</sup> Or who ſhall let me now  
 On this vile body from to wreak my wrong,<sup>t</sup>  
 And made his carkas as the outcaſt dong?  
 Why ſhould not that dead carrion ſatisfye  
 The guilt which, if he lived had thus long,  
 His life for dew revenge ſhould deare aby?<sup>u</sup>  
 The trefpaſs ſtill doth live, albee the perſon dye.”

29.

“ Indeed,” then ſaid the Prince, “ the evill donne  
 Dyes not, when breath the body firſt doth leave;  
 But from the grandſyre to the Nephewes ſonne,  
 And all his ſeede the curſe doth often cleave,  
 Till vengeance utterly the guilt bereave:  
 So ſtreightly God doth judge. But gentle Knight,  
 That doth againſt the dead his hand upheave,<sup>x</sup>  
 His honour ſtaines with rancour and deſpight,  
 And great diſparagment makes to his former might.”

---

<sup>r</sup> *his dayes-man.*] *Arbitrator*, or *judge*. So, in Wickliffe's tranſlation of the New Teſtament, 1 Cor. iv. 3. “ Mannys dai” is the *judgment* of men, as Mr. Upton has noticed; and, as Mr. Church adds, *day* is the preſent marginal reading of that paſſage. Todd. The verb to “ day,” that is to *judge*, is uſed by our old poets, but it is not found in our dictionaries: thus in J. Heywood's “ Spider and Fly,” 1556, K. iiii.

“ Or bring a certentie, for any ſaying,  
 To an uncertentie by dowlfull *daying*.”

And in T. Lupton's “ All for Money,” 1578:

“ Few blinde matters but I muſt be at their *daying*:  
 If I ſpeake the word, it is done without praying.” C.

<sup>s</sup> *The vengeance preſt.*] *Ready at hand*, or *ſudden*. No old word can be more common: from the Fr. *prêt*. C.

<sup>t</sup> *from to wreak my wrong.*] A Greciſm, ἀπὸ τοῦ τίσασθαι, *from wreaking*. Who ſhall now *hinder me from revenging* my wrongs on this vile body? UPTON.

<sup>u</sup> *ſhould deare aby.*] Or *abide*. Some etymologiſts would make “aby” and *abide* different words: ſee Shakeſpeare's “ Midſ. N. Dream,” A. iii. Sc. 2, edit. Collier, ii. 223. 228. C.

<sup>x</sup> *his hand upheave.*] All old copies read *upreare*; but Drayton altered it to “ upheave,” in his folio 1611. C.



30.

Pyrochles gan reply the second tyme,  
 And to him said: "Now, felon, sure I read,  
 How that thou art partaker of his cryme:  
 Therefore, by Termagaunt<sup>y</sup> thou shalt be dead."  
 With that his hand, more sad then lomp of lead,  
 Uplifting high, he weened with Morddure,  
 His owne good sword Morddure, to cleave his head.  
 The faithfull steele such treason no'uld endure,  
 But, swarving from the marke, his Lordes life did assure.

31.

Yet was the force so furious and so fell,  
 That horse and man it made to reele asyde:  
 Nath'lesse the Prince would not forsake his fell,  
 For well of yore he learned had to ryde,  
 But full of anger fierfly to him cryde;  
 "False traitour! miscreant! thou broken hast  
 The law of armes to strike foe undefide:  
 But thou thy treasons fruit, I hope, shalt taste  
 Right sowre, and feele the law the which thou hast defast."

32.

With that his balefull speare he fiercely bent  
 Against the Pagons brest, and therewith thought  
 His cursed life out of her lodg have rent;  
 But ere the point arrived where it ought,

<sup>y</sup> *Therefore, by Termagaunt.*] In the 33rd Stanza, the oath is, *By Maboune*: they are generally joined together in the old romances. *Termagaunt* is the god of the Saracens, and *Maboune* is Mahomet; and they are often coupled, as in *F. Q. B. vi. C. vii. St. 47.*

"And oftentimes by Turmagant and Mahound swore."  
 They both often figure, or are sworn by, in our most ancient dramatic performances. *Todd. Hall*, perhaps, points out our author in the following verses, *Sat. B. i. S. i.*

"Nor fright the reader with the Pagan vaunt  
 Of mightie Mahound or great Termagaunt."

*T. Warton.* It may be doubted whether *Hall* had any particular poet in view—least of all *Spenfer*. *C.*



That seven fold shield, which he from Guyon brought,  
 He cast between to ward the bitter stownd:  
 Through all those foldes the steelehead passage  
     wrought,  
 And through his shoulder perst; wherwith to ground  
 He groveling fell, all gored in his gushing wound.

33.

Which when his brother saw, fraught with great griefe  
 And wrath, he to him leaped furiously,  
 And fowly saide: "By Mahoune, cursed thiefe,  
 That direfull stroke thou dearely shalt aby:"  
 Then, hurling up his harmefull blade on hy,  
 Smote him so hugely on his haughtie crest,  
 That from his saddle forced him to fly;  
 Els mote it needes downe to his manly brest  
 Have cleft his head in twaine, and life thence dispossess.

34.

Now was the Prince in daungerous distresse,  
 Wanting his sword when he on foot should fight:  
 His single speare could doe him small redresse  
 Against two foes of so exceeding might,  
 The least of which was match for any knight.  
 And now the other, whom he earst did daunt,  
 Had reard him selfe againe to cruel fight  
 Three times more furious and more puissaunt,  
 Unmindfull of his wound, of his fate ignoraunt.

35.

So both attonce him charge on either fyde  
 With hideous strokes and importable powre,<sup>z</sup>  
 That forced him his ground to traverse wyde,  
 And wisely watch to ward that deadly stowre;

---

<sup>z</sup> *and importable powre.*] i. e. *insupportable* power. So in "Much Ado about Nothing," (Collier's Shakespeare, 1858, ii. 27.) Benedick speaks of Beatrice's "importable jests," the usual text having been *impossible*. "Importable" is used also by Chaucer. C.



For in his shield,<sup>a</sup> as thicke as stormie showre,  
 Their strokes did raine: yet did he never quaile,  
 Ne backward shrink, but as a stedfast towre,  
 Whom foe with double battry doth assaile,  
 Them on her bulwarke beares, and bids them nought  
 availe.

36.

So stoutly he withstood their strong assay;  
 Till that at last, when he advantage spyde,  
 His poynant speare he thrust with puissant sway  
 At proud Cymochles, whiles his shield was wyde,  
 That through his thigh the mortall steele did gryde:<sup>b</sup>  
 He, swarving with the force, within his flesh  
 Did breake the lance, and let the head abyde.  
 Out of the wound the red blood flowed fresh,  
 That underneath his feet soone made a purple plesh.<sup>c</sup>

37.

Horribly then he gan to rage and rayle,  
 Curfing his Gods, and him selfe damning deepe:  
 Als when his brother saw the redblood rayle<sup>d</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *For in his shield.*] Of old the prepositions "in" and *on* were often employed indifferently: here the two 4tos. published in Spenser's lifetime read, "in his shield," which was altered in 1609 to "*on* his shield." The latter has been preferred by Todd and other modern editors, but we see every reason for adhering to the oldest text, which might be supported by various examples. C.

<sup>b</sup> *the mortall steele did gryde.*] *Pierce*, or *cut*. See T. Warton's note on *gride*, "Shep. Cal." for Feb. vol. i. p. 21. C.

<sup>c</sup> *a purple plesh.*] The old word is *plash*, spelt "plesh" by Spenser for the sake of the rhyme: we now say *splash*. We do not find any instance of the use of *splash* prior to the reign of Anne. C.

<sup>d</sup> *the redblood rayle.*] So the 4tos. 1590 and 1596; but the word is injudiciously changed to *traile* in later impressions. That "rayle" was the poet's word, we have his own evidence, independently of the text here of the two earliest impressions; for in B. i. C. vi. St. 43, vol. i. p. 279, we read,

"Large floods of blood adowne their sides did *raile*."

It is no objection that "rayle" is made to rhyme with the same word two lines above; for such, as Todd observes, was the frequent practice with Spenser, and some of his contemporaries, who, in this respect and others, imitated the Italian poets. C.



Adowne so fast, and all his armour steepe,  
 For very felnesse lowd he gan to weepe,  
 And said; "Caytive, curse on thy cruell hond,  
 That twise hath spedd; yet shall it not thee keepe  
 From the third brunt of this my fatall brond:  
 Lo! where the dreadfull Death behynd thy backe doth  
 stond."

38.

With that he strooke, and thother strooke withall,  
 That nothing seemd mote beare so monstrous might:  
 The one upon his covered shield did fall,  
 And glauncing downe would not his owner byte;  
 But th' other did upon his troncheon smyte,  
 Which hewing quite asunder, further way  
 It made, and on his hacqueton did lyte,<sup>e</sup>  
 The which dividing with importune sway,  
 It seizd in his right side, and there the dint did stay.

39.

Wyde was the wound, and a large lukewarme flood,  
 Red as the Rose, thence gushed grievously;  
 That when the Paynym spyde the streaming blood,  
 Gave him great hart and hope of victory.  
 On th' other side, in huge perplexity  
 The Prince now stood, having his weapon broke;  
 Nought could he hurt, but still at warde did ly:  
 Yet with his troncheon he so rudely stroke  
 Cymochles twise, that twise him forst his foot revoke.

40.

Whom when the Palmer saw in such distresse,  
 Sir Guyon's sword he lightly to him raught,  
 And said; "Fayre Sonne, great God thy right hand  
 bleffe,

---

<sup>e</sup> on his hacqueton did lyte.] The stuffed jacket worn under the armour. The Black Prince's *hacqueton*, composed of quilted cotton, is yet to be seen in Canterbury cathedral. The *hacqueton* was sometimes made of leather. TODD.



To use that sword so well as he it ought!"<sup>f</sup>  
 Glad was the knight, and with fresh courage fraught,  
 When as againe he armed felt his hond:  
 Then like a Lyon, which hath longtime faught<sup>g</sup>  
 His robbed whelpes, and at the last them fond  
 Emongst the shepeheard fwaynes, then wexeth wood and  
 yond:<sup>h</sup>

41.

So fierce he laid about him, and dealt blowes  
 On either side, that neither mayle could hold,  
 Ne shield defend the thunder of his throwes:  
 Now to Pyrochles many strokes he told;  
 Eft to Cymochles twise so many fold;  
 Then, backe againe turning his busie hond,  
 Them both atonce compeld with courage bold  
 To yield wide way to his hart-thrilling brond;  
 And though they both stood stiffe, yet could not both  
 withstond.

42.

As salvage Bull, whom two fierce mastives bayt,  
 When rancour doth with rage him once engore,  
 Forgets with wary warde them to awayt,  
 But with his dreadfull hornes them drives afore,  
 Or flings aloft, or treads downe in the flore,  
 Breathing out wrath, and bellowing disdaine,

---

<sup>f</sup> *so well as he it ought.*] That is, so well as *the owner* of it could have used it. This is the reading of the first edition. The second reads, "*so wisely as it ought;*" and is followed by Hughes, and the edition of 1751. The folios read, "*so wisely as it aught.*" CHURCH.

<sup>g</sup> *which hath longtime faught.*] Todd and other modern editors, in defiance of all the old impressions, read in the past tense, "*which had long time faught.*" C.

<sup>h</sup> *then wexeth wood and yond.*] "Wood" is, of course, *mad*, or *wild*; and "yond" means *outrageous*, *beyond*, or perhaps *more than* "wood." Spenser has the word again in F. Q. B. iii. C. vii. St. 26; but possibly not in the same sense, for "yond" may there mean only *yonder*, where we are told that Florimell "*fled from the monster yond:*" Fairfax, however, in his translation of Tasso, has "*fierce and yond.*" C



That all the forest quakes to hear him rore :  
 So rag'd Prince Arthur twixt his foemen twaine,  
 That neither could his mightie puiſſaunce ſuſtaine.

43.

But ever at Pyrochles when he ſmitt,  
 Who Guyons ſhield caſt ever him before,  
 Whereon the Faery Queenes pourtraict was writt,  
 His hand relented and the ſtroke forbore,  
 And his deare hart the picture gan adore ;  
 Which oft the Paynim fav'd from deadly ſtowre :  
 But him henceforth the ſame can ſave no more ;  
 For now arrived is his fatall howre,  
 That no'te avoyded be by earthly ſkill or powre.

44.

For when Cymochles ſaw the fowle reproch,  
 Which them appeached,<sup>i</sup> prickt with guiltie ſhame  
 And inward grieve, he fiercely gan approach,  
 Refolv'd to put away that lothly blame,  
 Or dye with honour and deſert of fame ;  
 And on the haubergh<sup>k</sup> ſtroke the Prince ſo fore,  
 That quite diſparted all the linked frame,  
 And pierced to the ſkin, but bit no more ;<sup>l</sup>  
 Yet made him twiſe to reele, that never moov'd afore.

45.

Whereat renfierſt with wrath and ſharp regret,  
 He ſtroke ſo hugely with his borrowd blade,

<sup>i</sup> *appeached.*] *Censured, or impeached, [i. e. accused.]* See the note on *appeached*, F. Q. v. ix. 47. TODD.

<sup>k</sup> *haubergh.*] *A coat of mail, without sleeves, made of plate or of chain-mail.* TODD.

<sup>l</sup> *but bit no more.*] So the ſecond edition reads, to which every ſubſequent old edition has adhered ; the firſt having “but bit *not thore*.” The word *thore* may be often found, indeed, in old Engliſh poetry for *there* ; or it might perhaps have been here intended for *thorough*. Yet the ſecond reading, as Mr. Upton obſerves, ſeems to be the poet's own emendation. TODD. Yet ſee juſt above, “can ſave no more.” C.



That it empierst the Pagans burganet;<sup>m</sup>  
 And, cleaving the hard steele, did deepe invade  
 Into his head, and cruell passage made  
 Quite through his brayne. He, tombling downe on  
 ground,  
 Breath'd out his ghost, which, to th' infernall shade  
 Fast flying, there eternall torment found  
 For all the finnes wherewith his lewd life did abound.

46.

Which when his german saw, the stony feare  
 Ran to his hart, and all his sence dismayd,  
 Ne thenceforth life ne corage did appeare;  
 But as a man whom hellish feendes have frayd,  
 Long trembling still he stoode: at last thus sayd;  
 "Traytour, what hast thou doen? How ever may  
 Thy cursed hand so cruelly have swayd  
 Against that knight! Harrow and well away!  
 After so wicked deede why liv'st thou lenger day?"

47.

With that all desperate, as loathing light,  
 And with revenge desyring soone to dye,  
 Assembling all his force and utmost might,  
 With his owne swerd he fierce at him did flye,  
 And strooke, and foynd, and lasht outrageously,  
 Withouten reason or regard. Well knew  
 The Prince, with pacience and sufferaunce fly  
 So hasty heat soone cooled to subdew:  
 Tho, when this breathlesse woxe, that batteil gan renew.<sup>n</sup>

<sup>m</sup> *burganet.*] Fr. *bourguignote*; a Spanish murrion, or steel head-piece. CHURCH. "Empierst" is *empieft* in the 4to. 1590. C.

<sup>n</sup> *Tho, when this breathlesse woxe, that batteil gan renew.*] Such is the text of all the early editions from 1590 to 1611; but Upton states that the folio 1611 reads, "Tho when *he* breathlesse woxe," &c. This is an error, for the folios 1609 and 1611 present us with precisely the same reading as the earlier 4to. impressions. C.



48.

As when a windy tempest bloweth hye,  
 That nothing may withstand his stormy stowre,  
 The clowdes, as thinges affrayd, before him flye;  
 But all so soone as his outrageous powre  
 Is layd, they fiercely then begin to showre;  
 And, as in scorne of his spent stormy spight,  
 Now all attonce their malice forth do poure:  
 So did Prince Arthur<sup>o</sup> beare himselfe in fight,  
 And suffred rash Pyrochles waste his ydle might.

49.

At last, whenas the Sarazin perceiv'd  
 How that straunge sword refusd to serve his neede,  
 But when he stroke most strong the dint deceiv'd,  
 He flong it from him; and, devoyd of dread,  
 Upon him lightly leaping without heed  
 Twixt his two mighty armes engrasped fast,  
 Thinking to overthrowe and downe him tre[e]d:  
 But him in strength and skill the Prince surpast,  
 And through his nimble sleight did under him down cast.

50.

Nought booted it the Paynim then to strive;  
 For as a Bittur in the Eagles clawe,  
 That may not hope by flight to scape alive,  
 Still waytes for death with dread and trembling aw;  
 So he, now subject to the victours law,  
 Did not once move, nor upward cast his eye,

---

<sup>o</sup> *So did Prince Arthur.*] It is *Sir Guyon* in the 4to. 1590, and it is singular that so obvious a misprint should have been continued in the 4to. 1596: it was not corrected in print until 1609; but in a copy of the 4to. 1590, in our hands, formerly belonging to John Marston, the dramatist, as attested by his signature, "Prince Arthur" is written in the margin. On the preceding page, opposite the words—

"He tombling downe on ground,  
 Breathd out his ghost,"

Marston also wrote in the margin the words, *vitam cum gemitu*. His MS. notes are few and unimportant. C.



For vile disdaine and rancour, which did gnaw  
His hart in twaine with sad melancholy ;  
As one that loathed life, and yet despyd to dye.

51.

But full of princely bounty and great mind,  
The Conquerour nought cared him to slay ;  
But casting wronges and all revenge behind,  
More glory thought to give life then decay,  
And sayd ; “ Paynim, this is thy dismall day ;  
Yet if thou wilt renounce thy miscreaunce,  
And my trew liegeman yield thy selfe for ay,  
Life will I graunt thee for thy valiaunce,  
And all thy wronges will wipe out of my fovenauce.”

52.

“ Foole !” (sayd the Pagan) “ I thy gift defye,  
But use thy fortune as it doth befall ;  
And say, that I not overcome doe dye,  
But in despight of life for death doe call.”  
Wroth was the Prince, and fory yet withall,  
That he so wilfully refused grace ;  
Yet sith his fate so cruelly did fall,  
His shining Helmet he gan soone unlace,  
And left his headlesse body bleeding all the place.

53.

By this Sir Guyon from his traunce awakt,  
Life having maystered her sencelesse foe,  
And looking up, whenas his shield he lakt  
And sword saw not, he wexed wondrous woe ;  
But when the Palmer, whom he long ygoe  
Had lost, he by him spyde, right glad he grew,  
And saide ; “ Deare fir,<sup>p</sup> whom wandring to and fro

---

<sup>p</sup> *And saide ; “ Deare fir.”*] Jortin tells us that “ Deare fir ” is the reading of the folio 1679, and of Hughes : the fact is that it is the reading of every old copy, from which there is no pretext for varying, and altering “ fir ” to *fire*, as has been done by some editors. C.



I long have lackt, I joy thy face to vew:  
Firme is thy faith, whom daunger never fro me drew.

54.

“But read, what wicked hand hath robbed mee  
Of my good sword and shield?” The Palmer, glad  
With so fresh hew uprysing him to see,  
Him answered: “Fayre sonne, be no whit sad  
For want of weapons; they shall soone be had.”  
So gan he to discourse the whole debate,  
Which that straunge knight for him sustained had,  
And those two Sarazins confounded late,  
Whose carcafes on ground were horribly prostrate.

55.

Which when he heard, and saw the tokens trew,  
His hart with great affection was embayd,  
And to the Prince, with bowing reverence dew  
As to the patrone of his life, thus sayd;  
“My Lord, my liege, by whose most gracious ayd  
I live this day, and see my foes subdewd,  
What may suffice to be for meede repayd  
Of so great graces as ye have me shewd,  
But to be ever bound”<sup>a</sup>

56.

To whom the Infant<sup>r</sup> thus; “Fayre Sir, what need

<sup>a</sup> *But to be ever bound.*] I am inclined to think that the poet never intended to fill up this hemistich. The speech of Sir Guyon is plainly unfinished: the Prince breaks in upon him, “Fayre Sir,” &c. CHURCH. Drayton does not seem to have been of this opinion: he put two crosses in the margin of his folio 1611, and drew a long line after the word “bound,” as if to indicate the absence of what he could not supply. C.

<sup>r</sup> *To whom the Infant.*] That is, *the Prince*. In the old times of chivalry, the noble youth who were candidates for knighthood, during the time of their probation were called *Infans*, *Varlets*, *Damoysels*, *Bacheliers*, &c. The most noble of the youth were particularly called *Infans*. WARBURTON. Spenser has here employed the word in the sense of Prince, which is the Spanish signification of it. And thus Fairfax, B. xvi. 34 of Rinaldo:—



Good turnes be counted as a fervile bond  
 To bind their dooers to receive their meed?  
 Are not all knightes by oath bound to withstond  
 Oppressours powre by armes and puissant hond?  
 Suffise, that I have done my dew in place."  
 So goodly purpose<sup>s</sup> they together fond  
 Of kindnesse and of courteous aggrace;  
 The whiles false Archimage and Atin fled apace.

---

"This said, the noble Infant stood a space  
 Confused, speechlesse," &c. TODD.

The original words of Tasso are *il nobil garzon*. C.

<sup>s</sup> *So goodly purpose.*] "Purpose," here as in some other places, is *discourse* or *conversation*: the same as *propose*. See this vol. p. 175. C.







## CANTO IX.

*The house of Temperance, in which  
doth sober Alma dwell,  
Besiegd of many foes, whom straunger  
knightes to flight compell.*

I.



F all Gods workes which doe this worlde  
adorne,  
There is no one more faire and excellent  
Then is mans body, both for powre and  
forme,  
Whiles it is kept in sober government ;  
But none then it more fowle and indecent,<sup>a</sup>  
Distempred through misrule and passions bace ;  
It grows a Monster, and incontinent  
Doth loose his dignity and native grace :  
Behold, who list, both one and other in this place.

2.

After the Paynim brethren conquer'd were,  
The Briton Prince recov'ring his stolne sword,  
And Guyon his lost shield, they both yfere  
Forth passed on their way in fayre accord,

---

<sup>a</sup> *more fowle and indecent.*] The accent, we need hardly say, must here be laid on the first syllable of "indecent." It is perhaps this peculiarity which led the printer of the 4to. 1590 to blunder by putting *incedent* for "indecent:" the error is set right at the end of that impression, and it was never repeated. C.



Till him the Prince with gentle court did bord :  
 " Sir knight, mote I of you this court'sy read,  
 To weet why on your shield, so goodly scord,  
 Beare ye the picture of that Ladies head ?  
 Full lively is the semblaunt, though the substance dead."

3.

" Fayre Sir," (sayd he) " if in that picture dead  
 Such life ye read, and vertue in vaine shew ;  
 What mote ye weene, if the trew lively-head  
 Of that most glorious visage ye did vew :  
 But yf the beauty of her mind ye knew,  
 That is, her bounty, and imperiall powre,  
 Thousand times fairer then her mortall hew,  
 O ! how great wonder would your thoughts devoure,  
 And infinite desire into your spirite poure."

4.

" Shee is the mighty Queene of Faery,  
 Whose faire retraits<sup>b</sup> I in my shield doe beare ;  
 Shee is the flowre of grace and chastity  
 Throughout the world, renowned far and neare,  
 My liefse, my liege, my Soveraine, my deare,<sup>c</sup>  
 Whose glory shineth as the morning starre,  
 And with her light the earth enlumines cleare :  
 Far reach her mercies, and her praises farre,  
 As well in state of peace, as puissance in warre."

5.

" Thrife happy man," (said then the Briton knight)  
 " Whom gracious lott and thy great valiaunce

<sup>b</sup> *Whose faire retraits.*] *Picture, portrait.* Ital. *ritratto.* CHURCH.

<sup>c</sup> *My liefse, my liege, my Soveraine, my deare.*] Todd arbitrarily reads,

" My *Life*, my *Liege*, my *Soveraine*, my *Deare*,"

without the slightest authority from any old copy, and misleading subsequent editors. Mr. Child has, however, avoided the substitution of *Life* for " liefse." The word " liefse," for a person beloved, was so extremely common in the time of Spenser, that it is quite needless to cite instances of its employment. See this vol. p. 8. C.



Have made thee foldier of that Princeſſe bright,  
Which with her bounty and glad countenance  
Doth bleſſe her ſervaunts, and them high advaunce.  
How may ſtraunge knight hope ever to aſpire,  
By faithfull ſervice and meete amenaunce,<sup>d</sup>  
Unto ſuch bliſſe? ſufficient were that hire  
For loſſe of thouſand lives, to die at her deſire.”

6.

Said Guyon, “ Noble Lord, what meed ſo great,  
Or grace of earthly Prince ſo ſoveraine,  
But by your wondrous worth and warlike feat  
Ye well may hope, and eaſely attaine?  
But were your will her ſold to entertaine,<sup>e</sup>  
And numbred be mongſt knights of Maydenhed,  
Great guerdon, well I wote, ſhould you remaine,  
And in her favor high bee reckoned,  
As Arthegall and Sophy<sup>f</sup> now beene honored.”

7.

“ Certes,” (then ſaid the Prince) “ I God avow,  
That ſith I armes and knighthood firſt did plight,  
My whole deſire hath beene, and yet is now,  
To ſerve that Queene with al my powre and might.  
Seven times the Sunne,<sup>g</sup> with his lamp-burning light,

<sup>d</sup> *and meete amenaunce.*] i. e. and fit conduct, demeanour. C.

<sup>e</sup> *But were your will her ſold to entertaine.*] *To receive her pay.*  
Fr. *solde*, a ſoldier's pay. CHURCH.

<sup>f</sup> *Arthegall and Sophy.*] *Arthegall* and *Sophy* are mentioned here to raiſe a curioſity of further inquiry in the reader; which curioſity the poet intended to answer hereafter: “ *Arthegall* ” we ſhall read of often; and “ *Sophy*,” I make no doubt, was intended to be the hero of ſome other book in this poem: he was the ſon of king Gulicke of North Wales. See Drayton's “ *Polyolbion*,” Song xxiv. UPRON. “ *Arthegall* ” is ſpelt *Arthogall* in the 4to. 1590, but not afterwards. C.

<sup>g</sup> *Seven times the Sunne.*] So the 4to. 1590; but in the 4to. 1596 it is ſimply “ *Now bath the Sunne.* ” Neither reading is ſtrictly reconcilable with what follows in other places, and it is not to be ſuppoſed that Spenser thought the point of much conſequence. All he meant, probably, was to indicate that for a certain period the Prince had been



Walkte round about the world, and I no lesse,  
 Sith of that Goddesse I have fought the fight,  
 Yet no where can her find: such happinesse  
 Heven doth to me envy, and fortune favourlesse."

8.

"Fortune, the foe of famous chevifaunce,<sup>h</sup>  
 "Seldom" (said Guyon) "yields to vertue aide,  
 But in her way throwes mischief and mischaunce,  
 Whereby her course is stopt and passage staid:  
 But you, faire Sir, be not herewith dismaid,  
 But constant keepe the way in which ye stand;  
 Which, were it not that I am els delaid  
 With hard adventure which I have in hand,  
 I labour would to guide you through al Fary land."

9.

"Gramercy Sir," said he; "but mote I weete<sup>i</sup>  
 What straunge adventure doe ye now pursue?  
 Perhaps my succour or advizement meete  
 Mote stead you much your purpose to subdew."  
 Then gan Sir Guyon all the story shew  
 Of false Acrasia, and her wicked wiles;  
 Which to avenge the Palmer him forth drew  
 From Faery court. So talked they, the whiles  
 They wasted had much way, and measurd many miles.

10.

And now faire Phoebus gan decline in haste  
 His weary wagon to the Westerne vale,  
 Whenas they spide a goodly castle, plaste

---

in earnest search of the Faery Queene. It scarcely requires remark that in the last line of the Stanza, "envy" is to be read, as was usual in the time of our poet, with the accent on the second syllable. C.

<sup>h</sup> *Fortune, the foe of famous chevifaunce.*] "Chevifaunce" is *enterprise*; from the Fr. *cheviffaunce*. TODD.

<sup>i</sup> *but mote I weete.*] The rhyme here detects the misprint of *wote* (followed, however, in all the old copies) for "weete;" which last Drayton substituted in his copy of the folio 1611. C.



Foreby a river in a pleasaunt dale ;  
 Which choofing for that evenings hospitale,  
 They thether marcht: but when they came in fight,  
 And from their sweaty Courfers did avale,<sup>k</sup>  
 They found the gates fast barred long ere night,  
 And every loup fast lockt, as fearing foes despight.

*Just loup.*

11.

Which when they saw, they weened fowle reproch  
 Was to them doen, their entraunce to forestall,  
 Till that the Squire gan nigher to approach,  
 And wind his horne under the castle wall,  
 That with the noise it shooke as it would fall.  
 Eftsoones forth looked from the highest spire  
 The watch, and lowd unto the knights did call,  
 To weete what they so rudely did require?  
 Who gently answered, They entraunce did desire.

12.

“Fly fly, good knights,” (said he) “fly fast away,  
 If that your lives ye love, as meete ye should ;  
 Fly fast, and save your selves from neare decay ;  
 Here may ye not have entraunce, though we would :  
 We would, and would againe, if that we could ;  
 But thousand enemies about us rave,  
 And with long siege us in this castle hould.  
 Seven yeares this wize they us besieged have,  
 And many good knights flaine that have us fought to  
 save.”

13.

Thus as he spoke, loe ! with outrageous cry  
 A thousand villeins rownd about them swarmd  
 Out of the rockes and caves adjoyning nye ;  
 Vile caitive wretches, ragged, rude, deformd,  
 All threatning death, all in straunge manner armd ;

<sup>k</sup> *did avale.*] We have already had the verb to “avale,” used in the sense of to *descend*, vol. i. 19. 111. Here, of course, it means *alight*. C.



Some with unweldy clubs, some with long speares,  
 Some rusty knives, some staves in fier warmd :  
 Sterne was their looke ; like wild amazed steares,  
 Staring with hollow eies, and stiffe upstanding heares.

14.

Fierfly at first those knights they did assayle,  
 And drove them to recoile ; but when againe  
 They gave fresh charge, their forces gan to fayle,  
 Unhable their encounter to sustaine ;  
 For with such puissaunce and impetuous maine  
 Those Champions broke on them, that forst them fly,  
 Like scattered Sheepe, whenas the Shepherds fwaine  
 A Lyon and a Tigre doth espye,  
 With greedy pace forth rushing from the forest nye.

15.

A while they fled, but soone retournd againe  
 With greater fury then before was fownd ;  
 And evermore their cruell Capitaine<sup>1</sup>  
 Sought with his raskall routs t'enclose them rownd,  
 And, overronne, to tread them to the grownd :  
 But soone the knights with their brightburning blades  
 Broke their rude troupes, and orders did confownd,  
 Hewing and flashing at their idle shades ;  
 For though they bodies seem, yet substaunce from them  
 fades.

16.

As when a swarme of Gnats at eventide  
 Out of the fennes of Allan doe arise,  
 Their murmuring small trompetts sownden wide,  
 Whiles in the aire their clustring army flies,  
 That as a cloud doth seeme to dim the skies ;  
 Ne man nor beast may rest, or take repast

---

<sup>1</sup> *Capitaine.*] So all the editions, except Spenser's own ; which read *Captaine*, [most probably] a blunder of the press. CHURCH.



For their sharpe wounds and noyous injuries,  
 Till the fierce Northerne wind with bluftring blast  
 Doth blow them quite away, and in the Ocean cast.

17.

Thus when they had that troublous rout disperft,  
 Unto the castle gate they come againe,  
 And entraunce crav'd which was denied erst.  
 Now when report of that their perlous paine,  
 And combrous conflict which they did sustaine,  
 Came to the Ladies eare which there did dwell,  
 Shee forth iffewed with a goodly traine  
 Of Squires and Ladies equipaged well,  
 And entertained them right fairely, as befell.

18.

Alma she called was; a virgin bright,  
 That had not yet felt Cupides wanton rage;  
 Yet was shee woo'd of many a gentle knight,  
 And many a Lord of noble parentage,  
 That fought with her to lincke in marriage:  
 For shee was faire as faire mote ever bee,  
 And in the flowre now of her freshest age;  
 Yet full of grace and goodly modestee,  
 That even heven rejoyced her sweete face to see.

19.

In robe of lilly white she was arayd,  
 That from her shoulder to her heele downe raught;  
 The traine whereof loose far behind her strayd,  
 Braunched with gold and perle most richly wrought,  
 And borne of two faire Damsels which were taught  
 That service well. Her yellow golden heare  
 Was trimly woven and in tresses wrought,  
 Ne other tire she on her head did weare,  
 But crowned with a garland of sweete Rosiere.<sup>m</sup>

---

<sup>m</sup> of sweete Rosiere.] *The rose-tree.* So Chaucer, p. 236, edit. Urr.  
 CHURCH.



## 20.

Goodly shee entertained those noble knights,  
 And brought them up into her castle hall;  
 Where gentle court and gracious delight  
 Shee to them made, with mildnesse virginall,  
 Shewing her selfe both wise and liberall.  
 Then, when they rested had a season dew,  
 They her besought of favour speciall  
 Of that faire Castle to affoord them vew:  
 Shee graunted; and, them leading forth, the same did shew.

## 21.

First she them led<sup>n</sup> up to the Castle wall,  
 That was so high as foe might not it clime,  
 And all so faire and fensible<sup>o</sup> withall;  
 Not built of bricke, ne yet of stone and lime,  
 But of thing like to that Ægyptian slime,  
 Whereof king Nine whilome built Babell towre.  
 But O great pitty! that no lenger time  
 So goodly workmanship should not endure:  
 Soone it must turne to earth; no earthly thing is sure.

## 22.

The frame thereof seemd partly circularre,  
 And part triangulare; O worke divine!  
 Those two the first and last proportions are;  
 The one imperfect, mortall, fœminine,

<sup>n</sup> *First she them led.*] It is "*him led*" in the 4to. 1590 only: all other impressions properly read "*them*." It may be worth noting that in "*England's Parnassus*," where this passage is quoted, the text is neither *him* nor "*them*," but *then*; a clear misprint. C.

<sup>o</sup> *fensible.*] This is the reading of the first edition, to which Mr. Church, Mr. Upton, and Tonson's edition of 1758, have adhered. The second edition reads *sensible*, which the rest have followed. I am persuaded that "*fensible*" is the poet's reading. Compare F. Q. iii. x. 10. "*No fort so FENSIBLE, no walls so strong, &c.*" TODD. The copy of the folio 1611, formerly the property of Drayton, often before referred to, has "*sensible*;" but that old poet, by an alteration in his margin, made the word conform to the 4to. 1590. C.



Th' other immortall, perfect, masculine ;  
 And twixt them both a quadrate was the base,  
 Proportiond equally by seven and nine ;  
 Nine was the circle sett in heavens place :  
 All which compacted made a goodly Diapase.<sup>p</sup>

23.

Therein two gates were placed seemly well :  
 The one before, by which all in did pas,  
 Did th' other far in workmanship excell ;  
 For not of wood, nor of enduring bras,  
 But of more worthy substance fram'd it was :  
 Doubly disparted, it did locke and close,  
 That when it locked none might thorough pas,  
 And when it opened, no man might it close ;  
 Still open to their friendes,<sup>q</sup> and closed to their foes.

<sup>p</sup> *a goodly Diapase.*] We cannot do better than quote, regarding this Stanza, the note inserted by Professor Child, in his edit. of "Spenser," Boston, 1855. "This verse [stanza] describes the plan and proportions of Alma's castle, the human body. The circular part is the head, the triangular the legs, the base of the triangle being wanting. The quadrate or parallelogram, which forms the base of both, is the trunk. The triangle and the circle are called "the first and last proportions," because they include respectively the least and the greatest space in the same perimeter, or perhaps simply because they are the extremities. The triangle is imperfect as wanting a base, and denoting the animal nature ; mortal, because it is altogether fleshly, and contains no spiritual part ; feminine, because it includes the generative power, of which the female is the type. The circle is immortal, for it contains the imperishable mind ; perfect, not only as complete in itself, but because the soul is made in the image of God ; and masculine, because it is the seat of the spiritual principle, which exercises sway over the body. The breadth of the trunk (including the arms) is to the length from the shoulders to the thigh nearly as seven to nine, and the longer side of the parallelogram is affirmed to be equal to the circumference of the head,—'Nine was the circle sett in heavens place,' (or topping this noble structure.) All parts of the edifice fitly joined together made 'a goodly Diapase,' or concord. The mystical interpretation of this verse by Sir Kenelm Digby [in his 'Letter to Sir Edward Esterling,' first printed in 1644] and Upton, is, to say the least, quite unnecessary." C.

<sup>q</sup> *Still open to their friendes.*] Todd, in opposition to all authorities, printed *opened* instead of "open," which is the word in the 4tos. and folios, and from which there can here be no reason to vary. C.



24.

Of hewen stone the porch was fayrely wrought,  
 Stone more of valew, and more smooth and fine,  
 Then Jett or Marble<sup>r</sup> far from Ireland brought;  
 Over the which was cast a wandring vine,  
 Enchaced with a wanton yvie twine;  
 And over it a fayre Portcullis hong,  
 Which to the gate directly did incline  
 With comely compasse and compacture strong,  
 Nether unseemly short, nor yet exceeding long.

25.

Within the Barbican<sup>s</sup> a Porter fate,  
 Day and night duely keeping watch and ward;  
 Nor wight nor word mote passe out of the gate,  
 But in good order, and with dew regard;  
 Utterers of secrets he from thence debard,  
 Bablers of folly, and blazers of cryme:  
 His larumbell might lowd and wyde be hard  
 When cause requyrd, but never out of time;  
 Early and late it rong, at evening and at prime.

26.

And rownd about the porch on every fyde  
 Twise fixeene warders satt, all armed bright  
 In glistring steele, and strongly fortifyde:  
 Tall yeomen seemed they and of great might,

---

<sup>r</sup> *Then Jett or Marble, &c.*] In the neighbourhood of Kilcolman, the residence of the poet, there was, it seems, a red and grey *marble* quarry. See Smith's "Hist. of Cork," vol. i. 343. In the same county, other valuable *marbles* also are to be found. See *ibid.* vol. i. 156, and more particularly, ii. 375. TODD.

<sup>s</sup> *Within the Barbican.*] *The watch-tower*, generally meaning a strong and lofty wall with turrets, intended for the defence of the gate and drawbridge of the old castles. It is written in French *barbacane*, and is interpreted by Cotgrave, "A casemate, or hole, in a parrapet or towne-wall, to shoot out at; some hold it also to be a sentrie, scout-house, or hole; and therupon our Chaucer useth the word *barbican* for a *watch-tower*, which, in the Saxon tongue, was called a *borough-kenning*."

TODD.



And were enraunged ready still for fight.  
By them as Alma passed with her guesstes,  
They did obeyfaunce, as befeemed right,  
And then againe retourned to their restes :  
The Porter eke to her did lout with humble gestic.

27.

Thence she them brought into a stately Hall,  
Wherein were many tables fayre dispred,  
And ready dight with drapets festivall,  
Against the viaundes should be ministred.  
At th' upper end there sate, yclad in red  
Downe to the ground, a comely personage,  
That in his hand a white rod menaged :  
He Steward was, hight Diet ; rype of age,  
And in demeanure sober, and in counsell sage.

28.

And through the Hall there walked to and fro  
A jolly yeoman, Marshall of the fame,  
Whose name was Appetite : he did bestow  
Both guesstes and meate, when ever in they came,  
And knew them how to order without blame,  
As him the Steward badd. They both attone  
Did dewty to their Lady, as became ;  
Who, passing by, forth ledd her guesstes anone  
Into the kitchen rowme, ne spard for nicenesse none.

29.

It was a vault ybuilt for great dispence,  
With many raunges reard along the wall,  
And one great chimney, whose long tonnell thence  
The smoke forth threw. And in the midst of all  
There placed was a caudron wide and tall  
Upon a mightie fornace, burning whott,  
More whott then Aetn', or flaming Mongiball ;<sup>t</sup>

---

<sup>t</sup> or flaming Mongiball.] Mongibello was another name for Etna ;



For day and night it brent, ne ceased not,  
So long as any thing it in the caudron gott.

30.

But to delay the heat, leaft by mischaunce  
It might breake out and fet the whole on fyre,  
There added was by goodly ordinaunce  
An huge great payre of bellowes, which did ftyre  
Continually, and cooling breath infpyre.  
About the Caudron many Cookes accoyld<sup>u</sup>  
With hookes and ladles, as need did requyre;  
The whyles the viaundes in the vefsell boyld  
They did about their bufineffe fweat, and forely  
toyld.

31.

The maifter Cooke was cald Concoction;  
A carefull man, and full of comely guyfe.  
The kitchin clerke, that hight Digestion,  
Did order all th' Achates<sup>x</sup> in seemely wife,  
And fet them forth, as well he could devise.  
The reft had feuerall offices affynd;  
Some to remove the fcum as it did rife;  
Others to beare the fame away did mynd;  
And others it to ufe according to his kynd.<sup>y</sup>

---

but it was also sometimes used by the Italians for any constantly burning volcano:—"a continual burning flame," says Florio. C.

<sup>u</sup> *accoyld.*] *Stood around*, coyled up together, gathered together. Ital. *accogliere*, from *ad* and *colligere*. UPTON.

<sup>x</sup> *Did order all th' Achates.*] *Provisions*; old French, *achet*, a thing bought. See Kelham's "Norman Dict." The word is used by Chaucer, and continued to be employed in this sense after the time of Spenser. The folios have converted Spenser's own word *achates* into *the cates*. TODD. The term *cates* was much more frequently employed by writers of the time of Elizabeth and James I. C.

<sup>y</sup> *according to his kynd.*] Because in this instance "according" is misspelt, in the 4to. 1590 only, *according*, Todd adopted it, as if it were not a misprint. He need not have been so minutely particular here, considering his many deviations from the old orthography elsewhere. C.



32.

But all the liquour, which was fowle and waste,  
 Not good nor serviceable elles for ought,  
 They in another great rownd vessell plaste,  
 Till by a conduit pipe it thence were brought :  
 And all the rest, that noyous was and nought,  
 By secret wayes, that none might it espy,  
 Was close convaide, and to the backgate brought,  
 That cleped was Port Esquiline, whereby  
 It was avoided quite, and throwne out privily.

33.

Which goodly order and great workmans skill  
 Whenas those knightes beheld, with rare delight  
 And gazing wonder they their mindes did fill ;  
 For never had they seene so straunge a fight.  
 Thence backe againe faire Alma led them right,  
 And soone into a goodly Parlour<sup>z</sup> brought,  
 That was with royall arras richly dight,  
 In which was nothing pourtrahed nor wrought ;  
 Not wrought nor pourtrahed, but easie to be thought.

34.

And in the midst thereof upon the floure  
 A lovely bevy of faire Ladies fate,  
 Courted of many a jolly Paramoure,  
 The which them did in modest wise amate,  
 And eachone sought his Lady to aggrate :  
 And eke emongst them litle Cupid playd  
 His wanton sportes, being retourned late  
 From his fierce warres, and having from him layd  
 His cruel bow, wherewith he thousands hath dismayd.

---

<sup>z</sup> *And soone into a goodly Parlour, &c.*] That is, where the powers of the imagination and various faculties of the mind reside ; which powers or faculties are personified as a *bevy of faire Ladies*, St. 34. They do homage to Alma, St. 36 ; for their province is to obey, not to govern. UPTON.



## 35.

Diverse delights they fownd them felves to please ;  
 Some song in sweet confort ; some laught for joy ;  
 Some plaid with strawes ; some ydly fatt at ease ;  
 But other some could not abide to toy ;  
 All pleasaunce was to them grieve and annoy :  
 This frownd, that faund, the third for shame did blush,  
 Another seemed envious or coy,  
 Another in her teeth did gnaw a rush ;  
 But at these straungers presence every one did hush.

## 36.

Soone as the gracious Alma came in place,  
 They all attonce out of their seates arose,  
 And to her homage made with humble grace :  
 Whom when the knights beheld, they gan dispose  
 Themselves to court, and each a damzell chose.  
 The Prince by chaunce did on a Lady light,  
 That was right faire and fresh as morning rose,  
 But somewhat sad and solemne eke in fight,  
 As if some pensive thought constrained her gentle spright.

## 37.

In a long purple pall, whose skirt with gold  
 Was fretted all about, she was arayd ;  
 And in her hand a Poplar braunch did hold :  
 To whom the Prince in courteous maner sayd ;  
 " Gentle Madame, why beene ye thus dismayd,  
 And your faire beautie doe with sadnes spill ?  
 Lives any that you hath thus ill apayd ?  
 Or doen you love ?<sup>a</sup> or doen you lack your will ?  
 What ever bee the cause, it sure beseemes you ill."

## 38.

" Fayre Sir," said she, halfe in disdaineful wise,

---

<sup>a</sup> *Or doen you love?*] "*Or doen your love*" in the 4to. 1590; but evidently a misprint, as most editors, since the folios 1609 and 1611, have treated it. C.



"How is it that this word in me ye blame,<sup>b</sup>  
 And in your selfe doe not the same advise?  
 Him ill beseemes anothers fault to name,  
 That may unwares bee blotted with the same:  
 Pensive I yeeld I am, and sad in mind,  
 Through great desire of glory and of fame;  
 Ne ought, I weene, are ye therein behynd,  
 That have three years fought one,<sup>c</sup> yet no where can her  
 find."

## 39.

The Prince was inly moved at her speach,  
 Well weeting trew what she had rashly told;  
 Yet with faire semblaunt fought to hyde the breach,  
 Which chaunge of colour did perforce unfold,  
 Now seeming flaming whott, now stony cold:  
 Tho, turning soft aside, he did inquire  
 What wight she was that poplar braunch did hold?  
 It answered was, her name was Prayfdesire,  
 That by well doing fought to honour to aspyre.

## 40.

The whyles the Faery knight did entertayne  
 Another Damsell of that gentle crew,  
 That was right fayre and modest of demayne,  
 But that too oft she chaung'd her native hew.  
 Straunge was her tyre, and all her garment blew,

<sup>b</sup> *How is it that this word in me ye blame.*] We do not venture to change the always received text in this line; but surely "word" ought to be *mood*. It often happens that old compositors mistook *m* for *w*, and *vice versa*; and *mood*, carelessly written, would look very like "word." No particular "word" had been used by the Prince in putting his question. However, like others, we might have passed "word" without observation, if we had not seen that Drayton, in his copy of the folio 1611, wrote *mood* in the margin, and marked under "word," as if it were objectionable. C.

<sup>c</sup> *That have three years fought one.*] We do not find that it has hitherto been remarked (excepting by Professor Child) that the 4to. 1590 has "three years," while subsequent editions read *twelve months*: the period, according to St. 7, seems uncertain. C.



Cloſe rownd about her tuckt with many a plight :  
 Upon her fiſt the bird, which ſhonneth vew,<sup>d</sup>  
 And keepes in coverts cloſe from living wight,  
 Did ſitt, as yet aſhamd how rude Pan did her dight.

41.

So long as Guyon with her commoned,  
 Unto the grownd ſhe caſt her modeſt eye,  
 And ever anone with roſy red  
 The baſhfull blood her ſnowy cheekes did dye,  
 That her became, as poliſht yvory  
 Which cunning Craſteſman hand hath overlayd  
 With fayre vermilion or pure Caſtory.<sup>e</sup>  
 Great wonder had the knight to ſee the mayd  
 So ſtraungely paſſioned, and to her gently ſaid :

42.

“Fayre Damzell, ſeemeth by your troubled cleare,  
 That either me too bold ye weene, this wiſe  
 You to moleſt, or other ill to feare  
 That in the ſecret of your hart cloſe lyes,  
 From whence it doth, as cloud from ſea, aryſe.  
 If it be I, of pardon I you pray ;  
 But if ought elſe that I mote not devyſe,

---

<sup>d</sup> *Upon her fiſt the bird, which ſhonneth vew, &c.*] Pan fell in love with Echo, and begat a daughter on her named Jynx, who was by *Juno* (but Spenser ſays by *Pan*) turned into a bird of the ſame name, becauſe ſhe endeavoured to praſtiſe her philters and incantations on Jupiter. See the “Schol. on Theocr.” Idyll. ii. ver. 17. What bird this Jynx is cannot ſo well be determined ; but Spenser ſeems, by his deſcription, to mean the cuckow. Compare Chaucer, “Knight’s Tale,” 1930. UPTON.

<sup>e</sup> *or pure Caſtory.*] In the 4to. 1590 the word is *laſtery*, but the liſt of errata tells us to read “Caſtory :” nevertheleſs *laſtery* was continued in the folios 1609 and 1611, ſo little was the old correction attended to. Spenser’s “Craſteſman hand,” of 1590, was ſubſequentlly altered to *Craſteſman’s* hand. In the firſt line of the next Stanza, “cleare” has always been, quite improperly, printed *cheare*, and without notice. That “cleare” was Spenser’s word, the fifth line of the Stanza, as well as the 4to. 1590, eſtabliſh. C.



I will, if please you it discure,<sup>f</sup> assay  
To ease you of that ill, so wisely as I may."

43.

She answerd nought, but more abasht for shame  
Held downe her head, the whiles her lovely face  
The flashing blood with blushing did inflame,  
And the strong passion mard her modest grace,  
That Guyon mervayld at her uncouth cace;  
Till Alma him bespake: "Why wonder yee,  
Faïre Sir, at that which ye so much embrace?  
She is the fountaine of your modestee:  
You shamefast are, but Shamefastnes it selfe is shee."

44.

Thereat the Elfe did blush in privitee,  
And turnd his face away; but she the same  
Dissembled faïre, and faynd to oversee.  
Thus they awhile with court and goodly game  
Themselves did solace each one with his Dame,  
Till that great Lady thence away them sought  
To vew her Castles other wondrous frame:  
Up to a stately Turret she them brought,  
Ascending by ten steps of Alabaster wrought.

45.

That Turrets frame most admirable was,  
Like highest heaven compassed around,  
And lifted high above this earthly masse,  
Which it surviewd as hills doen lower ground;  
But not on ground mote like to this be found:  
Not that, which antique Cadmus whylome built  
In Thebes, which Alexander did confound;  
Nor that proud towre of Troy, though richly guilt,  
From which young Hectors blood by cruell Greekes  
was spilt.

---

<sup>f</sup> *if please you it discure.*] i. e. if it please you to *discover* it—a form of the word used by Chaucer and several of our elder poets. C.



46.

The rooffe hereof was arched over head,  
 And deckt with flowers and herbars daintily :  
 Two goodly Beacons, fet in watches ftead,  
 Therein gave light, and flamd continually ;  
 For they of living fire moft fubtilly  
 Were made, and fet in filver fockets bright,  
 Cover'd with lids deviz'd of fubftance fly,  
 That readily they fhut and open might.  
 O ! who can tell the prayfes of that makers might ?

47.

Ne can I tell, ne can I ftay to tell,  
 This parts great workemanfhip and wondrous powre,  
 That all this other worldes worke doth excell,<sup>s</sup>  
 And likeft is unto that heavenly towre  
 That God hath built for his owne bleffed bowre.  
 Therein were divers rowmes, and divers ftages ;  
 But three the chiefeft and of greateft powre,  
 In which there dwelt three honorable fages,  
 The wifeft men, I weene, that lived in their ages.

48.

Not he, whom Greece, the Nourfe of all good arts,  
 By Phœbus doome the wifeft thought alive,  
 Might be compar'd to thefe by many parts :  
 Nor that fage Pylian fyre, which did furvive  
 Three ages, fuch as mortall men contrive,<sup>h</sup>

---

<sup>s</sup> *That all this other worldes worke doth excell.*] We ought not to pafs over the fact that in this line Drayton read *neather* for "other;" on what authority does not appear. It feems in fome degree fupported by what follows; but all impreffions, 4to. and folio, ancient and modern, concur in reading "other." Drayton wrote *neather* in the margin of his copy of the folio 1611. C.

<sup>h</sup> *fuch as mortall men contrive.*] Jortin and Upton have each remarked upon the Latinifm of "contrive," from *contero*, to *wear away*, or *fpēd*; and they refer to Shakespear's "Taming of the Shrew," A. i. Sc. 2, where "contrive" occurs in the fame fenfe. Our great dramatift, as they might not be aware, found the word in this fenfe in the ftory of



By whose advise old Priams cittie fell,  
 With these in praise of pollicies mote strive.  
 These three in these three rowmes did fondry dwell,  
 And counselled faire Alma how to governe well.

49.

The first of them could things to come foresee ;  
 The next could of thinges present best advise ;  
 The third things past could keep in memorée :  
 So that no time nor reason could arize,<sup>i</sup>  
 But that the same could one of these comprize.  
 For thy the first did in the forepart sit,  
 That nought mote hinder his quicke prejudize :  
 He had a sharpe foresight and working wit  
 That never idle was, ne once would rest a whit.

50.

His chamber was dispaigned all within  
 With fondry colours, in the which were writ  
 Infinite shapes of thinges disperfed thin ;  
 Some such as in the world were never yit,  
 Ne can devized be of mortall wit ;  
 Some daily seene and knowen by their names,  
 Such as in idle fantasies do flit ;  
 Infernall Hags, Centaurs, feendes, Hippodames,  
 Apes, Lyons, Aegles, Owles, fooles, lovers, children,  
 Dames.

51.

And all the chamber filled was with flyes  
 Which buzzed all about, and made such sound  
 That they encombred all mens eares and eyes ;  
 Like many swarmes of Bees assembled round,  
 After their hives with honny do abound.

---

"Romeo and Juliet," as related in Paynter's "Palace of Pleasure," vol. ii. fol. 193, edit. Marsh. Shakespeare also employs it in his "Lover's Complaint." See edit. Collier, 1858, ii. 469, and vi. 667. C.

<sup>i</sup> *nor reason could arize.*] Drayton altered "reason" to *season*. C.



All those were idle thoughtes and fantasies,  
 Devices, dreames, opinions unsound,  
 Shewes, visions, sooth-fayes, and prophecies;<sup>k</sup>  
 And all that fained is, as leafings, tales, and lies.

52.

Emongst them all fate he which wonned there,  
 That hight Phantastes by his nature trew;  
 A man of yeares yet fresh, as mote appere,  
 Of swarth complexion, and of crabbed hew,  
 That him full of melancholy did shew;  
 Bent hollow beetle browes, sharpe staring eyes,  
 That mad or foolish seemd: one by his vew  
 Mote deeme him borne with ill-disposed skyes,  
 When oblique Saturne fate in th' house of agonyes.

53.

Whom Alma having shewed to her guesstes,  
 Thence brought them to the second rowme, whose wals  
 Were painted faire with memorable gistes  
 Of famous Wifards; and with picturals  
 Of Magistrates, of courts, of tribunals,  
 Of commen wealthes, of states, of pollicy,  
 Of lawes, of judgements, and of decretals,  
 All artes, all science, all Philosophy,  
 And all that in the world was ay thought wittily.

54.

Of those that rowme was full; and them among  
 There fate a man of ripe and perfect age,  
 Who did them meditate all his life long,  
 That through continuall practise and usage

---

<sup>k</sup> *Shewes, visions, sooth-fayes, and prophecies.*] Todd was puzzled by the measure of this line, and speculated that "visions" might be pronounced as three syllables. It is one of the words ending in *sion*, which, as observed in a previous note, was used as a dissyllable, or trisyllable, according to the convenience of the verse: here it must, of course, be read as three syllables, with the accent on "-fayes." C.



He now was growne right wise and wondrous sage :  
 Great pleasure had those straunger knightes to see  
 His goodly reason and grave personage,  
 That his disciples both desyrd to bee ;  
 But Alma thence them led to th' hindmost rowme of three.

55.

That chamber seemed ruinous and old,  
 And therefore was removed far behind,  
 Yet were the wals, that did the same uphold,  
 Right firme and strong, though somewhat they declind ;  
 And therein sat an old oldman, halfe blind,  
 And all decrepit in his feeble corse,  
 Yet lively vigour rested in his mind,  
 And recompensd them with a better scorfe :<sup>1</sup>  
 Weake body wel is chang'd for minds redoubled forse.

56.

This man of infinite remembraunce was,  
 And things foregone through many ages held,  
 Which he recorded still as they did pas,  
 Ne suffred them to perish through long eld,  
 As all things els the which this world doth weld ;  
 But laid them up in his immortall scrine,  
 Where they for ever incorrupted dweld :  
 The warres he well remembred of king Nine,  
 Of old Assaracus, and Inachus divine.

57.

The yeares of Nestor nothing were to his,  
 Ne yet Mathusalem, though longest liv'd ;  
 For he remembred both their infancis :  
 Ne wonder then, if that he were depriv'd

<sup>1</sup> *with a better scorfe.*] *Exchange.* See Lye in Junius: "*Scorfe* has the same signification with *scofe*, to exchange. In Devonshire they still use *scofe*." CHURCH. Warner, in Spenser's age, spelt it *skaafe* in the following line:—

"Pollitians know to cheapen, what to offer, when to *skaafe*."  
 "Albion's England," edit. 1602, p. 156. C.



Of native strength now that he them surviv'd.  
His chamber all was hangd about with rolls  
And old records from auncient times derivd,  
Some made in books, some in long parchment scrolls,  
That were all worm-eaten and full of canker holes.

58.

Amidst them all he in a chaire was sett,  
Tossing and turning them withouten end;  
But for he was unable them to sett,  
A little boy did on him still attend  
To reach, when ever he for ought did send;  
And oft when thinges were lost, or laid amis,  
That boy them sought and unto him did lend:  
Therefore he Anamnestes cleped is;  
And that old man Eumnestes, by their propertis.

59.

The knightes there entring did him reverence dew,  
And wondred at his endlesse exercise:  
Then as they gan his Library to vew,  
And antique Regesters for to avise,  
There chaunced to the Princes hand to rize  
An auncient booke, hight *Briton moniments*,  
That of this lands first conquest did devize,  
And old division into Regiments,  
Till it reduced was to one mans governments.

60.

Sir Guyon chaunst eke on another booke,  
That hight *Antiquitee of Faery lond*:  
In which whenas he greedily did looke,  
Th' offspring of Elves and Faries there he fond,  
As it delivered was from hond to hond:  
Whereat they, burning both with fervent fire  
Their countreys auncestry to understond,  
Crav'd leave of Alma and that aged fire  
To read those bookes; who gladly graunted their desire.





## CANTO X.

*A chronicle of Briton kings,  
From Brute to Uthers rayne ;  
And rolls of Elfin Emperours,  
Till time of Gloriane.*

1.



HO now shall give unto me words and  
found  
Equall unto this haughty enterprife ?  
Or who shall lend me wings, with which  
from ground  
My lowly verse may loftily arise,  
And lift it selfe unto the highest skyes ?  
More ample spirit than hetherto was wount  
Here needes me, whiles the famous auncestryes  
Of my most dreaded Sovereigne I recount,  
By which all earthly Princes she doth far surmount.

2.

Ne under Sunne that shines so wide and faire,  
Whence all that lives does borrow life and light,  
Lives ought that to her lineage may compaire;  
Which though from earth it be derived right,  
Yet doth it selfe stretch forth to heavens hight,  
And all the world with wonder overspred ;  
A labor huge, exceeding far my might.  
How shall fraile pen, with feare disparaged,  
Conceive such soveraine glory and great bountyhed ?



## 3.

Argument worthy of Mæonian quill;  
 Or rather worthy of great Phoebus rote,<sup>a</sup>  
 Whereon the ruines of great Offa hill,  
 And triumphes of Phlegræan Jove, he wrote,  
 That all the Gods admird his lofty note.  
 But if some relish of that heavenly lay  
 His learned daughters would to me report  
 To decke my song withall, I would assay  
 Thy name, O soveraine Queene! to blazon far away.

## 4.

Thy name, O soveraine Queene! thy realme, and race,  
 From this renowned Prince derived arre,  
 Who mightily upheld that royall mace  
 Which now thou bear'st, to thee descended farre  
 From mighty kings and conquerours in warre,  
 Thy fathers and greatgrandfathers of old,<sup>b</sup>  
 Whose noble deeds above the Northern starre  
 Immortall fame for ever hath enrold;  
 As in that old mans booke they were in order told.

## 5.

The land which warlike Britons now possesse,  
 And therein have their mighty empire rayfd,

<sup>a</sup> *great Phoebus rote.*] A musical instrument. Chaucer, "Prol." 236:—  
 "Wel coud he finge and plaien on a rote." See "Du Cange, in v. *Rotta*.  
 Notker, who lived in the tenth century, says, that it was the ancient  
*Psalterium*, but altered in its shape, and with an additional number of  
 strings. Schilter, in v. *Rotta*." Tyrwhitt's Gloss.—Spenser uses the  
 word again, *F. Q.* iv. vi. 9. Todd. Gower calls it *riote*, and Ritson  
 says it was the *vielle*, or *lyra mendicorum*! "Anc. Songs," i. lx. C.

<sup>b</sup> *Thy fathers and greatgrandfathers of old.*] This is the line as  
 corrected in the errata at the end of the 4to. 1590: in the body of the  
 vol. it thus stands:—

"Thy fathers and thy great Grandfathers of gold;"  
 which Marston in his copy amended to,—

"Thy fathers and thy great Grandfathers old;"  
 which we might have considered preferable, if we had not held the list  
 of errata to be final. C.



In antique times was salvage wildernesse,  
 Unpeopled, unmannurd, unprovd, unprayd;  
 Ne was it Island then, ne was it payd<sup>c</sup>  
 Amid the ocean waves, ne was it fought  
 Of merchants farre for profits therein prayd;  
 But was all desolate, and of some thought  
 By sea to have bene from the Celticke mayn-land  
 brought.

6.

Ne did it then deserve a name to have,  
 Till that the venturous Mariner that way  
 Learning his ship from those white rocks to save,  
 Which all along the Southerne sea-coast lay  
 Threatning unheedy wrecke<sup>d</sup> and rash decay,  
 For safety that same his sea-marke made,  
 And nam'd it ALBION: But later day,  
 Finding in it fit ports for fishers trade,  
 Gan more the same frequent, and further to invade.

7.

But far in land a salvage nation dwelt  
 Of hideous Giaunts, and halfe beastly men,  
 That never tasted grace, nor goodnes felt;  
 But wild like beastes lurking in loathsome den,  
 And flying fast as Roebucke through the fen,  
 All naked without shame or care of cold,  
 By hunting and by spoiling liveden;  
 Of stature huge, and eke of corage bold,  
 That sonnes of men amazd their sterneesse to behold.

---

<sup>c</sup> *ne was it payd.*] i. e. *poised*: Todd states that *paied* is still used in Scotland. In the next line but one "prayd" is used for *appraised*, meaning, upon which a value was set. C.

<sup>d</sup> *Threatning unheedy wrecke.*] The most common mode of spelling "wreck" in the time of Spenser was *wrack*; a form of the word which some modern editors would revive, as if to introduce still more confusion into our orthography: the practice was, however, by no means uniform, as is evident from Spenser, Shakespeare, Drayton, &c. C.



## 8.

But whence they sprong, or how they were begott,  
 Uneath is to assure; uneath to wene  
 That monstrous error, which doth some affott,<sup>e</sup>  
 That Dioclesians fifty daughters shene  
 Into this land by chaunce have driven bene;  
 Where, companing with feends and filthy Sprights  
 Through vaine illusion of their lust unclene,  
 They brought forth Geaunts, and such dreadful wights  
 As far exceeded men in their immeasurd might.

## 9.

They held this land, and with their filthinesse  
 Polluted this same gentle soyle long time;  
 That their owne mother loathd their beastlinesse,  
 And gan abhorre her broods unkindly crime,  
 All were they borne of her owne native slime:  
 Until that Brutus, anciently deriv'd  
 From roiall stocke of old Assaracs line,  
 Driven by fatall error here arriv'd,<sup>f</sup>  
 And them of their unjust possession depriv'd.

## 10.

But ere he had established his throne,  
 And spred his empire to the utmost shore,  
 He fought great batteils with his salvage fone;  
 In which he them defeated evermore,

---

<sup>e</sup> *which doth some affott.*] We have already had this word in "The Shep. Cal." for March, vol. i. p. 36, where it means *stupefied*, or *besotted*; and such is its sense here, though Todd tells us that "affott" in this place is *beguile*, or *bewitch*, and adduces the same quotation that he had already used in "The Shep. Cal." to prove that the meaning of it was *stupefied*. It is hardly fair to his citation, and quite an error, to compel the same words to answer a double purpose. C.

<sup>f</sup> *here arriv'd.*] This happened about the year of the world 3083, and 1132 years before the birth of Christ, according to our oldest chronicler, who lived in the reigns of Henry III. and Edward I. See Robert of Gloucester's "Chronicle," published by Hearne in 1724, p. 20. CHURCH.



And many Giaunts left on groning flore :  
 That well can witnes yet unto this day  
 The westerne Hogh,<sup>g</sup> besprincled with the gore  
 Of mighty Goëmot, whome in stout fray  
 Corineus conquered, and cruelly did slay.

11.

And eke that ample Pitt, yet far renownd  
 For the large leape which Debon did compell  
 Coulin to make, being eight lugs of grownd,<sup>h</sup>  
 Into the which retourning backe he fell :  
 But those three monstrous stones doe most excell,  
 Which that huge sonne of hideous Albion,  
 Whose father Hercules in Fraunce did quell,  
 Great Godmer threw, in fierce contention,  
 At bold Canutus ; but of him was flaine anon.

12.

In meed of these great conquests by them gott,  
 Corineus had that Province utmost west  
 To him assigned for his worthy lott,  
 Which of his name and memorable gest  
 He called Cornwaile, yet so called best ;  
 And Debons shayre was that is Devonshyre :  
 But Canute had his portion from the rest,  
 The which he cald Canutium, for his hyre ;  
 Now Cantium, which Kent we comenly inquire.

13.

Thus Brute this Realme unto his rule subdewd,  
 And raigned long in great felicity,  
 Lov'd of his freends, and of his foes eschewd :

---

<sup>g</sup> *The westerne Hogh.*] That is, as Camden calls it, the *Haw*. See also Drayton, "Polyolb." p. 12, [near the end of Song 1.] :—

"Upon that loftie place at Plimmouth call'd the *Hoe*,  
 "Those mighty wraflers met." CHURCH.

<sup>h</sup> *eight lugs of grownd.*] A *lug* is a perch or rod with which land is measured, containing sixteen feet and a half. CHURCH.



He left three sonnes, his famous progeny,  
 Borne of fayre Inogene of Italy ;  
 Mongst whom he parted his imperiall state,  
 And Locrine left chiefe Lord of Britany.  
 At last ripe age bad him surrender late  
 His life, and long good fortune, unto finall fate.

14.

Locrine was left the soveraine Lord of all ;  
 But Albanact had all the Northerne part,  
 Which of himfelfe Albania he did call ;  
 And Camber did possesse the Westerne quart,  
 Which Severne now from Logris doth depart :  
 And each his portion peaceably enjoyd,  
 Ne was there outward breach, nor grudge in hart,  
 That once their quiet government annoyd ;  
 But each his paynes to others profit still employd.

15.

Untill a nation straung, with visage swart  
 And corage fierce that all men did affray,  
 Which through the world then swarmd in every part,  
 And overflowd all countries far away,  
 Like Noyes great flood, with their importune sway,  
 This land invaded with like violence,  
 And did themselves through all the North display :  
 Untill that Locrine for his Realmes defence,  
 Did head against them make and strong munificence.<sup>1</sup>

16.

He them encountred, a confused rout,  
 Foreby the River that whylome was hight  
 The ancient Abus, where with courage stout  
 He them defeated in victorious fight,

---

<sup>1</sup> *and strong munificence.*] By “munificence” our author signifies defence, or fortification; from *munio* and *facio*. This is a word injudiciously coined by Spenser, as the same word in our language signifies quite another thing. T. WARTON.



And chaste so fiercely after fearefull flight,  
 That forst their Chiefetain, for his safeties sake,<sup>k</sup>  
 (Their Chiefetain Humber named was aright,)  
 Unto the mighty streame him to betake,  
 Where he an end of batteill and of life did make.

17.

The king retourned proud of victory,  
 And insolent wox through unwonted ease,  
 That shortly he forgot the jeopardy,  
 Which in his land he lately did appease,  
 And fell to vaine voluptuous disease:  
 He lov'd faire Ladie Estrild, leudly lov'd,  
 Whose wanton pleasures him too much did please,  
 That quite his hart from Guendolene remov'd,  
 From Guendolene his wife, though alwaies faithful prov'd.

18.

The noble daughter of Corinëus  
 Would not endure to bee so vile disdaind,  
 But, gathering force and corage valorous,  
 Encountred him in batteill well ordaind,  
 In which him vanquisht she to fly constraind:  
 But she so fast pursewd, that him she tooke  
 And threw in bands, where he till death remaind;  
 Als his faire Lemman flying through a brooke  
 She overhent,<sup>l</sup> nought moved with her piteous looke;

19.

But both her selfe, and eke her daughter deare  
 Begotten by her kingly Paramoure,

---

<sup>k</sup> *for his safeties sake.*] In St. 6, we have had another instance of the use of "safety" as a trisyllable: here it occurs as a dissyllable; and it is to be noted that in St. 6, editions after the first read, "For safeties sake," a form of expression Spenser would probably have avoided in St. 16, if he had already employed it in St. 6. This consideration renders it the more likely that the oldest text, as regards St. 6, "For safety that same," &c. is the correct one. C.

<sup>l</sup> *She overhent.*] To "hent" is to *take*, and *hint* is the substantive: "She overhent" is therefore "She overtook." C.



The faire Sabrina, almost dead with feare,  
 She there attached, far from all succoure :  
 The one she flew upon the present floure ;<sup>m</sup>  
 But the sad virgin, innocent of all,  
 Adowne the rolling river she did poure,  
 Which of her name now Severne men do call :  
 Such was the end that to disloyall love did fall.

20.

Then for her sonne, which she to Locrin bore,  
 Madan was young, unmeet the rule to sway,<sup>n</sup>  
 In her owne hand the crowne she kept in store,  
 Till ryper years he raught and stronger stay :  
 During which time her powre she did display  
 Through all this Realme, the glory of her sex,  
 And first taught men a woman to obay :  
 But, when her sonne to mans estate did wex,  
 She it surrentred, ne her selfe would lenger vex.

21.

Tho Madan raignd, unworthie of his race,  
 For with all shame that sacred throne he fild.  
 Next Memprise, as unworthy of that place ;  
 In which being conformed with Manild,  
 For thirst of single kingdom him he kild.  
 But Ebranck salved both their infamies  
 With noble deedes, and warreyd on Brunchild  
 In Henault, where yet of his victories  
 Brave monuments remaine, which yet that land envies.

<sup>m</sup> upon the present floure.] That is, upon the spot, as Mr. Church has explained by the same expression, F. Q. vi. i. 23 :—

“ ——— and flew the porter on the flore.”

The second edition reads “*in that impatient floure*,” to which all subsequent editors have conformed, except Mr. Church, with whom I join in following the first edition. TODD.

<sup>n</sup> the rule to sway.] So the first edition reads : Spenser’s second edition reads, “the rule of sway ;” which all other editions follow. The sense is thus perspicuous : Madan was young, unfit to sway the rule or realm. TODD.



22.

An happy man in his first dayes he was,  
 And happy father of faire progeny :  
 For all so many weekes as the yeare has,  
 So many children he did multiply ;  
 Of which were twentie sonnes, which did apply  
 Their mindes to prayse and chevalrous desyre :  
 Those germans did subdew all Germany,  
 Of whom it hight ; but in the end their Syre  
 With foule repulse from Fraunce was forced to retyre.

23.

Which blott his sonne succeeding in his feat,  
 The second Brute, the second both in name  
 And eke in semblaunce of his puissaunce great,  
 Right well recur'd, and did away that blame  
 With recompence of everlasting fame :  
 He with his victour sword first opened  
 The bowels of wide Fraunce, a forlorne Dame,  
 And taught her first how to be conquered ;  
 Since which, with fondrie spoiles she hath been ranfacked.

24.

Let Scaldis tell, and let tell Hania,  
 And let the marsh of Esthambruges tell,  
 What colour were their waters that same day,  
 And all the moore twixt Elversham and Dell,  
 With blood of Henalois which therein fell.  
 How oft that day did sad Brunchildis see  
 The greene shield dyde in dolorous vermell ?  
 That not *scuith guiridh* it mote seeme to bee,  
 But rather *y scuith gogh*, signe of sad crueltee.<sup>o</sup>

---

<sup>o</sup> *signe of sad crueltee.*] In most copies of the 4to. 1590, the first line of the concluding couplet of this stanza wants some words ; and of the second line " But " is all that is given. Church and Todd both had exemplars of that impression where the missing portions were filled up as in our text. It is remarkable that the errata at the end of the 4to. 1590, in all copies, corrects one of the missing Welsh words, *scuith*, as



25.

His sonne, king Leill, by fathers labour long,  
 Enjoyd an heritage of lasting peace,  
 And built Cairleill, and built Cairleon strong.  
 Next Huddibras his realme did not encrease,  
 But taught the land from wearie wars to cease:  
 Whose footsteps Bladud following, in artes  
 Exceld at Athens all the learned preace,  
 From whence he brought them to these saluage parts,  
 And with sweet science mollifide their stubborne harts.

26.

Ensample of his wondrous faculty,  
 Behold the boyling bathes at Cairbadon,  
 Which feeth with secreet fire eternally,  
 And in their entrailles, full of quick Brimston,  
 Nourish the flames which they are warmd upon,  
 That to their people wealth they forth do well,  
 And health to every forreyne nation:  
 Yet he<sup>p</sup> at last, contending to excell  
 The reach of men, through flight into fond mischief fell.

27.

Next him king Leyr in happie peace long raynd,  
 But had no issue male him to succeed,  
 But three faire daughters, which were well uptraind  
 In all that seemed fitt for kingly seed:  
 Mongst whom his realme he equally decreed  
 To have divided. Tho, when feeble age  
 Nigh to his utmost date he saw proceed,

---

if it were not absent; so that where they are wanting it was, in all probability, the fault of the old printer, who could not make out the uncouth spelling, and left out the words. In Marston's copy of the edit. 1590, there are two blanks for the Welsh words, and for the whole concluding line after "But." The folios follow the impression of 1596. C.

<sup>p</sup> Yet he, &c.] Bladud studied magic; and, attempting to fly to the upper regions of the air, fell upon the temple of Apollo, and was dashed to pieces. Geoffry of Monmouth, B. ii. C. 10. UPTON.



He cald his daughters, and with speeches sage  
Inquyrd, which of them most did love her parentage?

28.

The eldest, Gonorill, gan to protest,  
That she much more than her owne life him lov'd;  
And Regan greater love to him profest  
Then all the world, when ever it were proov'd;  
But Cordeill said she lov'd him as behoov'd:  
Whose simple answer, wanting colours fayre  
To paint it forth, him to displeasaunce moov'd,  
That in his crown he counted her no hayre,  
But twixt the other twain his kingdom whole did shayre.

29.

So wedded th' one to Maglan king of Scottes,  
And thother to the king of Cambria,  
And twixt them shayrd his realme by equall lottes;  
But without dowre the wise Cordelia  
Was sent to Aggannip<sup>a</sup> of Celtica.  
Their aged fyre, thus eased of his crowne,  
A private life ledd in Albania  
With Gonorill, long had in great renowne,  
That nought him griev'd to beene from rule deposed  
downe.

30.

But true it is that, when the oyle is spent,  
The light goes out, and weeke is throwne away:  
So, when he had resign'd his regiment,  
His daughter gan despise his drouping day,  
And wearie wax of his continuall stay.  
Tho to his daughter Regan he repayrd,  
Who him at first well used every way;

---

<sup>a</sup> *Was sent to Aggannip.*] *Aganippus* king of France, who, upon hearing of Cordelia's beauty, (according to Geoffry of Monmouth,) or rather wisdom and goodness, (as Robert of Gloucester says,) sent and demanded her in marriage without any portion. CHURCH.



But when of his departure she despayrd,  
Her bountie she abated, and his cheare empayrd.

31.

The wretched man gan then avise to[o] late,  
That love is not where most it is profest;  
Too truely tryde in his extremest state.  
At last, resolv'd likewise to prove the rest,  
He to Cordelia him selfe addrest,  
Who with entyre affection him receav'd,  
As for her Syre and king her seemed best;  
And after all an army strong she leav'd,<sup>r</sup>  
To war on those which him had of his realme bereav'd.

32.

So to his crowne she him restord againe;  
In which he dyde, made ripe for death by eld,  
And after wild it should to her remaine,  
Who peaceably the same long time did weld,  
And all mens harts in dew obedience held;  
Till that her sisters children, woxen strong,  
Through proud ambition against her rebeld,  
And overcommen kept in prison long,  
Till weary of that wretched life her selfe she hong.<sup>s</sup>

33.

Then gan the bloody brethren both to raine;  
But fierce Cundah gan shortly to envy  
His brother Morgan, prickt with proud disdaine  
To have a pere in part of soverainty;  
And kindling coles of cruell enmity,  
Raisd warre, and him in batteill overthrew.  
Whence as he to those woody hilles did fly,

<sup>r</sup> *an army strong she leav'd.*] *Levied*, raised; Gall. *lever*. UPTON.

<sup>s</sup> *her selfe she hong.*] Geoffry of Monmouth says she killed herself. So says Hardyng. Robert of Gloucester is silent as to her death. He only says that her nephews put her in prison, and divided the kingdom between them. CHURCH.



Which hight of him Glamorgan, there him flew :  
Then did he raigne alone, when he none equall knew.

34.

His sonne Rivall' his dead rowme did supply ;  
In whose sad time blood did from heaven rayne.  
Next great Gurgustus, then faire Cæcily,  
In constant peace their kingdoms did contayne.<sup>t</sup>  
After whom Lago, and Kinmarke did rayne,  
And Gorbogud, till far in years he grew :  
Then his ambitious sonnes unto them twayne  
Arraught<sup>u</sup> the rule, and from their father drew ;  
Stout Ferrex and sterne Porrex him in prison threw.

35.

But O ! the greedy thirst of royall crowne,  
That knowes no kinred, nor regards no right,  
Stird Porrex up to put his brother downe ;  
Who, unto him assembling forreigne might,  
Made warre on him, and fell him selfe in fight :  
Whose death t'avenge, his mother mercilesse,  
Most mercilesse of women, Wyden hight,  
Her other sonne fast sleeping did oppresse,  
And with most cruell hand him murdred pittilesse.<sup>x</sup>

<sup>t</sup> *their kingdoms did contayne.*] i.e. *retain*; one out of various instances to show that the reading in "The Merch. of Venice," A. v. Sc. 1, "contain the ring" is the true one: *retain* for "contain" was a subsequent introduction into Shakespeare's text. In an excellent modern work (Froude's "Henry VIII") we meet with a late proof of "contained" being used for *retained*, or perhaps *restrained*, where the author tells us that Q. Katherine "was cold and self-contained," alluding to the control under which she constantly kept herself. C.

<sup>u</sup> *Arraught.*] "Seized," Fr. *arracher*, to snatch or wrest. TODD. This etymology may perhaps be doubted, for "arraught" would seem to be the past tense of to *arreach*. We have not unfrequently had "raught" for *reached*, as in C. iv. St. 5 of this book, "Sometimes she *raught* him stones." See also "Shakespeare," edit. Collier, 1858, ii. 130; iii. 618; iv. 131; &c. "Raught" is *reft* in iv. 39, and vi. 222. C.

<sup>x</sup> *him murdred pittilesse.*] The wars between Ferrex and Porrex, and other incidents connected with them, were made the subject of the earliest tragedy in the English language that has descended to our time. It



36.

Here ended Brutus' sacred progeny,  
 Which had seven hundred years this scepter borne  
 With high renowne and great felicity :  
 The noble braunch from th' antique stocke was torne  
 Through discord, and the roiall throne forlorne.  
 Thenceforth this Realme was into factions rent,  
 Whilest each of Brutus boasted to be borne,  
 That in the end was left no moniment  
 Of Brutus, nor of Britons glorie auncient.

37.

Then up arose a man of matchlesse might,  
 And wondrous wit to menage high affayres,  
 Who, stird with pittie of the stressed plight  
 Of this sad realme, cut into sondry shayres  
 By such as claymd themselves Brutes rightfull hayres,  
 Gathered the Princes of the people loose  
 To taken counsell of their common cares ;  
 Who, with his wisdom won, him streight did choose  
 Their king, and swore him fealty to win or loose.

38.

Then made he head against his enimies,  
 And Ymner flew of Logris miscreate ;  
 Then Ruddoc and proud Stater, both allyes,  
 This of Albany newly nominate,  
 And that of Cambry king confirmed late,

---

was the joint authorship of Thomas Norton and Thomas Sackville (afterwards Baron Buckhurst and Earl of Dorset), and, having been acted in 1561, was printed, in 1565, under the title of "The Tragedie of Gorboduc," called by Spenser *Gorbogud*. C.

Here ended Brutus, &c.] The race of Brutus ended with Ferrex and Porrex, "Which had *seven hundred* years this scepter borne;" but according to Geoffry of Monmouth, 650 years. But poets use round numbers. He says *sacred progeny*, because descended from the Trojan kings and heroes, who claimed kindred with the gods. This account of Brutus and his sacred progeny is taken chiefly from Geoffry of Monmouth. UPTON.



He overthrew through his owne valiaunce;  
 Whose countries he redus'd to quiet state,  
 And shortly brought to civile governaunce,  
 Now one, which earst were many made through variaunce.

39.

Then made he sacred lawes, which some men say  
 Were unto him reveald in vision;  
 By which he freed the Traveilers high-way,  
 The Churches part, and Ploughmans portion,  
 Restraining stealth and strong extortion,  
 The gracious Numa of great Britany;  
 For, till his dayes, the chiefe dominion  
 By strength was wielded without pollicy:  
 Therefore he first wore crowne of gold for dignity.

40.

Donwallo dyde,<sup>z</sup> (for what may live for ay?)  
 And left two sonnes, of pearelesse prowesse both,  
 That sacked Rome too dearely did assay,  
 The recompence of their perjured oth;  
 And ranfackt Greece wel tryde, when they were wroth;  
 Besides subjected France and Germany,  
 Which yet their praises speake, all be they loth,  
 And inly tremble at the memory  
 Of Brennus and Belinus, kinges of Britany.

41.

Next them did Gurgiunt,<sup>a</sup> great Belinus sonne,  
 In rule succeede, and eke in fathers praise;

---

<sup>z</sup> *Donwallo dyde.*] The story of Mulmutius Donwallo, or Dunwallo, was also brought on the stage, but not until many years after the date of "Gorboduc:" we hear of it in Oct. 1598, and it was written for Henslowe's Theatre by a distinguished poet of that day, W. Rankins. See Henslowe's Diary (printed by the Shakespeare Society in 1845) p. 135. C.

<sup>a</sup> *Next them did Gurgiunt.*] More commonly known as Gurguntius, and called *Gurgunt* in editions after the first, where it stands *Gurgiunt*; but there is no correction in the errata of the 4to. 1590, and we prefer the integrity of the older text on a point of no real importance. "Gurgiunt" suits the measure sufficiently well. C.



He Easterland subdewd, and Denmarke wonne,  
 And of them both did foy<sup>b</sup> and tribute raife,  
 The which was dew in his dead fathers daies.  
 He also gave to fugitives of Spayne,  
 Whom he at sea found wandring from their waies,  
 A feate in Ireland safely to remayne,  
 Which they should hold of him, as subject to Britayne.

42.

After him raigned Guitheline his hayre,  
 The justest man and trewest in his daies,  
 Who had to wife Dame Mertia the fayre,  
 A woman worthy of immortall praise,  
 Which for this Realme found many goodly layes,<sup>c</sup>  
 And wholesome Statutes to her husband brought.  
 Her many deemd to have beene of the Fayes,  
 As was Aegerie that Numa taught:  
 Those yet of her be Mertian lawes both nam'd and thought.

43.

Her sonne Sifillus<sup>d</sup> after her did rayne;  
 And then Kimarus; and then Danius:  
 Next whom Morindus did the crowne sustayne;  
 Who, had he not with wrath outrageous  
 And cruell rancour dim'd his valorous  
 And mightie deedes, should matched have the best:  
 As well in that same field victorious  
 Against the forreine Morands he exprest;  
 Yet lives his memorie, though carcas sleepe in rest.

<sup>b</sup> *And of them both did foy.*] *The tribute due from subjects.* An expression borrowed from the old French. *Homme de foy* is a vassal, or tenant, that holds by fealty. See Cotgrave's Fr. Dict. v. *Foy*. TODD.

<sup>c</sup> *many goodly layes.*] *Laws*, for the rhyme's sake. CHURCH.

<sup>d</sup> *Her sonne Sifillus.*] It is "Sifillus" in every old impression, but in every history it is either *Sifilius* or *Sifillus*. We have little doubt that *Sifillus* is the mode in which Spenser spelt the name, and that the old compositor again confounded the long *f* and *f*. At the same time, with Upton and Church, we do not feel warranted in introducing the correction, but mention it in a note. C.



44.

Five sonnes he left, begotten of one wife,  
 All which successively by turnes did rayne :  
 First Gorboman, a man of vertuous life ;  
 Next Archigald, who for his proud disdayne  
 Deposed was from pryncedome soverayne,  
 And pitteous Elidure put in his sted ;  
 Who shortly it to him restord agayne,  
 Till by his death he it recovered :  
 But Peridure and Vigent him dithronized.

45.

In wretched prison long he did remaine,  
 Till they outraigned had their utmost date,  
 And then therein reseized was againe,  
 And ruled long with honorable state,  
 Till he surrendered Realme and life to fate.  
 Then all the sonnes of these five brethren raynd  
 By dew successe, and all their Nephewes late ;  
 Even thirfe eleven descents the crowne retaynd,  
 Till aged Hely by dew heritage it gaynd.

46.

He had two sonnes, whose eldest, called Lud,  
 Left of his life most famous memory,  
 And endlesse moniments of his great good :  
 The ruin'd wals he did reædifye  
 Of Troynovant, gainst force of enemy,  
 And built that gate which of his name is hight,  
 By which he lyes entombed solemnly.  
 He left two sonnes, too young to rule aright,  
 Androgeus and Tenantius, pictures of his might.

47.

Whilst they were young, Cassibalane, their Eme,<sup>c</sup>

---

<sup>c</sup> *Cassibalane, their Eme.*] Or *eame*, as it is spelt in A.S.—their *uncle*.  
 Bp. Kennett tells us that in his time the word was applied to any relative, or even to a neighbour. C.



Was by the people chosen in their sted,  
Who on him tooke the roiall Diademe,  
And goodly well long time it governed;  
Till the prowde Romanes him disquieted,  
And warlike Cæsar, tempted with the name  
Of this sweet Island never conquered,  
And envying the Britons blazed fame,  
(O hideous hunger of dominion!) hether came.

48.

Yet twise they were repulsd backe againe,  
And twise renforst backe to their ships to fly;  
The whiles with blood they all the shore did staine,  
And the gray Ocean into purple dy:  
Ne had they footing found at last, perdie,  
Had not Androgeus, false to native foyle,  
And envious of Uncles soveraintie,  
Betrayd his country unto forreine spoyle.  
Nought els but treason from the first this land did foyle.

49.

So by him Cæsar got the victory,  
Through great bloodshed and many a sad assay,  
In which himselfe was charged heavily  
Of hardy Nennius, whom he yet did slay,  
But lost his sword, yet to be seene this day.  
Thenceforth this land was tributarie made  
T'ambitious Rome, and did their rule obay,  
Till Arthur all that reckoning defrayd:  
Yet oft the Briton kings against them strongly swayd.

50.

Next him Tenantius raignd; then Kimbeline,  
What time th' eternall Lord in fleshly slime  
Enwombed was, from wretched Adams line  
To purge away the guilt of sinfull crime.  
O joyous memorie of happy time,  
That heavenly grace so plenteously displayd!



(O too high ditty for my simple rime!)  
 Soone after this the Romanes him warrayd;  
 For that their tribute he refusd to let be payd.

51.

Good Claudius, that next was Emperour,  
 An army brought, and with him batteile fought,  
 In which the king was by a Treachetour<sup>f</sup>  
 Disguised flaine, ere any thereof thought:  
 Yet ceased not the bloody fight for ought;  
 For Arvirage his brothers place supplyde  
 Both in his armes and crowne, and by that draught  
 Did drive the Romanes to the weaker fyde,  
 That they to peace agreed. So all was pacifyde.

52.

Was never king more highly magnifide,  
 Nor dredd of Romanes, then was Arvirage;  
 For which the Emperour to him allide  
 His daughter Genuifs' in marriage:  
 Yet shortly he renounst the vassallage  
 Of Rome againe, who hether hastily sent  
 Vespasian, that with great spoile and rage  
 Forwasted all, till Genuiffa gent  
 Persuaded him to cease, and her lord to relent.

53.

He dide; and him succeded Marius,  
 Who joyd his dayes in great tranquillity.<sup>g</sup>  
 Then Coyll; and after him good Lucius,  
 That first received Christianity,  
 The sacred pledge of Christes Evangely.

---

<sup>f</sup> *Was by a Treachetour.*] We do not recollect this form of Chaucer's word *treachour* in any writer but Spenser, who has it elsewhere, as well, indeed, as *treachour*. They are derived from the Fr. *tricher*, while *traitor* is from the Lat. *trado*. C.

<sup>g</sup> *in great tranquillity.*] So the first edition reads. The others read, "*with great tranquillity.*" TODD.



Yet true it is, that long before that day  
Hither came Joseph of Arimathy,  
Who brought with him the holy grayle,<sup>b</sup> (they say)  
And preacht the truth ; but since it greatly did decay.

54.

This good king shortly without issue dide,  
Whereof great trouble in the kingdome grew,  
That did her selfe in sondry parts divide,  
And with her powre her owne selfe overthrew,  
Whilest Romanes daily did the weake subdew :  
Which seeing, stout Bunduca up arose,  
And taking armes the Britons to her drew ;  
With whom she marched streight against her foes,  
And then unwares besides the Severne did enclose.

55.

There she with them a cruell batteill tryde,  
Not with so good successe as shee deserv'd ;  
By reason that the Captaines on her fyde,  
Corrupted by Paulinus, from her swerv'd :  
Yet such as were through former flight preserv'd  
Gathering againe, her Host she did renew,  
And with fresh corage on the victor servd :  
But being all defeated, save a few,  
Rather then fly, or be captiv'd, her selfe she flew.

56.

O famous moniment of womens prayse !  
Matchable either to Semiramis,  
Whom antique history so high doth rayse,  
Or to Hypsipil', or to Thomiris.

---

<sup>b</sup> *the holy grayle.*] The holy vessel, or dish, in which the paschal lamb was served before Christ at the last supper : it was subsequently lost, and search was long made for it throughout Christendom in vain. It was ultimately, according to several authorities, found in Italy. It seems to have been confounded by some writers with the *sang real*, or real blood of the Saviour. C.



Her Host two hundred thousand numbred is ;  
Who, whiles good fortune favoured her might,  
Triumphed oft against her enemies ;  
And yet, though overcome in haplesse fight,  
Shee triumphed on death, in enemies despight.

57.

Her reliques Fulgent having gathered,  
Fought with Severus, and him overthrew ;  
Yet in the chace was slaine of them that fled,  
So made them victors whome he did subdew.  
Then gan Carausius tirannize anew,  
And gainst the Romanes bent their proper powre ;  
But him Allectus treacherously flew,  
And tooke on him the robe of Emperoure :  
Nath'lesse the same enjoyed but short happy howre :

58.

For Asclepiodate him overcame,  
And left inglorious on the vanquisht playne,  
Without or robe or rag to hide his shame :  
Then afterwards he in his stead did raigne,  
But shortly was by Coyll in batteill slaine :  
Who after long debate, since Lucies tyme,  
Was of the Britons first crownd Soveraine.  
Then gan this Realme renew her passed prime :  
He of his name Coylchester built of stone and lime.

59.

Which when the Romanes heard, they hether sent  
Constantius, a man of mickle might,  
With whome king Coyll made an agreement,  
And to him gave for wife his daughter bright,  
Fayre Helena, the fairest living wight ;  
Who in all godly thewes and goodly praise  
Did far excell, but was most famous hight  
For skil in Musicke of all in her daies,  
Aswell in curious instruments as cunning laies.



60.

Of whome he did great Constantine begett,  
Who afterward was Emperour of Rome ;  
To which whiles absent he his mind did sett,  
Octavius here lept into his roome,  
And it usurped by unrighteous doome :  
But he his title justifie by might,  
Slaying Traherne, and having overcome  
The Romane legion in dreadfull fight.  
So settled he his kingdome, and confirm'd his right :

61.

But wanting yflew male, his daughter deare  
He gave in wedlocke to Maximian,  
And him with her made of his kingdome heyre,  
Who soone by meanes thereof the Empire wan,  
Till murdered by the freends of Gratian.  
Then gan the Hunnes and Picts invade this land,  
During the raigne of Maximinian ;  
Who dying left none heire them to withstand,  
But that they overran all parts with easy hand.

62.

The weary Britons, whose war-hable youth  
Was by Maximian lately ledd away,  
With wretched miseryes and woefull ruth,  
Were to those Pagans made an open pray,  
And daily spectacle of sad decay :  
Whome Romane warres, which now fowr hundred  
    yeares  
And more had wasted, could no whit dismay ;  
Til, by consent of Commons and of Peares,  
They crownd the second Constantine with joyous teares.

63.

Who having oft in batteill vanquished  
Those spoylefull Picts, and swarming Easterlings,  
Long time in peace his realme established,



Yet oft annoyd with sondry bordragings,<sup>i</sup>  
 Of neighbour Scots, and forrein Scatterlings<sup>k</sup>  
 With which the world did in those dayes abound :  
 Which to outbarre, with painefull pyonings<sup>l</sup>  
 From sea to sea he heapt a mighty mound,  
 Which from Alcluid to Panwelt did that border bownd.

64.

Three fones he dying left, all under age ;  
 By meanes whereof their uncle Vortigere  
 Usurpt the crowne during their pupillage ;  
 Which th' Infants tutors gathering to feare,  
 Them closely into Armorick did beare :  
 For dread of whom, and for those Picts annoyes,  
 He sent to Germany straunge aid to reare ;  
 From whence eftsoones arrived here three hoyes  
 Of Saxons, whom he for his safety imployes.

65.

Two brethren were their Capitayns, which hight  
 Hengist and Horfus, well approv'd in warre,  
 And both of them men of renownmed might ;  
 Who making vantage of their civile jarre,  
 And of those forreyners which came from farre,  
 Grew great, and got large portions of land,  
 That in the Realme ere long they stronger arre  
 Then they which fought at first their helping hand,

<sup>i</sup> *with sondry bordragings.*] *Bordraging*, as Mr. Upton has observed, is an incursion on the borders or marches of a country. See Spelman, in v. *Bordarii*. It is perhaps the same word in the poet's "Colin Clout's come home again :"

"No nightly *bodrags*, nor no hue and cries."

*Bodrags*, intended probably for *bordrags*. TODD.

<sup>k</sup> *and forrein Scatterlings.*] *Scattered* or *dispersed rovers* or *ravagers*. Spenser uses the word in his "View of the State of Ireland : " "Lofels and *scatterlings*." Again, "*scatterlings* and outlaws." UPTON.

<sup>l</sup> *with painefull pyonings.*] *Works of pioneers* : military works raised by pioneers. UPTON. Shakespeare has *pioned*, i.e. dug : see "The Tempest," A. iv. Sc. 1. C.



And Vortiger have forst<sup>m</sup> the kingdome to aband.

66.

But by the helpe of Vortimere his sonne,  
 He is againe unto his rule restord ;  
 And Hengist, seeming sad for that was donne,  
 Received is to grace and new accord,  
 Through his faire daughters face and flattring word.  
 Soone after which three hundred Lords he flew  
 Of British blood, all sitting at his bord ;  
 Whose dolefull moniments who list to rew,  
 Th' eternall marks of treason may at Stonheng vew.

67.

By this the sonnes of Constantine, which fled,  
 Ambrose and Uther, did ripe yeares attayne,  
 And, here arriving, strongly challenged  
 The crowne which Vortiger did long detayne :  
 Who, flying from his guilt, by them was flayne ;  
 And Hengist eke soon brought to shamefull death.  
 Thenceforth Aurelius peaceably did rayne,<sup>n</sup>  
 Till that through poyson stopped was his breath ;  
 So now entombed lies at Stoneheng by the heath.

68.

After him Uther, which Pendragon hight,  
 Succeeding—There abruptly it did end,<sup>o</sup>  
 Without full point, or other Cefure right ;  
 As if the rest some wicked hand did rend,  
 Or th' Author selfe could not at least attend  
 To finish it : that so untimely breach

<sup>m</sup> *And Vortiger have forst.*] So the edit. 1590 : later impressions for "have forst" read *enforst*, without any improvement of the text, and without notice in the original list of errata. C.

<sup>n</sup> *Aurelius peaceably did rayne.*] Aurelius, it should be remembered, was the second name of Ambrose. C.

<sup>o</sup> *There abruptly it did end.*] Because the history was brought down to the reign of Prince Arthur's father, although the Prince is represented by Spenser as ignorant of his descent from Uther-Pendragon. C.



The Prince him selfe halfe seemed to offend ;  
 Yet secret pleasure did offence empeach,  
 And wonder of antiquity long stopt his speach.

69.

At last, quite ravisht with delight to heare  
 The royall Ofspring of his native land,  
 Cryde out ; “ Deare countrey ! O ! how dearely deare  
 Ought thy remembraunce and perpetuall band  
 Be to thy foster Childe, that from thy hand  
 Did commun breath and nouriture receave.  
 How brutish is it not to understand  
 How much to her we owe, that all us gave ;  
 That gave unto us all what ever good we have.

70.

But Guyon all this while his booke did read,  
 Ne yet has ended ; for it was a great  
 And ample volume, that doth far exceed  
 My leasure so long leaves here to repeat :  
 It told how first Prometheus did create  
 A man, of many parts from beasts deryv’d,  
 And then stole fire from heven to animate  
 His worke, for which he was by Jove depryv’d  
 Of life him self, and hart-strings of an Aegle ryv’d.<sup>p</sup>

71.

That man so made he called Elfe, to weet  
 Quick, the first author of all Elfin kynd ;  
 Who, wandring through the world with wearie feet,  
 Did in the gardins of Adonis fynd  
 A goodly creature, whom he deemd in mynd  
 To be no earthly wight, but either Spright,  
 Or Angell, th’ authour of all woman kynd ;

---

<sup>p</sup> *and hart-strings of an Aegle ryv’d.*] i.e. by an eagle “riv’d” or torn. There is perhaps no one point in our language which has varied more than the use of prepositions.



Therefore a Fay he her according hight,  
Of whom all Faryes spring, and fetch their lignage right.

72.

Of these a mighty people shortly grew,  
And puissant kinges which all the world warrayd,  
And to them selves all Nations did subdew.  
The first and eldest, which that scepter swayd,  
Was Elfin; him all India obeyd,  
And all that now America men call:  
Next him was noble Elfinan, who laid  
Cleopolis foundation first of all:  
But Elfiline enclosd it with a golden wall.

73.

His sonne was Elfinell, who overcame  
The wicked Gobbelines in bloody field;  
But Elfant was of most renowned fame,  
Who all of Christall did Panthea build:  
Then Elfar, who two brethren gyauntes kild,  
The one of which had two heades, th' other three:  
Then Elfinor, who was in magick skild;  
He built by art upon the glassy See  
A bridge of bras, whose sound heavens thunder seem'd to bee.

74.

He left three sonnes, the which in order raynd,  
And all their Ofspring, in their dew descents;  
Even seven hundred Princes, which maintaynd  
With mightie deedes their sondry governments;  
That were too long their infinite contents  
Here to record, ne much materiall:  
Yet should they be most famous moniments,  
And brave ensample, both of martiall  
And civil rule, to kinges and states imperiall.

75.

After all these Elficleos did rayne,  
The wise Elficleos, in great Majestie,



Who mightily that scepter did sustayne,  
And with rich spoyles and famous victorie  
Did high advaunce the crowne of Faery :  
He left two sonnes, of which faire Elferon,  
The eldest brother, did untimely dy ;  
Whose emptie place the mightie Oberon  
Doubly supplide, in spousall and dominion.

76.

Great was his power and glorie over all  
Which, him before, that sacred seate did fill,  
That yet remaines his wide memoriall.  
He dying left the fairest Tanaquill,  
Him to succeede therein, by his last will :  
Fairer and nobler liveth none this howre,  
Ne like in grace, ne like in learned skill ;  
Therefore they Glorian call that glorious flowre :  
Long mayst thou, Glorian, live in glory and great powre !

77.

Beguyld thus with delight of novelties,  
And naturall desire of countrys state,  
So long they redd in those antiquities,  
That how the time was fled they quite forgate ;  
Till gentle Alma, seeing it so late,  
Perforce their studies broke, and them besought  
To thinke how supper did them long awaite :  
So halfe unwilling from their bookes them brought,  
And fayrely feasted as so noble knightes she ought.







## CANTO XI.

*The enimies of Temperaunce  
besiege her dwelling place :  
Prince Arthure them repelles, and fowle  
Maleger doth deface.*

I.



**W**HAT warre so cruel, or what siege so fore,  
As that which strong affections doe apply  
Against the forte of reason evermore,  
To bring the fowle into captivity ?  
Their force is fiercer through infirmity  
Of the fraile flesh, relenting to their rage,  
And exercise most bitter tyranny  
Upon the partes brought into their bondage :  
No wretchednesse is like to sinfull vellenage.

2.

But in a body which doth freely yeeld  
His partes to reasons rule obedient,  
And letteth her that ought the sceptor weeld,  
All happy peace and goodly government  
Is fetled there in sure establishment.  
There Alma, like a virgin Queene most bright,  
Doth florish in all beautie excellent ;  
And to her guesstes doth bounteous banquet dight,  
Attempted goodly well for health and for delight.

3.

Early, before the Morne with cremosin ray



The windowes of bright heaven opened had,  
Through which into the world the dawning day  
Might looke, that maketh every creature glad,  
Uprose Sir Guyon, in bright armour clad,  
And to his purposed journey him prepar'd :  
With him the Palmer eke in habit sad  
Him felfe addrest to that adventure hard :  
So to the rivers syde they both together far'd :

4.

Where them awaited ready at the ford  
The Ferriman, as Alma had behight,  
With his well-rigged bote : They goe aboard,  
And he eftsoones gan launch his barke forthright.  
Ere long they rowed were quite out of sight,  
And fast the land behynd them fled away.  
But let them pas, whiles winde and wether right  
Doe serve their turnes : here I a while must stay,  
To see a cruell fight doen by the prince this day.

5.

For all so soone as Guyon thence was gon  
Upon his voyage with his trustie guyde,  
That wicked band of villeins fresh begon  
That castle to assaile on every side,  
And lay strong siege about it far and wyde.  
So huge and infinite their numbers were,  
That all the land they under them did hyde ;  
So fowle and ugly, that exceeding feare  
Their visages imprest when they approched neare.

6.

Them in twelve troupes their Captein did dispart,  
And round about in fittest steades did place,  
Where each might best offend his proper part,  
And his contrary object most deface,  
As every one seem'd meetest in that cace.  
Seven of the same against the Castle gate



In strong entrenchments he did closely place,  
Which with incessant force and endless hate  
They battred day and night, and entraunce did awate.

7.

The other five five fondry wayes he sett  
Against the five great Bulwarkes of that pyle,  
And unto each a Bulwarke did arrett,<sup>a</sup>  
T' assayle with open force or hidden guyle,  
In hope thereof to win victorious spoile.  
They all that charge did fervently apply  
With greedie malice and importune toyle,  
And planted there their huge artillery,  
With which they dayly made most dreadfull battery.

8.

The first troupe was a monstrous rablement  
Of fowle misshapen wightes, of which some were  
Headed like Owles, with becks uncomely bent;  
Others like Dogs; others like Gryphons dreare;  
And some had wings, and some had clawes to teare:  
And every one of them had Lynxes eyes;  
And every one did bow and arrowes beare.  
All those were lawlesse lustes, corrupt envyes,  
And covetous aspects, all cruel enemyes.

9.

Those same against the bulwarke of the Sight  
Did lay strong siege and battailous assault,  
Ne once did yield it respitt day nor night;  
But soone as Titan gan his head exault,  
And soone againe as he his light withhault,  
Their wicked engins they against it bent;  
That is, each thing by which the eyes may fault:  
But two then all more huge and violent,

---

<sup>a</sup> *a Bulwarke did arrett.*] *Appoint, or assign.* The poet often uses the word in this sense. TODD. See B. iii. C. viii. St. 7, &c. C.



Beautie and money, they against that Bulwarke lent.<sup>b</sup>

10.

The second Bulwarke was the Hearing fence,  
Gainst which the second troupe assignment makes;  
Deformed creatures, in straunge difference,  
Some having heads like Harts, some like to Snakes,  
Some like wilde Bores late rouzd out of the brakes:  
Slaunderous reproches, and fowle infamies,  
Leafinges, backbytinges, and vain-glorious crakes,  
Bad counfels, prayfes, and false flatteries:  
All those against that fort did bend their batteries.

11.

Likewise that same third Fort, that is the Smell,  
Of that third troupe was cruelly assayd;  
Whose hideous shapés were like to feendes of hell,  
Some like to houndes, some like to Apes, dismayd,<sup>c</sup>

<sup>b</sup> *they against that Bulwarke lent.*] So the edit. 4to. 1590; but that of 1596 substituted "they that Bulwarke *so*rely rent:" it may have been the poet's emendation, and we therefore give it in a note; but we adhere to the intelligible text of the earliest impression. C.

<sup>c</sup> *to Apes, dismayd,*] *Dismayed* is *frightened*. But I can hardly think that Spenser uses it here in that sense. Possibly by *dismayed* or *dismade* he means *ugly, ill shaped*; in Fr. *malfait*. Quære, whether it should be *mismade*? JORTIN. Our poet dresses out these hideous phantoms as ugly as imagination can form them. An ape is an ugly likeness of a man; but surely a *frightened* ape, an ape *dismaid*, is still more ugly. A wild boar is a frightful creature; but a wild boar, roused from the brake, is more frightful. See St. 10. So in F. Q. ii. ix. 13:—

"Sterne was their look like wild *amazed* steares."

Take away the comma after apes, and read "some like to *apes dismayd*." UPTON. As *dismayd* in Spenser's own editions is included between two commas, and there is only a comma after *hell*, I should suppose it does not agree either with *apes* or *houndes*, but with *feendes of hell*; and that "Some like to houndes, some like to apes," should be read as in a parenthesis: and then the expression will be parallel to "ghastly spectacle *dismayd*," F. Q. iii. iii. 50. *Dismayd*, i. e. *ugly, ill shaped*. CHURCH. Mr. Warton has collected a variety of instances to show generally that Spenser often prefixes *mis* to words, as *misfeigning, misdiet, &c. &c.*; but particularly also to justify Dr. Jortin's very happy conjecture, as he terms it, without which it will be difficult to make sense of this passage. Mr. Warton therefore approves of *mismade*, and adds, that probably



Some like to Puttockes, all in plumes arayd ;  
 All shap't according their conditions :  
 For by those ugly formes weren pourtrayd  
 Foolish delights, and fond abusions,  
 Which doe that sence besiege with light illusions.

12.

And that fourth band which cruell battry bent  
 Against the fourth Bulwarke, that is the Taste,  
 Was, as the rest, a gryfie rablement ;  
 Some mouth'd like greedy Oysteriges ; some faste  
 Like loathly Toades ; some fashioned in the waste  
 Like swine : for so deformd is luxury,  
 Surfeat, misdiet, and unthriftie waste,  
 Vaine feastes, and ydle superfluity :  
 All those this fences Fort assayle incessantly.

13.

But the fift troupe, most horrible of hew  
 And ferce of force, is dreadfull to report ;<sup>d</sup>  
 For some like Snailles, some did like spyders shew,  
 And some like ugly Urchins thick and short :  
 Cruelly they assayed that fift Fort,<sup>e</sup>

---

Spenser sent it to the press *mismayd*, that it might rhyme more exactly, a point in which the poet was very exact ; but the compositors were better acquainted with *dismayd*, which they accordingly adopted. I must confess, that Mr. Church's explanation of this passage appears to me judicious, namely, the preservation of the comma after *apes*, the application of *dismayd* to the *feends*, and the parallel usage of *dismayd*. I may also add, that Spenser often prefixes *dis* as well as *mis* to words ; however, here he seems to have applied it, as Milton has applied it to the word *allied* in his "Samson," ver. 1022. "Nor both so loosely *disallied* their nuptials," that is, *misallied*, *badly contracted*. TODD. We think it safer to reproduce the old text, but Jortin's conjecture, of *dis-made* for "dismayd," must not be lightly rejected. C.

<sup>d</sup> *is dreadfull to report.*] So the first edition reads : the poet's second edition reads *was*, which the rest follow. TODD.

<sup>e</sup> *Cruelly they assayed that fift Fort.*] This is the text of the 4to. 1590 ; but later impressions not only invert "Cruelly they," but they pervert the poet's language by altering "assayed," which is perfectly intelligible, to *assayled*. Where no emendation is necessary, we make none. "Assay" is used in the same manner in the next stanza. C.



Armed with dartes of sensuall Delight,  
 With stinges of carnall lust, and strong effort  
 Of feeling pleasures, with which day and night  
 Against that same fift bulwarke they continued fight.

14.

Thus these twelve troupes with dreadfull puissaunce  
 Against that Castle restlesse siege did lay,  
 And evermore their hideous Ordinaunce  
 Upon the Bulwarkes cruelly did play,  
 That now it gan to threaten neare decay :  
 And evermore their wicked Capitayn  
 Provoked them the breaches to assay,  
 Sometimes with threats, sometimes with hope of gayn,  
 Which by the ranfack of that peece<sup>f</sup> they should attayn.

15.

On th' other syde, th' assieged Castles ward  
 Their stedfast stonds did mightily maintaine,  
 And many bold repulse and many hard  
 Atchievement wrought, with perill and with payne,  
 That goodly frame from ruine to sustaine :  
 And those two brethren Gyauntes did defend  
 The walles so stoutly with their sturdie mayne,  
 That never entraunce any durst pretend,  
 But they to direfull death their groning ghosts did send.

16.

The noble Virgin, Ladie of the Place,  
 Was much dismayed with that dreadful fight,  
 For never was she in so evill cace,  
 Till that the Prince, seeing her wofull plight,

---

<sup>f</sup> *that peece.*] "Peece" is often used by Spenser for *castle*. See F. Q. i. x. 59; iii. x. 10; v. ii. 21. "Peece" for *castle* may perhaps have been adopted from the Ital. *piazza*, which is sometimes used for *a fortified place*. See Della Crusca. The Spanish have *pieça* for *a room*. See Steevens's Span. Dict. See also "Tesoro de las tres Lenguas," fol. Geneva, 1671, p. 430. "*Pieça, vne sale ou chambre d'un logis, qui se dit in terme de guerre aussi vne piece.*" TODD.



Gan her recomfort from so sad affright,  
 Offring his service, and his dearest life  
 For her defence against that Carle to fight,  
 Which was their chiefe and th' authour of that strife :  
 She him remerci'd as the Patrone of her life.

17.

Eftsoones himselfe in glitterand armes he dight,  
 And his well proved weapons to him hent ;  
 So taking courteous conge, he behight<sup>g</sup>  
 Those gates to be unbar'd, and forth he went.  
 Fayre mote he thee,<sup>h</sup> the prowest and most gent,  
 That ever brandished bright steele on hye !  
 Whome soone as that unruly rablement  
 With his gay Squyre issewing did espye,  
 They reard a most outrageous dreadfull yelling cry :

18.

And therewithall attonce at him let fly  
 Their fluttring arrowes, thicke as flakes of snow,  
 And round about him flocke impetuously,  
 Like a great water flood, that tombling low  
 From the high mountaines, threatens to overflow  
 With suddain fury all the fertile playne,  
 And the sad husbandmans long hope doth throw  
 A downe the streame, and all his vowes make vayne ;  
 Nor bounds nor banks his headlong ruine may sustayne.

19.

Upon his shield their heaped hayle he bore,  
 And with his sword disperst the raskall flockes,  
 Which fled a fonder, and him fell before ;  
 As withered leaves drop from their dried stockes,

<sup>g</sup> *be behight.*] "Behight" is here to be taken in the sense of *commanded*, as if it were in some way related to the word *behest*. Todd refers to "hight," B. i. C. iv. St. 6, (vol. i. p. 228) ; but they have no connection, for there "hight" means *entrusted*. C.

<sup>h</sup> *Fayre mote be thee.*] *Thrive, prosper.* See the note on F. Q. ii. i. 33. UPTON. [This vol. p. 97.]



When the wroth Western wind does reave their locks :  
 And underneath him his courageous steed,  
 The fierce Spumador, trode them downe like docks ;  
 The fierce Spumador, borne of heavenly feed,  
 Such as Laomedon of Phœbus race did breed.

20.

Which fuddeine horroure and confused cry  
 When as their Capteine heard, in haste he yode  
 The cause to weet, and fault to remedy :  
 Upon a Tygre swift and fierce he rode,  
 That as the winde ran underneath his lode,  
 Whiles his long legs nigh raught unto the ground.  
 Full large he was of limbe, and shoulders brode,  
 But of such subtile substance and unfound,  
 That like a ghost he seem'd whose grave-clothes were  
 unbound :

21.

And in his hand a bended bow was seene,  
 And many arrowes under his right side,  
 All deadly daungerous, all cruell keene,  
 Headed with flint, and fethers bloody dide ;  
 Such as the Indians in their quivers hide :  
 Those could he well direct and streight as line,  
 And bid them strike the marke which he had eyde ;  
 Ne was their salve, ne was there medicine,  
 That mote recure their wounds ; so inly they did tine.<sup>1</sup>

22.

As pale and wan as ashes was his looke,  
 His body leane and meagre as a rake,  
 And skin all withered like a dried rooke ;  
 Thereto as cold and drery as a snake,  
 That seemd to tremble evermore and quake ;

---

<sup>1</sup> *so inly they did tine.*] *Inflame, rage.* A. S. *tendan, accendere.*  
 UPTON. Possibly "tine" is to be taken as a form (for the rhyme sake)  
 of the verb to *teen*, to *hurt*, to *cause sorrow or grief*. C.



All in a canvas thin he was bedight,  
And girded with a belt of twisted brake :  
Upon his head he wore an Helmet light,  
Made of a dead mans skull, that seemd a ghastly fight.

23.

Maleger was his name ; and after him  
There follow'd fast at hand two wicked Hags,  
With hoary lockes all loose, and visage grim ;  
Their feet unshod, their bodies wrapt in rags,  
And both as swift on foot as chased Stags ;  
And yet the one her other legge had lame,  
Which with a staffe, all full of litle snags,  
She did support, and Impotence her name :  
But th' other was Impatience, armd with raging flame.

24.

Soone as the Carle from far the Prince espyde  
Gliftring in armes and warlike ornament,  
His Beast he felly prickt on either syde,  
And his mischievous bow full readie bent,  
With which at him a cruell shaft he sent :  
But he was warie, and it warded well  
Upon his shield, that it no further went,  
But to the ground the idle quarrell fell :<sup>k</sup>  
Then he another and another did expell.

25.

Which to prevent the Prince his mortall speare  
Soone to him raught, and fierce at him did ride,  
To be avenged of that shot whyleare ;  
But he was not so hardy to abide  
That bitter stownd, but turning quicke aside  
His light-foot beast, fled fast away for feare :

---

<sup>k</sup> *the idle quarrell fell.*] Fr. *Carreau*, or *Quarreau*, a short thick square dart shot out of cross-bows. "Gloss. Urr." Chaucer. See also Chaucer, p. 227, edit. Urr :—

"And ground *quarelis* sharpe of steele." CHURCH.



Whom to pourfue the Infant after hide  
 So fast as his good Courser could him beare;  
 But labour loft it was to weene approach him neare.

26.

For as the winged wind his Tigre fled,  
 That vew of eye could scarce him overtake,  
 Ne scarce his feet on ground were seene to tread:  
 Through hils and dales he speedy way did make,  
 Ne hedge ne ditch his readie passage brake;  
 And in his flight the villein turn'd his face  
 (As wons the Tartar by the Caspian lake,  
 Whenas the Ruffian him in fight does chace)  
 Unto his Tygres taile, and shot at him apace.

27.

Apace he shot, and yet he fled apace,  
 Still as the greedy knight nigh to him drew;  
 And oftentimes he would relent his pace,  
 That him his foe more fiercely should pourfue:  
 But when his uncouth manner he did vew,  
 He gan avize to follow him no more,  
 But keepe his standing, and his shaftes eschew,  
 Untill he quite had spent his perlous store,<sup>1</sup>  
 And then assayle him fresh, ere he could shift for more.

28.

But that lame Hag, still as abroad he strew  
 His wicked arrowes, gathered them againe,  
 And to him brought, fresh batteill to renew;  
 Which he espying cast her to restraine  
 From yielding succour to that cursed Swaine,<sup>m</sup>  
 And her attaching thought her hands to tye;

<sup>1</sup> *his perlous store.*] "Perlous" is a very common colloquial abbreviation of *perilous*: instances of its use are numerous as needles. C.

<sup>m</sup> *that cursed Swaine.*] "Swaine" is here used merely to designate the person, and for the convenience of the rhyme. Swain is from the A. S. *Swang*, operarius, which itself comes from *swingan*, which we have usually in the form of *swink*. C.



But soone as him dismounted on the plaine  
That other Hag did far away espye  
Binding her sister, she to him ran hastily ;

29.

And catching hold of him, as downe he lent,  
Him backward overthrew, and downe him stayd  
With their rude handes and gryesly graplement ;  
Till that the villein, comming to their ayd,  
Upon him fell, and lode upon him layd :  
Full litle wanted but he had him slaine,  
And of the battell balefull end had made,  
Had not his gentle Squire beheld his paine,  
And comen to his reskew, ere his bitter bane.

30.

So greatest and most glorious thing on ground  
May often need the helpe of weaker hand ;  
So feeble is mans state, and life unfound,  
That in assuraunce it may never stand,  
Till it dissolved be from earthly band.  
Proofe be thou, Prince, the prowest man alyve,  
And noblest borne of all in Britayne land ;<sup>n</sup>  
Yet thee fierce Fortune did so nearely drive,  
That, had not grace thee blest, thou shouldest not survive.

31.

The Squyre arriving fiercely in his armes  
Snatcht first the one, and then the other Jade,  
His chieftest letts and authors of his harmes,  
And them perforce withheld with threatned blade,  
Least that his Lord they should behinde invade ;  
The whiles the Prince, prickt with reprochful shame,

---

<sup>n</sup> of all in Britayne land.] It is "*Britom* land" in the 4to. 1590, but corrected to our text in the errata ; meaning, of course, the land of Britain. Why later editors, in spite of the correction, should adhere to *Briton*, we know not. In the last line of this stanza, "survive" is *revive* in the original edition, but amended to "survive" in the errata. Nevertheless *revive* is preserved in the folios 1609 and 1611. C.



As one awakte out of long flombring shade,  
 Revivying thought of glory and of fame,  
 United all his powres to purge him felfe from blame.

32.

Like as a fire, the which in hollow cave  
 Hath long bene underkept and down fuppreft,  
 With murmurous difdayne doth inly rave,  
 And grudge in fo ftreight prifon to be preft,  
 At laft breakes forth with furious infest,<sup>o</sup>  
 And ft rives to mount unto his native feat;  
 All that did earft it hinder and moleft,  
 Yt now devoures with flames and fcorching heat,  
 And carries into fmoake with rage and horror great.

33.

So mightely the Briton Prince him rouzd  
 Out of his holde, and broke his caytive bands;  
 And as a Beare, whom angry cures have touzd,  
 Having off-shakt them and efapt their hands,  
 Becomes more fell, and all that him withftands  
 Treads down and overthrowes. Now had the Carle  
 Alighted from his Tigre, and his hands  
 Difcharged of his bow and deadly quar'le,  
 To feize upon his foe flatt lying on the marle.

34.

Which now him turnd to difavantage deare;  
 For neither can he fly, nor other harme,  
 But trust unto his ftrength and manhood meare,  
 Sith now he is far from his monftrous fwarme,  
 And of his weapons did himfelfe difarme.  
 The knight, yet wrothfull for his late difgrace,

---

<sup>o</sup> *with furious infest.*] So the 4to. 1590, and we therefore prefer “infest” to *unrest*, which was the word fubftituted in later impreffions. Church did not believe *unrest* to have been Spenser’s word, and we find no trace of any fuch change among the errata to the firft edition. If the poet had intended to recal “infest” we fhould moft probably have feen the proof of it there. C.



Fiercely advaunst his valorous right arme,  
And him so fore smott with his yron mace,  
That groveling to the ground he fell, and fild his place.

35.

Wel weened hee that field was then his owne,  
And all his labor brought to happy end;  
When fuddein up the villeine overthrowne  
Out of his fwowne arose, fresh to contend,  
And gan him selfe to second battaill bend,  
As hurt he had not beene. Thereby there lay  
An huge great stone, which stood upon one end,  
And had not bene removed many a day;  
Some land-marke seemd to bee, or signe of fundry way:

36.

The fame he snatcht, and with exceeding sway  
Threw at his foe, who was right well aware  
To shonne the engin of his meant decay;  
It booted not to thinke thot thraw to beare,  
But grownd he gave, and lightly lept areare:  
Eft fierce retourning, as a faulcon fayre,  
That once hath failed of her souse full neare,  
Remounts againe into the open ayre,  
And unto better fortune doth her selfe prepayre.

37.

So brave retourning, with his brandisht blade  
He to the Carle him selfe agayn addrest,  
And strooke at him so sternely, that he made  
An open passage through his riven brest,  
That halfe the steele behind his backe did rest;  
Which drawing backe, he looked evermore  
When the hart blood should gush out of his cheft,  
Or his dead corse should fall upon the flore;  
But his dead corse upon the flore fell nathemore.

38.

Ne drop of blood appeared shed to bee,



All were the wovnd so wide and wonderous  
That through his carcas one might playnly see.  
Halfe in amaze with horror hideous,  
And halfe in rage to be deluded thus,  
Again through both the sides he strooke him quight,  
That made his spright to grone full piteous ;  
Yet nathemore forth fled his groning spright,  
But freshly, as at first, prepard himselfe to fight.

39.

Thereat he smitten was with great affright,  
And trembling terror did his hart apall ;  
Ne wist he what to thinke of that same fight,  
Ne what to say, ne what to doe at all :  
He doubted least it were some magicall  
Illusion that did beguile his sense,  
Or wandring ghost that wanted funerall,  
Or aery spirite under false pretence,  
Or hellish feend rayfd up through divelish science.

40.

His wonder far exceeded reasons reach,  
That he began to doubt his dazeled sight,  
And oft of error did himselfe appeach :  
Flesh without blood, a person without spright,  
Wounds without hurt, a body without might,  
That could doe harme, yet could not harmed bee,  
That could not die, yet seemd a mortall wight,  
That was most strong in most infirmittee ;  
Like did he never heare, like did he never see.

41.

A while he stood in this astonishment,  
Yet would he not for all his great dismay  
Give over to effect his first intent,  
And th' utmost meanes of victory assay,  
Or th' utmost ysswe of his owne decay.  
His owne good sword Mordure, that never fayld



At need till now, he lightly threw away,  
 And his bright shield that nought him now avayld;  
 And with his naked hands him forcibly assayld.

42.

Twixt his two mighty armes him up he snatcht,  
 And crusht his carcas so against his brest,  
 That the disdainfull fowle he thence dispatcht,  
 And th' ydle breath all utterly exprest.  
 Tho, when he felt him dead, adowne he kest  
 The lumpish corse unto the fencelesse grownd;  
 Adowne he kest it with so puissant wrest,  
 That backe againe it did alofte rebownd,  
 And gave against his mother earth a gronefull fownd.

43.

As when Joves harnesse-bearing Bird from hye  
 Stoupes at a flying heron with proud disdayne,  
 The stone-dead quarrey<sup>p</sup> falls so forcibly,  
 That yt rebownds against the lowly playne,  
 A second fall redoubling backe agayne.  
 Then thought the Prince all peril sure was past,  
 And that he victor onely did remayne;  
 No sooner thought, then that the Carle as fast  
 Gan heap huge strokes on him, as ere he down was cast.

44.

Nigh his wits end then woxe th' amazed knight,  
 And thought his labor lost, and travell vayne,  
 Against this lifelesse shadow so to fight:  
 Yet life he saw, and felt his mighty mayne,  
 That, whiles he marveild still, did still him payne;  
 For thy he gan some other wayes advize,  
 How to take life from that dead-living fwayne,

---

<sup>p</sup> *The stone-dead quarrey.*] "Quarrey" seems properly to mean dead game, placed in a *square*; but it is used generally for the prey killed by falcons or hunters. It occurs in this sense in our old poets repeatedly. C.



Whom still he marked freshly to arize  
From th' earth, and from her womb new spirits to re-  
prize.<sup>a</sup>

45.

He then remembred well, that had bene sayd,  
How th' Earth his mother was, and first him bore ;  
Shee eke, so often as his life decayd,  
Did life with usury to him restore,  
And reysd him up much stronger then before,  
So soone as he unto her wombe did fall :  
Therefore to grownd he would him cast no more,  
Ne him committ to grave terrestriall,  
But beare him farre from hope of succour usuall.

46.

Tho up he caught him twixt his puissant hands,  
And having scruzd<sup>r</sup> out of his carrion corse  
The lothfull life, now loosd from sinfull bands,  
Upon his shoulders carried him perforce  
Above three furlongs, taking his full course  
Until he came unto a standing lake ;  
Him thereinto he threw without remorse,  
Ne stird, till hope of life did him forsake :  
So end of that Carles dayes and his owne paynes did make.

47.

Which when those wicked Hags from far did spy,  
Like two mad dogs they ran about the lands,  
And th' one of them with dreadfull yelling crye,  
Throwing away her broken chaines and bands,  
And having quencht her burning fier-brands,  
Hedlong her selfe did cast into that lake ;

---

<sup>a</sup> *new spirits to reprize.*] To take again. Fr. *reprendre*. CHURCH.  
<sup>r</sup> *And having scruzd.*] Pressed, squeezed, or screwed out, as in F. Q.  
iii. v. 33. It seems that the word has hitherto only been found in  
Spenser, and Bishop Hall. Dr. Johnson supposes it to be the same word  
as that vulgarly pronounced *scrouge*. C.



But Impotence with her owne wilfull hands  
One of Malegers curfed darts did take,  
So ryv'd her trembling hart, and wicked end did make.

48.

Thus now alone he conquerour remaines :

Tho, cumming to his Squyre that kept his steed,  
Thought to have mounted ; but his feeble vaines  
Him faild thereto, and served not his need,  
Through losse of blood which from his wounds did  
bleed,

That he began to faint, and life decay :  
But his good Squyre, him helping up with speed,  
With stedfast hand upon his horse did stay,  
And led him to the Castle by the beaten way.

49.

Where many Groomes and Squyres ready were  
To take him from his steed full tenderly ;  
And eke the fayrest Alma mett him there  
With balme, and wine, and costly spicery,  
To comfort him in his infirmity.  
Estefoones shee cauld him up to be convayd,  
And of his armes despoyled easily  
In sumptuous bed shee made him to be layd ;  
And al the while his wounds were dressing by him stayd.







## CANTO XII.

*Guyon, by Palmers governaunce,<sup>a</sup>  
passing through perilles great,  
Doth overthrow the Bowre of blis,  
and Acrasy defeat.*

I.



NOW ginnes that goodly frame of Tempe-  
raunce  
Fayrely to rise, and her adorned hed  
To pricke of highest prayse forth to ad-  
vaunce,  
Formerly grounded and fast fetteled  
On firme foundation of true bountyhed :  
And this brave knight, that for this vertue fightes,  
Now comes to point of that fame perilous sted,  
Where Pleasure dwelles in sensuall delights,  
Mongst thousand dangers, and ten thousand Magick  
mightes.

2.

Two dayes now in that sea he sayled has,  
Ne ever land beheld, ne living wight,  
Ne ought save perill still as he did pas :

---

<sup>a</sup> *Guyon, by Palmers governaunce,  
passing through perilles great.*] So the poet's second edition reads.  
The first reads, "Guyon, *through* Palmers governaunce, *through* passing,  
&c." TODD. The old printer was perhaps puzzled by the word  
"through," (occurring twice, and afterwards altered to "by,") and  
not only improperly repeated it, but changed its place. C.



Tho, when appeared the third Morrow bright  
 Upon the waves to spred her trembling light,  
 An hideous roring far away they heard,  
 That all their senses filled with affright;  
 And streight they saw the raging surges reard  
 Up to the skyes, that them of drowning made affeard.

3.

Said then the Boteman, "Palmer, stere aright,  
 And keepe an even course; for yonder way  
 We needes must pas (God doe us well acquight!)  
 That is the Gulfe of Greedinesse, they say,  
 That deepe engorgeth all this worldes pray;  
 Which having swallowd up excessively,  
 He soone in vomit up againe doth lay,  
 And belcheth forth his superfluity,  
 That all the seas for feare doe seeme away to fly.

4.

"On th' other syde an hideous Rocke is pight  
 Of mightie Magnes stone, whose craggie clift  
 Depending from on high, dreadfull to fight,  
 Over the waves his rugged armes doth lift,  
 And threatneth downe to throw his ragged rift  
 On who so cometh nigh; yet nigh it drawes  
 All passengers, that none from it can shift:  
 For, whiles they fly that Gulfe's devouring jawes,  
 They on this rock<sup>b</sup> are rent, and sunck in helples wawes."<sup>c</sup>

5.

Forward they passe, and strongly he them rowes,

<sup>b</sup> *They on this rock.*] Todd and others read, for no assigned reason, "They on *the* rock." It is "this rock" in every old edition. C.

<sup>c</sup> *And sunck in helples wawes.*] Chaucer, as well as other poets of his time, uses *wawe* for *wave*, but not particularly for the rhyme's sake. See p. 520, ed. Urr.

"Plongid in the *wawe* of mortal distresse."

*Helples wawes* are waves from which there is no being saved. See *mercilesse despair*, F. Q. iv. viii. 51. CHURCH.



Untill they nigh unto that Gulfe arrayve,  
 Where streame more violent and greedy growes :  
 Then he with all his puisaunce doth stryve  
 To strike his oares, and mightily doth drive  
 The hollow vessell through the threatfull wave ;  
 Which, gaping wide to swallow them alyve  
 In th' huge abyss of his engulphing grave,  
 Doth rore at them in vaine, and with great terrour rave.

6.

They, passing by, that grisely mouth did see  
 Sucking the seas into his entralles deepe,  
 That seemd more horrible then hell to bee,  
 Or that darke dreadfull hole of Tartare steepe<sup>d</sup>  
 Through which the damned ghosts doen often creepe  
 Backe to the world, bad livers to torment :  
 But nought that falles into this direfull deepe,  
 Ne that approacheth nigh the wyde descent,  
 May backe retourne, but is condemned to be drent.

7.

On th' other side they saw that perilous Rocke,  
 Threatning it selfe on them to ruinate,  
 On whose sharp cliffs the ribs of vessels broke ;  
 And shivered ships, which had beene wrecked late,  
 Yet stuck with carcasses exanimate  
 Of such, as having all their substance spent  
 In wanton joyes and lustes intemperate,  
 Did afterwards make shipwracke violent  
 Both of their life and fame, for ever fowly blent.

8.

For thy this hight The Rocke of vile Reproch,  
 A dangerous and detestable place,  
 To which nor fish nor fowle did once approach,

---

<sup>d</sup> *Of Tartare steepe.*] Tartare (we need hardly say here) is another name for hell: see vol. i. p. 297. C.



But yelling Meawes, with Seagulles hoars and bace,  
 And Cormoyraunts, with birds of ravenous race,  
 Which still sat wayting on that waftfull clift  
 For spoile of wretches, whose unhappy cace,  
 After lost credite and consumed thrift,  
 At last them driven hath to this despairefull drift.

## 9.

The Palmer, seeing them in safetie past,  
 Thus said; "Behold th' ensamples in our fights  
 Of lustfull luxurie and thriftlesse waft.  
 What now is left of miserable wightes,  
 Which spent their looser daies in lewd delights,  
 But shame and sad reproch, here to be red  
 By these rent reliques, speaking their ill plights?  
 Let all that live hereby be counselled  
 To shunne Rocke of Reproch, and it as death to dred!"

## 10.

So forth they rowed; and that Ferryman  
 With his stiffe oares did brush the sea so strong,  
 That the hoare waters from his frigot ran,  
 And the light bubbles daunced all along,  
 Whiles the salt brine out of the billowes sprong.  
 At last far off they many Islandes spy  
 On every side floting the floodes emong:  
 Then said the knight; "Lo! I the land descry;  
 Therefore, old Syre, thy course doe thereunto apply."

## 11.

"That may not bee," said then the Ferryman,  
 "Least wee unweeting hap to be fordonne;  
 For those same Islands, seeming now and than,  
 Are not firme land, nor any certein wonne,<sup>e</sup>  
 But stragling plots which to and fro doe ronne

---

<sup>e</sup> *nor any certein wonne.*] "Wonne" is *dwelling* place, or *abiding* place. We have had it before in the same sense, vol. i. p. 278. C.



In the wide waters: therefore are they hight  
 The wandring Islands. Therefore doe them shonne;  
 For they have ofte drawne many a wandring wight  
 Into most deadly daunger and distressed plight.

12.

“ Yet well they seeme to him, that farre doth vew,  
 Both faire and fruitfull, and the grownd dispred  
 With grassy greene of delectable hew;  
 And the tall trees with leaves appareled  
 Are deckt with blossoms dyde in white and red,  
 That mote the passengers thereto allure;  
 But whosoever once hath fastened  
 His foot thereon, may never it recure,  
 But wandreth evermore uncertein and unfure.

13.

“ As th’ Isle of Delos whylome, men report,  
 Amid th’ Aegæan sea long time did stray,  
 Ne made for shipping any certeine port,  
 Till that Latona traveiling that way,  
 Flying from Junoes wrath and hard assay,  
 Of her fayre twins was there delivered,  
 Which afterwards did rule the night and day:  
 Thenceforth it firmly was establisshed,  
 And for Apolloes temple highly herried.”<sup>f</sup>

14.

They to him hearken, as beseemeth meete,  
 And passe on forward: so their way does ly,  
 That one of those same Islands, which doe fleet

---

<sup>f</sup> *And for Appolloes temple highly herried.*] So Spenser’s first edition reads. The second reads, “Apolloes *honour*,” to which the rest adhere. But this, I think, is not the poet’s alteration; for it is a tautology to say, “And for Apolloes *honour* highly *herried*,” the word “herried” signifying *honoured*. TODD. The verb “hery” or “herry” occurs twice in “The Shep. Cal.” for Feb. and Nov. (see vol. i. pp. 32, 132), and in one place E. K. explains it as to *worship*, and in the other to *honour*: both, in fact, are right, as may be seen on page 352 of this vol. C.



In the wide fea, they needes must passen by,  
 Which seemd so sweet and pleasaunt to the eye,  
 That it would tempt a man to touchen there.  
 Upon the banck they sitting did espy  
 A daintie damfell dressing of her heare,  
 By whom a little skippet floting did appeare.

15.

She, them espying, loud to them can call,<sup>g</sup>  
 Bidding them nigher draw unto the shore,  
 For she had cause to busie them withall;  
 And therewith lowdly laught: But nathemore  
 Would they once turne, but kept on as afore:  
 Which when she saw, she left her lockes undight,  
 And running to her boat withouten ore,  
 From the departing land it launched light,  
 And after them did drive with all her power and might.

16.

Whom overtaking, she in merry fort  
 Them gan to bord, and purpose diversly;<sup>h</sup>  
 Now faining dalliaunce and wanton sport,  
 Now throwing forth lewd wordes immodestly;  
 Till that the Palmer gan full bitterly  
 Her to rebuke for being loose and light:  
 Which not abiding, but more scornfully  
 Scoffing at him that did her justly wite,<sup>i</sup>  
 She turnd her bote about, and from them rowed quite.<sup>k</sup>

<sup>g</sup> *loud to them can call.*] So the two first editions; but the folios converted "can" into 'gan: we have "gan to bord" in the next stanza. See, however, the note on *can praise*, vol. i. p. 178. C.

<sup>h</sup> *Them gan to bord, and purpose diversly.*] To "bord" is familiarly to *accost*, and "purpose" is *propose* or *discourse*, *converse*. C.

<sup>i</sup> *did her justly wite.*] i. e. reprove, blame. The verb occurs in "The Shep. Cal." vol. i. p. 61, where the folios alter "wite" to *twite*, which, with the omission of the final *e*, is the word still in use. In this place of the F. Q. the folios allow the poet's original orthography to remain. C.

<sup>k</sup> *And from them rowed quite.*] We are not to take these words lite-



17.

That was the wanton Phædria, which late  
 Did ferry him over the Idle lake :  
 Whom nought regarding they kept on their gate,  
 And all her vaine allurements did forsake ;  
 When them the wary Boteman thus bespake :  
 “ Here now behoveth us well to avyse,  
 And of our safety good heede to take ;  
 For here before a perlous passage lyes,  
 Where many Mermayds haunt making false melodies :

18.

“ But by the way there is a great Quicksand,  
 And a whirlepoole of hidden jeopardy ;  
 Therefore, Sir Palmer, keepe an even hand ;  
 For twixt them both the narrow way doth ly.”  
 Scarfe had he faide, when hard at hand they spy  
 That quicksand nigh with water covered ;  
 But by the checked wave<sup>1</sup> they did descry  
 It plaine, and by the sea discoloured :  
 It called was the quicke sand of Unthriftyhed.

19.

They, passing by, a goodly Ship did see  
 Laden from far with precious merchandize,  
 And bravely furnished as ship might bee,  
 Which through great disaventure, or mesprize,  
 Herselfe had ronne into that hazardize ;

---

rally, inasmuch as she could not row, having no oars—“ her boat withouten ore,” St. 15. Phædria’s boat was governed, like Chaucer’s horse, by a magic pin. C.

<sup>1</sup> *by the checked wave.*] Todd informs us that by “checked” here Spenser means *chequer’d*: if Spenser had meant so, he would probably have written so. He refers to the “check” the waves received in their progress by the proximity of the sand to the surface, the disturbance of which “discoloured the sea.” Instead, therefore, of the context showing, as Todd argued, that Spenser meant *chequer’d*, it shows just the contrary. The “checked” waves were rippled on the surface, and the waters were stained by the disturbed sand. C.



Whose mariners and merchants with much toyle  
Labour'd in vaine to have recur'd their prize,  
And the rich wares to save from pitteous spoyle;  
But neither toyle nor traveill might her backe recoyle.

20.

On th' other side they see that perilous Poole,<sup>m</sup>  
That called was the Whirlepoole of decay;  
In which full many had with haplesse doole  
Beene funcke, of whom no memorie did stay:  
Whose circled waters rapt with whirling fway,  
Like to a restlesse wheele, still ronning round,  
Did covet, as they passed by that way,  
To draw their bote within the utmost bound  
Of his wide Labyrinth, and then to have them dround.

21.

But th' earnest Boteman<sup>n</sup> strongly forth did stretch  
His brawnie armes, and all his bodie straine,  
That th' utmost sandy breach they shortly fetch,  
Whiles the dredd daunger does behind remaine.  
Suddeine they see from midst of all the Maine  
The farging waters like a mountaine rise,  
And the great sea, puffed up with proud disdaine,  
To swell above the measure of his guise,  
As threatning to devoure all that his powre despise.

22.

The waves come rolling, and the billowes rore  
Outragiously, as they enraged were,

<sup>m</sup> *On th' other side they see that perilous Poole.*] So before St. 7:

"On th' other side they saw that perilous Rocke."

Spenser often spells "perilous," colloquially, *perlous*, as in St. 17, "*perilous* passage, &c." C.

<sup>n</sup> *But th' earnest Boteman.*] "Earnest," the epithet in the 4to. 1590, was subsequently altered to *heedfull*, with an apostrophe before it, as if the *b* were not to be sounded. This, we may be sure, was not Spenser's pronunciation nor emendation, and we therefore follow the original edition. C.



Or wrathfull Neptune did them drive before  
His whirling charet for exceeding feare ;  
For not one puffe of winde there did appeare,  
That all the three thereat woxe much afrayd,  
Unweeting what fuch horroure ftraunge did reare.  
Eftfoones they faw an hideous hoaft arrayd  
Of huge Sea monfters, fuch as living fence difmayd :

23.

Moft ugly fshapes and horrible afpects,  
Such as Dame Nature felfe mote feare to fee,  
Or fhame that ever fhould fo fowle defects  
From her moft cunning hand escaped bee ;  
All dreadfull pourtraicts of deformitee :  
Spring-headed Hydres ; and fea-shouldring Whales ;  
Great whirlpooles which all fifhes make to flee ;  
Bright Scolopendraes arm'd with filver fcales ;  
Mighty Monoceros with immeafured tayles.

24.

The dreadful Fifh that hath deferv'd the name  
Of Death, and like him lookes in dreadfull hew ;  
The griesly Wafferman, that makes his game  
The flying fhips with fwiftnes to purfue ;  
The horrible Sea-fatyre, that doth fhew  
His fearefull face in time of greateft ftorme ;  
Huge Ziffius, whom Mariners efchew  
No leffe then rockes, (as travellers informe)  
And greedy Rofmarines with viſages deforme.

25.

All theſe, and thouſand thouſands many more,  
And more deformed Monſters thouſand fold,  
With dreadfull noiſe and hollow rombling rore  
Came ruſhing, in the fomy waves enrolld,  
Which ſeem'd to fly for feare them to behold.  
Ne wonder, if theſe did the knight appall ;  
For all that here on earth we dreadfull hold,



Be but as bugs to fearen babes<sup>o</sup> withall,  
Compared to the creatures in the seas entrall.

26.

“Feare nought,” then saide the Palmer well aviz’d,  
“For these same Monsters are not these in deed,  
But are into these fearefull shapes disguiz’d  
By that same wicked witch, to worke us dreed,  
And draw from on this journey to proceed.”  
Tho lifting up his vertuous staffe on hye,  
He smote the sea, which calmed was with speed,  
And all that dreadfull Armie fast gan flye  
Into great Tethys bosome, where they hidden lye.

27.

Quit from that danger forth their course they kept;  
And as they went they heard a ruefull cry  
Of one that wayld and pittifully wept,  
That through the sea the resounding plaints did fly:<sup>p</sup>  
At last they in an Island did espy  
A seemely Maiden sitting by the shore,  
That with great sorrow and sad agony  
Seemed some great misfortune to deplore,  
And lowd to them for succour called evermore.

28.

Which Guyon hearing streight his Palmer bad  
To stere the bote towards that dolefull Mayd,  
That he might know and ease her sorrow sad;  
Who, him avizing better, to him sayd:

---

<sup>o</sup> *Be but as bugs to fearen babes.*] The like expression [word] occurs in F. Q. iii. iv. 15. And in F. Q. ii. iii. 20: [this vol. p. 132.] TODD.

<sup>p</sup> *That through the sea the resounding plaints did fly.*] Were we to consult our own ears only, we should omit “the” from this line, as indeed was done in the folios of 1609 and 1611; but when we find it in the two earliest impressions of 1590 and 1596, both of which, perhaps, passed under Spenser’s eyes, we do not hesitate to insert it. It is very easy to read the line with the usual elision “th’ resounding,” as we find it printed by some modern editors, without warrant. C.



“ Faire Sir, be not displeas'd if disobayd :  
 For ill it were to hearken to her cry,  
 For she is inly nothing ill apayd ;<sup>a</sup>  
 But onely womanish fine forgery,  
 Your stubborne hart t'affect with fraile infirmity.

29.

“ To which when she your courage hath inclind  
 Through foolish pittie, then her guilefull bayt  
 She will embosome deeper in your mind,  
 And for your ruine at the last awayt.”  
 The Knight was ruled, and the Boteman strayt  
 Held on his course with stay'd stedfastnesse,  
 Ne ever shroncke, ne ever fought to bayt  
 His tyred armes for toylesome wearinesse,  
 But with his oares did sweepe the watry wildernesse.

30.

And now they nigh approched to the sted  
 Whereas those Mermayds dwelt : it was a still  
 And calmy bay, on th' one side sheltered  
 With the brode shadow of an hoarie hill ;  
 On th' other side an high rocke toured still,  
 That twixt them both a pleasaunt port they made,  
 And did like an halfe Theatre fulfill :<sup>r</sup>  
 There those five sisters had continuall trade,  
 And usd to bath themselves in that deceitfull shade.

<sup>a</sup> *For she is inly nothing ill apayd.*] So Chaucer, in the “ Merchants Tale : ” —

“ I pray you that you be not *ill apaid* : ”  
 that is, *dissatisfied*. UPTON. More properly, *discontented* : to *pay* is to content ; and “ *apaid* ” is the participle past with the prefix. It is singular that our best dictionaries have no such word as *apay*, or “ *apaid* : ” they spell it *appay*, against authority. The Palmer means, of course, that she has no real grief to complain of. C.

<sup>r</sup> *And did like an halfe Theatre fulfill.*] That is, and did *fulfil*, or *complete*, the whole, like to an amphitheatre. “ *Fulfil* ” is not to be altered, but explained. Job. xxxix. 2. “ Canst thou number the months that they *fulfil* ? ” i. e. *complete*. UPTON.



31.

They were faire Ladies, till they fondly striv'd  
 With th' Heliconian maides for maystery ;  
 Of whom they, over-comen, were depriv'd  
 Of their proud beautie, and th' one moyity  
 Transform'd to fish for their bold surquedry ;<sup>s</sup>  
 But th' upper halfe their hew retayned still,  
 And their sweet skill in wonted melody ;  
 Which ever after they abusd to ill,  
 T' allure weake traveillers, whom gotten they did kill.

32.

So now to Guyon, as he pass'd by,  
 Their pleasaunt tunes they sweetly thus applyde :  
 " O thou fayre sonne of gentle Faery,  
 That art in mightie armes most magnifyde  
 Above all knights that ever batteill tryde,  
 O ! turne thy rudder hetherward awhile :  
 Here may thy storme-bett vessell safely ryde ;  
 This is the Port of rest from troublous toyle,  
 The worldes sweet In from paine and wearisome tur-  
 moyle."

33.

With that the rolling sea, resounding soft,  
 In his big base them fitly answered ;  
 And on the rocke the waves breaking aloft  
 A solemne Meane unto them measured ;  
 The whiles sweet zephyrus lowd whistled  
 His treble, a straunge kinde of harmony,  
 Which Guyons senses softly tickled,  
 That he the boteman bad row easily,  
 And let him heare some part of their rare melody.

---

<sup>s</sup> *their bold surquedry.*] *Pride, presumption.* So Chaucer illustrates the word in the "Parsones Tale," edit. Tyrwhitt, 4to. ii. p. 313. "Presumption is when a man undertaketh an emprise that him ought not to do, or elles that he may not do ; and this is called *surquidry*." TODD. In St. 39, it seems used for mere brutal fury or fierceness. C.



34.

But him the Palmer from that vanity  
 With temperate advice discourfelled,  
 That they it paff, and fhortly gan defcry  
 The land to which their courfe they leveled;  
 When fuddeinly a groffe fog over fpred  
 With his dull vapour all that defert has,  
 And heavens chearefull face enveloped,  
 That all things one, and one as nothing was,  
 And this great Univerfe feemd one confused mas.

35.

Thereat they greatly were difmayd, ne wift  
 How to direct theyr way in darkenes wide,  
 But feard to wander in that waftefull mift,  
 For tombling into mifchiefe unefpide:  
 Worfe is the daunger hidden then defcride.  
 Suddeinly an innumerable flight  
 Of harmefull fowles about them fluttering cride,  
 And with their wicked wings them ofte did fmight,  
 And fore annoyed, groping in that grielly night.

36.

Even all the nation of unfortunate  
 And fatall birds about them flocked were,  
 Such as by nature men abhorre and hate;  
 The ill-fafte Owle, deaths dreadfull meffengere;  
 The hoars Night-raven, trump of dolefull drere;  
 The leather-winged Batt, dayes enemy;  
 The ruefull Strich,<sup>t</sup> ftill waiting on the bere;  
 The whiftler fhriU, that whofo heares doth dy;  
 The hellifh Harpyes, prophets of fad deftiny.

37.

All thofe, and all that els does horror breed,  
 About them flew, and fild their fayles with feare:

---

<sup>t</sup> *The ruefull Strich.*] The *scritch-owl*, στρίγξ, *strix*. UPTON.



Yet stayd they not, but forward did proceed,  
 Whiles th' one did row, and th' other stiffly steare;  
 Till that at last the weather gan to cleare,  
 And the faire land it selfe did playnly sheow.  
 Said then the Palmer; "Lo! where does appeare  
 The sacred soile<sup>u</sup> where all our perills grow.  
 Therefore, Sir knight, your ready arms about you throw."

38.

He hearkned, and his armes about him tooke,  
 The whiles the nimble bote so well her sped,  
 That with her crooked keele the land she strooke:  
 Then forth the noble Guyon fallied,  
 And his sage Palmer that him governed;  
 But th' other by his bote behind did stay.  
 They marched fayrly forth, of nought ydred,  
 Both firmly armd for every hard assay,  
 With constancy and care, gainst daunger and dismay.

39.

Ere long they heard an hideous bellowing  
 Of many beasts, that roard outrageously,  
 As if that hungers poynt or Venus sting  
 Had them enraged with fell surquedry:  
 Yet nought they feard, but past on hardily,  
 Untill they came in vew of those wilde beasts,  
 Who all attonce, gaping full greedily,  
 And rearing fercely their upstaring crests,<sup>x</sup>  
 Ran towards to devoure those unexpected guests.

<sup>u</sup> *The sacred soile.*] The *sacred* soil is the *enchanted* soil, as *sacro* is used by the Italian poets: or *curfed*, *abominable*; for he calls it "the *curfed* land," F. Q. ii. i. 51. UPTON.

<sup>x</sup> *upstaring crests.*] So the poet's first edition reads: all the rest read, "*upstarting* crests." *Upstaring* crests, as Mr. Church has remarked, are the *high advanced* crests in the next stanza. TODD. In a case of this kind it is well worth noting that Drayton, in his copy of the folio 1611, put his pencil through the last *t* in *upstarting*, and placed a mark in the margin, as if to direct attention to the change. C.



40.

But soone as they approcht with deadly threat,  
 The Palmer over them his staffe upheld,  
 His mighty staffe, that could all charmes defeat.  
 Eftefoones their stubborne corages were queld,  
 And high aduanced crests downe meekely feld:  
 Instead of fraying, they them selves did feare,  
 And trembled as them passing they beheld:  
 Such wondrous powre did in that staffe appeare,  
 All monsters to subdew to him that did it beare.

41.

Of that fame wood it fram'd was cunningly,  
 Of which Caduceus whilome was made,  
 Caduceus, the rod of Mercury,  
 With which he wonts the Stygian realmes invade  
 Through ghastly horror and eternall shade:  
 Th' infernall feends with it he can asswage,  
 And Orcus tame, whome nothing can persuade,  
 And rule the Furies when they most doe rage.  
 Such vertue in his staffe had eke this Palmer sage.

42.

Thence passing forth, they shortly doe arrayve  
 Whereas the Bowre of Blisse was situate;  
 A place pickt out by choyce of best alyve,  
 That natures worke by art can imitate:  
 In which whatever in this worldly state  
 Is sweete and pleasing unto living sence,  
 Or that may dayntest fantasy aggrate,<sup>y</sup>  
 Was poured fourth with plentifull dispence,  
 And made there to abound with lavish affluence.

---

<sup>y</sup> Or *that may dayntest fantasy aggrate.*] i. e. that may be grateful to *daintiest* fancy: in the later impressions "dayntest" is altered to *daintiest*. In the next stanza the poet has adopted the superlative degree "mightest" instead of *mightiest*; to which last it has been unwarrantably changed by modern editors, and in some old impressions. C.



43.

Goodly it was enclosed rownd about,  
 Aswell their entred guesstes to keep within,  
 As those unruly beaſts to hold without;  
 Yet was the fence thereof but weake and thin:  
 Nought feared theyr force that fortilage to win,  
 But wiſedomes powre, and temperaunces might,  
 By which the mighteſt things efforced bin:  
 And eke the gate<sup>z</sup> was wrought of ſubſtaunce light,  
 Rather for pleaſure then for battery or fight.

44.

Yt framed was of precious yvory,  
 That ſeemd a worke of admirable witt;  
 And therein all the famous hiſtory  
 Of Jaſon and Medæa was ywritt;  
 Her mighty charmes, her furious loving fitt;  
 His goodly conqueſt of the golden fleece,  
 His falſed fayth, and love too lightly flitt;  
 The wondred Argo, which in venturous peece  
 Firſt through the Euxine ſeas bore all the flowr of Greece.

45.

Ye might have ſeene the frothy billowes fry  
 Under the ſhip as thorough them ſhe went,  
 That ſeemd the waves were into yvory,  
 Or yvory into the waves were ſent;  
 And otherwhere the ſnowy ſubſtaunce ſprent  
 With vermell, like the boyes blood therein ſhed,

---

<sup>z</sup> *And eke the gate.*] If the reader will take the trouble, or pleaſure, to compare the deſcription which Taſſo has given of the palace of Armida, he will ſee how, in many particulars, our poet borrows, and how he varies. The gates (ſays the Italian poet) were of ſilver, on which were wrought the ſtories of Hercules and Iole, of Antony and Cleopatra. Spenſer deſcribes the expedition of Jaſon, and his amours with Medea. Upton. Upton gives no reference to the particular part of Taſſo's "Gieruſalemme Liberata" to which he refers, preſuming, perhaps, that the readers of Spenſer were well acquainted with it: it may be found near the opening of Canto xvi. *Per l'entrata maggior, &c.* C.



A piteous spectacle did represent ;  
And otherwhiles, with gold besprinkeled,  
Yt seemd thenchaunted flame which did Creusa wed.

46.

All this and more might in that goodly gate  
Be red, that ever open stood to all  
Which thether came ; but in the Porch there fate  
A comely personage of stature tall,  
And semblaunce pleasing, more then naturall,  
That traveilers to him seemd to entize :  
His looser garment to the ground did fall,  
And flew about his heeles in wanton wize,  
Not fitt for speedy pace, or manly exercise.

47.

They in that place him Genius did call :  
Not that celestiall powre, to whom the care  
Of life, and generation of all  
That lives, pertaines in charge particulare,  
Who wondrous things concerning our welfare,  
And straunge phantomes doth lett us ofte foresee,  
And ofte of secret ill bids us beware :  
That is our Selfe, whom though we do not see,  
Yet each doth in him selfe it well perceive to bee.

48.

Therefore a God him sage Antiquity  
Did wisely make, and good Agdistes call ;  
But this same was to that quite contrary,  
The foe of life, that good envyes to all,  
That secretly doth us procure to fall  
Through guilefull semblants which he makes us see :  
He of this Gardin had the governall,  
And Pleasures porter was devizd to bee,  
Holding a staffe in hand for more formalitee.

49.

With diverse flowres he daintily was deckt,



And strowed rownd about ; and by his side  
 A mighty Mazer bowle of wine was sett,  
 As if it had to him bene sacrified,  
 Wherewith all new-come guests he gratified :  
 So did he eke Sir Guyon passing by ;  
 But he his ydle curtesie defied,  
 And overthrew his bowle disdainfully,<sup>a</sup>  
 And broke his staffe with which he charmed semblants fly.

50.

Thus being entred, they behold arownd  
 A large and spacious plaine,<sup>b</sup> on every side  
 Strowed with pleasauns ; whose fayre grassy grownd  
 Mantled with greene, and goodly beautified  
 With all the ornaments of Floraes pride,  
 Wherewith her mother Art, as halfe in scorne  
 Of niggard Nature, like a pompous bride  
 Did decke her, and too lavishly adorne,  
 When forth from virgin bowre she comes in th' early  
 morne.

51.

Therewith the Heavens alwayes joviall<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *And overthrew his bowle, &c.*] If the reader, Mr. Upton observes, will compare this canto with Milton's "Mask," he will plainly perceive that Milton has enriched his poem with many borrowed ornaments. The attendant Spirit being the good Genius; the enchanter Comus and his disfigured crew, the representatives of Gryllus; and the brothers possessed of Hæmony, the Palmer with his virtuous staff. See also Mr. Warton's note on "Comus," v. 815. Both poets, however, have founded their tales on the classical fable of Circe; and both have added, to that foundation, new beauties of their own. TODD.

<sup>b</sup> *A large and spacious plaine, &c.*] Let the reader compare this and the next stanza with Tasso, C. xv. 53, 54. UPTON. The resemblance here pointed out is hardly as striking as in some other places. C.

<sup>c</sup> *Therewith the Heavens alwayes joviall.*] *Joyous*, a not unusual application of the word. In the 4to. 1590, the first word of the line is "Therewith," which we reprint, there being no reasonable ground for changing it to *Thereto*, as was done in later editions, which modern impressions have usually followed. The evident meaning is, that "the heavens, always jovial therewith, looked on them lovely." C.



Lookte on them lovely, still in stedfast state,  
Ne suffred storme nor frost on them to fall,  
Their tender buds or leaves to violate ;  
Nor scorching heat, nor cold intemperate,  
T' afflict the creatures which therein did dwell ;  
But the milde ayre with season moderate  
Gently attempred, and disposd so well,  
That still it breathed forth sweet spirit and holefom smell :

52.

More sweet and holefome then the pleasaunt hill  
Of Rhodope, on which the Nimphe that bore  
A gyaunt babe herselfe for grieve did kill ;  
Or the Theſſalian Tempe, where of yore  
Fayre Daphne Phœbus hart with love did gore ;  
Or Ida, where the Gods lov'd to repayre,  
When ever they their heavenly bowres forlore ;  
Or sweet Parnasse, the haunt of Muses fayre ;  
Or Eden selfe, if ought with Eden mote compayre.

53.

Much wondred Guyon at the fayre aspect  
Of that sweet place, yet suffred no delight  
To sincke into his sence, nor mind affect,  
But passed forth, and lookt still forward right,  
Brydling his will and maystering his might,  
Till that he came unto another gate ;  
No gate, but like one, being goodly dight  
With bowes and braunches, which did broad dilate  
Their clasping armes in wanton wreathings intricate :

54.

So fashioned a Porch with rare device,  
Archt over head with an embracing vine,  
Whose bounches hanging downe seemd to entice  
All passers by to taste their lushious wine,  
And did them selves into their hands incline,  
As freely offering to be gathered ;



Some deepe empurpled as the Hyacine,<sup>d</sup>  
 Some as the Rubine laughing sweetely red,  
 Some like faire Emeraudes, not yet well ripened.

55.

And them amongst some were of burnisht gold,  
 So made by art to beautify the rest,  
 Which did themselves amongst the leaves enfold,  
 As lurking from the vew of covetous guest,  
 That the weake boughes, with so rich load opprest  
 Did bow adowne as overburdened.  
 Under that Porch a comely dame did rest  
 Clad in fayre weedes but fowle disordered,  
 And garments loose that seemd unmeet for womanhed.

56.

In her left hand a Cup of gold she held,  
 And with her right the riper fruit did reach,  
 Whose sappy liquor, that with fulnesse sweld,  
 Into her cup she scruzd with daintie breach  
 Of her fine fingers, without fowle empeach,  
 That so faire winepresse made the wine more sweet:  
 Thereof she usd to give to drinke to each,  
 Whom passing by she happened to meet:  
 It was her guise all Straungers goodly so to greet.

57.

So she to Guyon offred it to tast,  
 Who, taking it out of her tender hond,  
 The cup to ground did violently cast,  
 That all in peeces it was broken fond,  
 And with the liquor stained all the lond:  
 Whereat Excesse exceedingly was wroth,  
 Yet no'te the same amend, ne yet withstond,

<sup>d</sup> *As the Hyacine.*] It is *Hyacint* in the 4to. 1590, and in the folio 1611, though Todd states that it reads "Hyacine." Drayton, in his copy, converted *Hyacint* into "Hyacine;" and there can be no doubt that *Hyacint* was a misprint, as the rhyme establishes. C.



But suffered him to passe, all were she loth ;  
Who, nought regarding her displeasure, forward goth.

58.

There the most daintie Paradise<sup>e</sup> on ground  
It selfe doth offer to his sober eye,  
In which all pleasures plenteously abownd,  
And none does others happinesse envye ;  
The painted flowres, the trees upshooting hye,  
The dales for shade, the hilles for breathing space,  
The trembling groves, the christall running by,  
And, that which all faire workes doth most agrace,  
The art which all that wrought appeared in no place.

59.

One would have thought, (so cunningly the rude  
And scorned partes were mingled with the fine)  
That nature had for wantoness<sup>e</sup> enfude  
Art, and that Art at nature did repine ;  
So striving each th' other to undermine,  
Each did the others worke more beautify ;  
So diff'ring both in willes agreed in fine :  
So all agreed, through sweete diversity,  
This Gardin to adorne with all variety.

60.

And in the midst of all a fountaine stood,  
Of richest substance that on earth might bee,  
So pure and shiny that the silver flood  
Through every channell running one might see ;  
Most goodly it with curious ymageree<sup>f</sup>  
Was overwrought, and shap<sup>e</sup>s of naked boyes,

<sup>e</sup> *There the most daintie Paradise, &c.*] As Upton and others have remarked, many portions of this description were imitated by Spenser from Tasso's description of the Garden of Armida, in *Gier. Lib. C. xv.* C.

<sup>f</sup> *with curious ymageree.*] Here the folios have unwarrantably altered the poet's expression into "with *pure* imager<sup>e</sup>ee," as if *imageree* could not be pronounced as a trisyllable. Todd. Drayton let it stand. C.



Of which some seemd with lively jollitee  
 To fly about, playing their wanton toyes,  
 Whylest others did themselves embay in liquid joyes.<sup>g</sup>

61.

And over all of purest gold was spred  
 A trayle of yvie in his native hew;  
 For the rich metall was so coloured,  
 That wight who did not well avis'd it vew  
 Would surely deeme it to bee yvie trew:  
 Low his lascivious armes adown did creepe,  
 That themselves dipping in the silver dew  
 Their fleecy flowres they fearefully did steepe,<sup>h</sup>  
 Which drops of Christall seemd for wantones to weep.

62.

Infinit streames continually did well  
 Out of this fountaine, sweet and faire to see,  
 The which into an ample laver fell,  
 And shortly grew into so great quantitie,  
 That like a litle lake it seemd to bee;  
 Whose depth exceeded not three cubits hight,  
 That through the waves one might the bottom see,  
 All pav'd beneath with Jaspar shining bright,  
 That seemd the fountaine in that sea did sayle upright.

63.

And all the margent round about was sett  
 With shady Laurell trees, thence to defend<sup>i</sup>

<sup>g</sup> *embay in liquid joyes.*] “Embay” is *bathe*, or *embathe*, and we have had it in this sense earlier in the poem. C.

<sup>h</sup> *they fearefully did steepe.*] So the first edition reads. The second and every other subsequent edition read, “they tenderly, &c.” Todd.

<sup>i</sup> *thence to defend.*] That is, to *keep off*. Virg. Ecl. vii. 47. “Solstitium defendere.” Horat. i. Ode 17. “defendere æstatem.” So the Italians use *difendere*; the French, *defendre*. Chaucer has *defended*, forbidden; and Milton, “Par. L.” B. xi. 86, “that *defended* fruit,” i.e. forbidden. Upton. There could be no difficulty in multiplying proofs from other poets, English and foreign: Shakespeare uses “defend” in the sense of *forbid*; “God defend,” &c.: see edit. Collier, 1858, ii. 23; and iv. 299. C.



The funny beames which on the billowes bett,  
 And those which therein bathed mote offend.  
 As Guyon hapned by the same to wend,  
 Two naked Damzelles he therein espyde,  
 Which therein bathing seemed to contend  
 And wrestle wantonly, ne car'd to hyde  
 Their dainty partes from vew of any which them eyd.

64.

Sometimes the one would lift the other quight  
 Above the waters, and then downe againe  
 Her plong, as over maystered by might,  
 Where both awhile would covered remaine,  
 And each the other from to rise restraine;  
 The whiles their snowy limbes, as through a vele,  
 So through the christall waves appeared plaine:  
 Then suddeinly both would themselves unhele,<sup>k</sup>  
 And th' amorous sweet spoiles to greedy eyes revele.

65.

As that faire Starre,<sup>1</sup> the messenger of morne,  
 His deawy face out of the sea doth reare;  
 Or as the Cyprian goddesse, newly borne  
 Of th' Ocean's fruitfull froth, did first appeare:  
 Such seemed they, and so their yellow heare  
 Christalline humor dropped downe apace.  
 Whom such when Guyon saw, he drew him neare,  
 And somewhat gan relent his earnest pace;  
 His stubborne brest gan secret pleasaunce to embrace.

66.

The wanton Maidens, him espying, stood

<sup>k</sup> *would themselves unbele.*] Uncover, or discover. Chaucer uses "hele" in the sense of *hide* in the "Rom. of the Rose," v. 6882, A. S. *hælan*. The word is still employed in various parts of the country with reference to the covering in of crops. C.

<sup>1</sup> *As that faire Starre.*] This is translated from Tasso, C. xv. 60. So are the three following stanzas. Fairfax, in [many parts of] his translation, had plainly Spenser before him. UPTON.



Gazing awhile at his unwonted guise;  
 Then th' one her selfe low ducked in the flood,  
 Abasht that her a straunger did avise:  
 But thother rather higher did arise,  
 And her two lilly paps aloft displayd,  
 And all that might his melting hart entyse  
 To her delights she unto him bewrayd;  
 The rest hidd underneath him more desirous made.

67.

With that the other likewise up arose,  
 And her faire lockes, which formerly were bownd  
 Up in one knott, she low adowne did lose,  
 Which flowing long and thick her cloth'd arownd,  
 And th' yvorie in golden mantle gownd:<sup>m</sup>  
 So that faire spectacle from him was reft,  
 Yet that which reft it no lesse faire was fownd.  
 So hidd in lockes and waves from lookers theft,  
 Nought but her lovely face she for his looking left.

68.

Withall she laughed, and she blusht withall,  
 That blushing to her laughter gave more grace,  
 And laughter to her blushing, as did fall.  
 Now when they spyde the knight to slacke his pace  
 Them to behold, and in his sparkling face  
 The secrete signes of kindled lust appeare,  
 Their wanton meriments they did encrease,  
 And to him beckned to approach more neare,  
 And shewd him many fights that corage cold could reare.

69.

On which when gazing him the Palmer saw,  
 He much rebukt those wandring eyes of his,

<sup>m</sup> *And th' yvorie in golden mantle gownd.*] So in his "Epithalamion,"  
 St. 9.

"Her long loose yellow lockes—

"Doe, like a golden mantle, her attire." TODD.



And counfeld well him forward thence did draw.  
 Now are they come nigh to the Bowre of blis,  
 Of her fond favorites so nam'd amis,  
 When thus the Palmer: "Now, Sir, well avise;  
 For here the end of all our traveill is:  
 Here wonnes Acrafia, whom we must surprife,  
 Els she will flip away, and all our drift despise."

70.

Eftsoones they heard a most melodious found,  
 Of all that mote delight a daintie eare,  
 Such as attonce might not on living ground,  
 Save in this Paradise, be heard elfewhere:  
 Right hard it was for wight which did it heare,  
 To read what manner musicke that mote bee;  
 For all that pleasing is to living eare  
 Was there conforated in one harmonee;  
 Birdes, voices, instruments, windes, waters, all agree:

71.

The joyous birdes,<sup>n</sup> shrouded in chearefull shade  
 Their notes unto the voice attempred sweet;  
 Th' Angelicall soft trembling voyces made  
 To th' instruments divine respondence meet;  
 The silver founding instruments did meet  
 With the base murmure of the waters fall;  
 The waters fall with difference discreet,  
 Now soft, now loud, unto the wind did call;  
 The gentle warbling wind low answered to all.<sup>o</sup>

<sup>n</sup> *The joyous birdes, &c.*] Let the reader compare this stanza with Tasso, C. xvi. 12. UPTON. See also the admirable use which Fairfax made of Spenser's version of Tasso: edit. fol. 1600, p. 282, where he employs even the epithets of the F. Q. C.

<sup>o</sup> *The gentle warbling wind low answered to all.*] So his old master very elegantly, p. 415. edit. Urr.

"Therewith a winde, unneth it might be lesse,

"Made in the levis grene a noyse soft,

"Accordant to the foulis song on loft." CHURCH.



72.

There, whence that Musick seemed heard to bee,  
 Was the faire Witch her selfe now solacing  
 With a new Lover, whom, through forcere  
 And witchcraft, she from farre did thether bring:  
 There she had him now laid a slumbering  
 In secret shade after long wanton joyes;  
 Whilst round about them pleasauntly did sing  
 Many faire Ladies and lascivious boyes,  
 That ever mixt their song with light licentious toyes.

73.

And all that while right over him she hong  
 With her false eyes fast fixed in his sight,  
 As seeking medicine whence she was stong,  
 Or greedily depasturing delight;  
 And oft inclining downe, with kisses light  
 For feare of waking him, his lips bedewd,  
 And through his humid eyes did sucke his spright,  
 Quite molten into lust and pleasure lewd;  
 Wherewith she sighed soft, as if his case she rewd.

74.

The whiles some one did chaunt this lovely lay:  
 Ah! see, who so fayre thing doest faine to see,<sup>p</sup>  
 In springing flowre the image of thy day.  
 Ah! see the Virgin Rose, how sweetly shee  
 Doth first peepe forth with bashfull modestee,  
 That fairer seemes the lesse ye see her may.  
 Lo! see soone after how more bold and free  
 Her bared bosome she doth broad display;  
 Lo! see soone after how she fades and falls away.

75.

So passeth, in the passing of a day,  
 Of mortall life the leafe, the bud, the flowre;

---

<sup>p</sup> *doest faine to see.*] i.e. dost *rejoice*, or art *glad*, to see. C.



Ne more doth florish after first decay,  
 That earst was fought to deck both bed and bowre  
 Of many a lady', and many a Paramowre.  
 Gather therefore the Rose<sup>a</sup> whilest yet is prime,  
 For soone comes age that will her pride deflowre:  
 Gather the Rose of love whilest yet is time,  
 Whilest loving thou mayst loved be with equall crime.<sup>r</sup>

76.

He ceast; and then gan all the quire of birdes  
 Their diverse notes t' attune unto his lay,  
 As in approvaunce of his pleasing wordes.  
 The constant payre heard all that he did say,  
 Yet swarved not, but kept their forward way  
 Through many covert groves and thickets close,  
 In which they creeping did at last display  
 That wanton Lady with her lover lose,  
 Whose sleepe head she in her lap did soft dispose.

77.

Upon a bed of Roses she was layd,  
 As faint through heat, or dight to pleasant sin;  
 And was arayd, or rather disarayd,<sup>s</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *Gather therefore the Rose.*] Marston, in his copy of the F. Q. edit. 1590, has especially marked the excessive beauty of this portion of the poem, and opposite the words, "Gather therefore the rose," he wrote in the margin, *Collige virgo rosas, &c.* C.

<sup>r</sup> *Whilest loving thou mayst loved be with equall crime.*] Compare Fairfax's translation of the Gier. Lib. B. xvi. St. 14, 15; and on his obligations to Spenser, see the Preface to Coleridge's "Seven Lectures on Shakespeare and Milton," p. xxxiv. C.

<sup>s</sup> *And was arayd, or rather disarayd.*] The reader may here compare Ariosto, "Orl. Fur." C. vii. 28. But Spenser carries away the palm for delicacy. Todd. In fact, nothing can well be more gross or indelicate than Ariosto's description of the meeting of Ruggiero and Alcina; and the resemblance between him and Spenser is so slight, that it is difficult to say whether the English poet was here even remotely indebted to Ariosto. On the other hand, his obligations to Tasso are evident and indisputable: compare, for instance, the concluding lines of St. lxxviii. with the following:—

"Qual raggio in onda, le scintilla un riso  
 Negli umidi occhi tremulo e lascivo."

Gier. Lib. C. 16. St. 18. C.



All in a vele of filke and filver thin,  
That hid no whit her alablafter skin,  
But rather shewd more white, if more might bee :  
More subtile web Arachne cannot spin ;  
Nor the fine nets, which oft we woven see  
Of scorched deaw, do not in th' ayre more lightly flee.

78.

Her snowy brest was bare to ready spoyle  
Of hungry eies, which n'ote therewith be fild ;  
And yet, through languour of her late sweet toyle,  
Few drops, more cleare then Nectar, forth distild,  
That like pure Orient perles adowne it trild ;  
And her faire eyes, sweet smyling in delight,  
Moystened their fierie beames, with which she thrild  
Fraile harts, yet quenched not ; like starry light,  
Which, sparckling on the silent waves, does seeme more  
bright.

79.

The young man, sleeping by her, seemd to be  
Some goodly fwayne of honorable place ;  
That certes it great pittie was to see  
Him his nobility so fowle deface :  
A sweet regard and amiable grace,  
Mixed with manly sterneesse, did appeare,  
Yet sleeping, in his well proportiond face ;  
And on his tender lips the downy heare  
Did now but freshly spring, and filken blossoms beare.

80.

His warlike Armes, the ydle instruments  
Of sleeping praise, were hong upon a tree ;  
And his brave shield, full of old moniments,  
Was fowly ras't, that none the signes might see :  
Ne for them ne for honour cared hee,  
Ne ought that did to his advancement tend ;  
But in lewd loves, and wastfull luxuree,



His dayes, his goods, his bodie, he did spend :  
O horrible enchantment, that him so did blend !<sup>t</sup>

81.

The noble Elfe and carefull Palmer drew  
So nigh them, minding nought but lustfull game,  
That suddein forth they on them rusht, and threw  
A subtile net, which only for that fame<sup>u</sup>  
The skilfull Palmer formally did frame :<sup>x</sup>  
So held them under fast ; the whiles the rest  
Fled all away for feare of fowler shame.  
The faire Enchauntresse, so unwares opprest,  
Tryde all her arts and all her sleights thence out to wrest.

82.

And eke her lover strove, but all in vaine ;  
For that fame net so cunningly was wound,  
That neither guile nor force might it distraine.  
They tooke them both, and both them strongly bound  
In captive bandes, which there they readie found :  
But her in chaines of adamant he tyde ;  
For nothing else might keepe her safe and found :  
But Verdant (so he hight) he soone untyde,  
And counsell sage in steed thereof to him applyde.

83.

But all those pleasaunt bowres, and Pallace brave,  
Guyon broke downe with rigour pittilesse ;  
Ne ought their goodly workmanship might save  
Them from the tempest of his wrathfulnesse,

<sup>t</sup> *that him so did blend.*] Here *blind*, for the rhyme's sake, is printed "blend," and *blent*, the participle, is not unfrequently used for *blinded*. To "blend" is also to *confound*. C.

<sup>u</sup> *only for that fame.*] That is, for *that* purpose. So Spenser's first edition reads: the rest read, less perspicuously, "for *the* fame." TODD.

<sup>x</sup> *formally did frame.*] Perhaps we must read "formerly" *heretofore*. But if we keep the old reading, then *formally* may mean *according to form or method*, cunningly, designedly; *secundum formam, modum, et artem*; *formaliter*. UPTON.



But that their blisse he turn'd to balefulnesse.  
 Their groves he feld; their gardins did deface;  
 Their arbers spoyle;<sup>y</sup> their Cabinets suppressse;  
 Their banket houses burne; their buildings race;  
 And, of the fayrest late, now made the fowlest place.

84.

Then led they her away, and eke that knight  
 They with them led, both sorrowfull and fad.  
 The way they came, the same retourn'd they right,  
 Till they arrived where they lately had  
 Charm'd those wild-beasts that rag'd with furie mad;  
 Which, now awaking, fierce at them gan fly,  
 As in their mistresse reskew whom they lad;  
 But them the Palmer soone did pacify.  
 Then Guyon askt, what meant those beastes which there  
 did ly?

85.

Sayd he; "These seeming beasts are men indeed,  
 Whom this Enchauntresse hath transformed thus;  
 Whylome her lovers, which her lustes did feed,  
 Now turned into figures hideous,  
 According to their mindes like monstrous."  
 "Sad end," (quoth he) "of life intemperate,  
 And mourneful meed of joyes delicious!  
 But, Palmer, if it mote thee so aggrate,  
 Let them returned be unto their former state."

86.

Streight way he with his vertuous staffe them strooke,  
 And streight of beastes they comely men became;  
 Yet being men they did unmanly looke,  
 And stared ghastly; some for inward shame,

---

<sup>y</sup> *Their arbers spoyle.*] So Spenser's first edition reads. The rest read, inaccurately, "spoil'd;" for *did*, in the preceding line, applies to *spoyle*, *suppressse*, *burne*, and *race*, as well as to *deface*. TODD.



And some for wrath to see their captive Dame :  
 But one above the rest in speciall  
 That had an hog beene late, hight Grylle by name,<sup>z</sup>  
 Repyned greatly, and did him miscall  
 That had from hoggish forme him brought to naturall.

87.

Saide Guyon ; “ See the mind of beastly man,  
 That hath so soone forgot the excellence  
 Of his creation, when he life began,  
 That now he chooseth with vile difference  
 To be a beast, and lacke intelligence !”  
 To whom the Palmer thus : “ The donghill kinde  
 Delightes in filth and fowle incontinence :  
 Let Gryll be Gryll,<sup>a</sup> and have his hoggish minde ;  
 But let us hence depart whilest wether serves and winde.”

<sup>z</sup> *That had an hog beene late, hight Grylle by name, &c.*] Dr. Jortin has observed that this fiction is taken from a dialogue in Plutarch, inscribed, *περὶ τοῦ τὰ ἄλογα λόγῳ χρῆσθαι* : where *Gryllus*, one of the companions of Ulysses, transformed into a hog by Circe, holds a discourse with Ulysses, and refuses to be restored to his human shape. Not many years before the “ Faerie Queene” was written, Gelli published his “ Circe,” viz. in 1548, which is said in the preface to be founded upon the dialogue of Plutarch, mentioned by Jortin. “ Circe” soon became a very popular book, and was translated into English, in the year 1557, by one Henry Iden ; so that, probably, Spenser had read it, and might be induced to consult that dialogue from its mention in the preface. “ Swinish Grill” is mentioned by Hall, Sat. ii. B. 2. T. WARTON.

<sup>a</sup> *Let Gryll be Gryll, &c.*] The poet seems to allude to that severe sentence denounced against those who shall incorrigibly persevere in vicious intemperance, Rev. xxii. 11. “ *He which is filthy, let him be filthy still.*” CHURCH.





THE THIRDE BOOKE OF  
THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS,<sup>a</sup>  
OR OF CHASTITY.

I.



T falls me here to write of Chastity,  
The fayrest vertue,<sup>b</sup> far above the rest :  
For which what needes me fetch from  
Faery  
Forreine ensamples it to have exprest ?  
Sith it is shrined in my Soveraines brest,

<sup>a</sup> *The Legend of Britomartis.*] “Britomartis,” among the Cretans, was another name for Diana, the goddess of Chastity: I think she is so called in Claudian. It is not improbable, as our author has copied the greatest part of the second canto of this book from the “Ceiris” of Virgil, that he found, from the same poem, that “Britomartis” was a name for Diana, viz.—

“*Dyctinnam dixere tuo de nomine Lunam.*”

She was a Cretan nymph, and the daughter of Jupiter and Charme, whom Virgil has introduced, in his “Ceiris” as the nurse of Scylla, and from whom our author has copied his Glauce, Britomart’s nurse, in the canto mentioned above. She was called Dictynna, because she invented nets for hunting, which being also one of Diana’s names, Britomartis and Diana were looked upon as the same. The reader is desired to take notice, that the passage which Spenser has copied from the “Ceiris” of Virgil, begins at this verse of that poem,—

“*Quam simul Ogygii Phænicis filia CHARME;*”

and ends at,—

“*Despue ter, virgo: numero deus impare gaudet.*”

T. WARTON.

<sup>b</sup> *The fayrest vertue.*] We follow the oldest impression: others read,



And formd so lively in each perfect part,  
That to all Ladies, which have it profest,  
Need but behold the pourtraict of her hart;  
If pourtrayd it might bee by any living art.

2.

But living art may not least part expresse,  
Nor life-refembling pencill it can paynt:  
All were it Zeuxis or Praxiteles,  
His dædale hand would faile and greatly faynt,  
And her perfections with his error taynt:  
Ne Poets witt, that passeth Painter farre  
In picturing the parts of beauty daynt,<sup>c</sup>  
So hard a workmanship adventure darre,  
For fear, through want of words, her excellence to marre.

3.

How then shall I, Apprentice of the-skill  
That whilome in divineſt wits did rayne,  
Presume so high to stretch mine humble quill?  
Yet now my luckeleſſe lott doth me conſtrayne  
Hereto perforce. But, O dredd Soverayne!  
Thus far forth pardon, ſith that choiceſt witt  
Cannot your glorious pourtraict figure playne,  
That I in colourd ſhowes may ſhadow itt,  
And antique praises unto preſent perſons fitt.

4.

But if in living colours, and right hew,  
Thy ſelfe thou covet<sup>d</sup> to ſee pictured,

---

“*That fayreſt vertue;*” but there ſeems no ſufficient reaſon for abandoning the original text, eſpecially when no note is met with among the errata to ſhow that it is wrong. C.

<sup>c</sup> *the parts of beauty daynt.*] Old Fr. *dain*, daintie, fine, &c. Dr. Johnson ſays, in his explanation of *dainty*, that he could not find this old French word, to which Skinner refers, in the dictionaries: it occurs, however, in Cotgrave. *Daynt* has been hitherto unnoticed by our lexicographers. Todd. Richardson inserts it both as a ſubſtantive and as an adjective. C.

<sup>d</sup> *Thy ſelfe thou covet, &c.*] This is the reading of the poet’s firſt edition: the ſecond reads, “*Yourſelfe you covet,*” &c. Todd.



Who can it doe more lively, or more trew,  
 Then that sweete verse, with Nectar sprinckeled,  
 In which a gracious servaunt<sup>e</sup> pictured  
 His Cynthia, his heavens fayrest light?  
 That with his melting sweetnes ravished,  
 And with the wonder of her beames bright,  
 My senses lulled are in slomber of delight.

5.

But let that fame delitious Poet lend  
 A little leave unto a rusticke Muse  
 To sing his mistresse prayse; and let him mend,  
 If ought amis her liking may abuse:  
 Ne let his fayrest Cynthia refuse  
 In mirrours more then one her selfe to see;  
 But either Gloriana let her chuse,  
 Or in Belphebe fashioned to bee;  
 In th' one her rule, in th' other her rare chasteitee.

---

<sup>e</sup> *In which a gracious servaunt, &c.*] This "gracious servaunt" is Sir W. Raleigh, our poet's truly *honoured* friend, ὁ Τίμιος: imaged and shadowed in this, as well as in the other books, under the name of "Timias." And Spenser, in his "Letter to Sir W. Raleigh," says he imitated him, "expressing the name of his royal mistress in 'Belphebe,' whose name he fashioned according to Sir W. Raleigh's own excellent conceit of 'Cynthia;' Phoebe and Cynthia being both names of Diana." See F. Q. iii. vi. 28. UPRON. This poem, by Raleigh, in which he "pictured" Queen Elizabeth under the name of "Cynthia," has not descended to our day, either in print or in MS. C.







## CANTO I.

*Guyon encountreth Britomart :  
Fayre Florimell is chaced :  
Duessaes traines and Malecastaes<sup>a</sup>  
champions are defaced.*

I.



HE famous Briton Prince and Faery  
knight,<sup>b</sup>  
After long wayes and perilous paines  
endur'd,  
Having their weary limbes to perfect plight  
Restord, and fory wounds right well recur'd,  
Of the faire Alma greatly were procur'd  
To make there lenger sojourn and abode ;  
But when thereto they might not be allur'd,  
From seeking praise and deeds of armes abroad,  
They courteous conge tooke, and forth together yode.<sup>c</sup>

<sup>a</sup> *Duessaes traines and Malecastaes.*] The name "Malecasta" is misprinted, not *Malerafta*, (as Upton states and as Todd repeats,) but *Materafta*, in the 4to. 1590 ; but at the end of the vol. there is a direction to correct it to "Malecasta." It is strange, however, that in no subsequent impression of 1596, 1609, or 1611, is the emendation made, and the glaring corruption was continued until the appearance of the folio 1679. C.

<sup>b</sup> *The famous Briton Prince and Faery knight, &c.*] Prince Arthur, having been wounded in his engagement with Maleger, stayed with Alma till his wounds were cured ; and Sir Guyon, having ended his adventure against Acrasia, returned to the house of Alma, and joined the Briton Prince. UPTON.

<sup>c</sup> *and forth together yode.*] Upton would read "forth together rode." We have already had *yod*, in this vol. p. 40 ; and "yede," in this vol.



2.

But the captiv'd Acrafia he fent,  
 Because of traveill long, a nigher way,  
 With a strong gard, all reskew to prevent,  
 And her to Faery court safe to convay;  
 That her for witnes of his hard assay  
 Unto his Faery Queene he might present:  
 But he him selfe betooke another way,  
 To make more triall of his hardiment,  
 And seek adventures as he with Prince Arthure went.

3.

Long so they traveled through wastefull wayes,  
 Where daungers dwelt, and perils most did wonne,  
 To hunt for glory and renowned prayse.  
 Full many Countreyes they did overronne,  
 From the uprising to the setting Sunne,  
 And many hard adventures did atchieve;  
 Of all the which they honour ever wonne,  
 Seeking the weake oppressed to relieve,  
 And to recover right for such as wrong did grieve.

4.

At last, as through an open plaine they yode,  
 They spide a knight that towards pricked fayre;  
 And him beside an aged Squire there rode,  
 That seemd to couch under his shield three-square,  
 As if that age badd him that burden spare,  
 And yield it those that stouter could it wield.  
 He them espying gan him selfe prepare,  
 And on his arme addresse his goodly shield  
 That bore a Lion<sup>d</sup> passant in a golden field.

p. 48; and here again we have the verb in the past tense, "yode," i. e. *went*. It occurs again in St. 4, as the rhyme to "rode." C.

<sup>d</sup> *That bore a Lion, &c.*] The arms of Brute, from whom Britomartis is descended, are supposed to have been *a lion passant gules, in a field or*. So Drayton, in his frontispiece to his "Polyolbion:"

" ————— who bears

"In golden field the lion passant red." CHURCH.



5.

Which seeing, good Sir Guyon deare befought  
 The Prince of grace to let him ronne that turne.  
 He graunted: then the Faery quickly raught  
 His poynant speare, and sharply gan to spurne  
 His fomy steed, whose fiery feete did burne  
 The verdant gras as he thereon did tread;  
 Ne did the other backe his foote returne,  
 But fiercely forward came withouten dread,  
 And bent his dreadful speare against the others head.

6.

They beene ymett, and both theyr points arriv'd;  
 But Guyon drove so furious and fell,  
 That seemd both shield and plate it would have riv'd;  
 Nathelesse it bore his foe not from his fell,  
 But made him stagger, as he were not well:  
 But Guyon felse, ere well he was aware,  
 Nigh a speares length behind his crouper fell;  
 Yet in his fall so well him felse he bare,  
 That mischievous mischaunce his life and limbs did spare.

7.

Great shame and sorrow of that fall he tooke;  
 For never yet, sith warlike armes he bore  
 And shivering speare in bloody field first shooke,  
 He fownd him felse dishonored so fore.  
 Ah! gentlest knight, that ever armor bore,  
 Let not thee grieve dismounted to have beene,  
 And brought to grownd that never wast before;  
 For not thy fault, but secret powre unseene:  
 That speare enchanted was<sup>e</sup> which layd thee on the  
 greene.

---

<sup>e</sup> *That speare enchanted was, &c.*] This spear was made by Bladud, a British king, skilled in magick: see F. Q. iii. iii. 60. The staff of this speare was of ebony: see F. Q. iv. vi. 6. And it was headed with gold: *una lanza dorata*, as Boyardo, in "Orl. Innamorato," calls it. UPTON.



## 8.

But weenedst thou what wight thee overthrew,  
Much greater griefe and shamefuller regret  
For thy hard fortune then thou wouldst renew,  
That of a fingle damzell thou wert mett  
On equall plaine, and there so hard befett:  
Even the famous Britomart it was,  
Whom straunge adventure did from Britayne sett  
To seeke her lover (love far fought alas!)  
Whose image shee had seene in Venus looking glas.

## 9.

Full of disdainefull wrath he fierce uprofe  
For to revenge that fowle reprochefull shame,  
And snatching his bright sword began to close  
With her on foot, and stoutly forward came:  
Dye rather would he then endure that fame.  
Which when his Palmer saw, he gan to feare  
His toward perill, and untoward blame,  
Which by that new rencounter he should reare;  
For death fate on the point of that enchaunted speare:

## 10.

And hasting towards him gan fayre perswade  
Not to provoke misfortune, nor to weene  
His speares default to mend with cruell blade;  
For by his mightie Science he had seene  
The secrete vertue of that weapon keene,  
That mortall puissaunce mote not withstond.  
Nothing on earth mote alwaies happy beene:  
Great hazard were it, and adventure fond,  
To loose long gotten honour with one evill hond.

## 11.

By such good meanes he him discounfelled  
From prosecuting his revenging rage:  
And eke the Prince like treaty handeled,  
His wrathfull will with reason to aswage;



And laid the blame, not to his carriage,  
 But to his starting steed that swarv'd asyde,  
 And to the ill purveyaunce of his page,  
 That had his furnitures not firmly tyde.  
 So is his angry corage fayrly pacifyde.

12.

Thus reconcilment was betweene them knitt,  
 Through goodly temperaunce and affection chaste;  
 And either vowd with all their power and witt  
 To let not others honour be defaste  
 Of friend or foe, who ever it embaste;  
 Ne armes to beare against the others fyde:  
 In which accord the Prince was also plasste,  
 And with that golden chaine of concord tyde.  
 So goodly all agreed they forth yfere did ryde.

13.

O! goodly ufage of those antique tymes,  
 In which the sword was fervaunt unto right;  
 When not for malice and contentious crymes,  
 But all for prayse, and prooffe of manly might,  
 The martiall brood accustomed to fight:  
 Then honour was the meed of victory,  
 And yet the vanquished had no despight.  
 Let later age that noble use envy,  
 Vyle rancor to avoid and cruel furquedry.

14.

Long they thus traveiled in friendly wise,  
 Through countreyes waste, and eke well edifyde,<sup>f</sup>  
 Seeking adventures hard, to exercise  
 Their puiffance, whylome full dernly tryde.<sup>g</sup>

<sup>f</sup> *and eke well edifyde.*] Well built, well covered with edifices; using the verb to "edify" etymologically. See also St. 20. C.

<sup>g</sup> *why lome full dernly tryde.*] Properly *dern* means *dark, concealed, secret*; but it is also used for *dismal, mournful, lamentable*; and in one of these latter senses the adverb seems employed here. C.



At length they came into a forest wyde,  
 Whose hideous horror and sad trembling fownd  
 Full grievedly seemd: Therein they long did ryde,  
 Yet tract of living creature none they fownd,  
 Save Beares, Lyons, and Bulls, which romed them  
 arownd.

15.

All suddenly out of the thickest brush,  
 Upon a milkwhite Palfrey all alone,  
 A goodly Lady did foreby them rush,  
 Whose face did seeme as cleare as Christall stone,  
 And eke, through feare, as white as whales bone:<sup>h</sup>  
 Her garments all were wrought of beaten gold,  
 And all her steed with tinsell trappings shone,  
 Which fledd so fast that nothing mote him hold,  
 And scarce them leasure gave her passing to behold.

16.

Still as she fledd her eye she backward threw,  
 As fearing evill that pursued her fast;  
 And her faire yellow locks behind her flew,  
 Loosely disperst with puff of every blast:  
 All as a blazing starre doth farre outcast  
 His hearie beames, and flaming lockes dispredd,  
 At sight whereof the people stand aghast;  
 But the sage wifard telles, as he has redd,  
 That it importunes death and dolefull dreryhedd.

17.

So as they gazed after her a while,

---

<sup>h</sup> *as white as whales bone.*] It is needless to tell the reader, who can read verse, that "whales" must here be pronounced as a dissyllable, as it is in Shakespeare's "Love's Labour's Lost," A. v. Sc. 2, where the same expression occurs. It was common at an early date in our language, and became proverbial: it is used by Skelton; by Lord Surrey; by T. Nash; by the author of "The Squire of Low Degree," &c. Ivory seems originally to have been mistakenly supposed to be the bone of the whale, or of the sword-fish. C.



Lo! where a griesly foster<sup>i</sup> forth did rush,  
 Breathing out beastly lust her to defyle:  
 His tyreling Jade he fierfly forth did push  
 Through thicke and thin, both over banck and bush,  
 In hope her to attaine by hooke or crooke,  
 That from his gory sydes the blood did gush.  
 Large were his limbes, and terrible his looke,  
 And in his clownish hand a sharp bore speare he shooke.

18.

Which outrage when those gentle knights did see,  
 Full of great envy and fell gealofy  
 They stayd not to avise who first should bee,  
 But all spurd after, fast as they mote fly,  
 To reskew her from shamefull villany.  
 The Prince and Guyon equally bylive<sup>k</sup>  
 Her selfe pursewd, in hope to win thereby  
 Most goodly meede, the fairest Dame alive:  
 But after the foule foster Timias did strive.

19.

The whiles faire Britomart, whose constant mind  
 Would not so lightly follow beauties chace,  
 Ne rekt of Ladies Love, did stay behynd,  
 And them awayted there a certaine space,  
 To weet if they would turne backe to that place;  
 But when she saw them gone she forward went,  
 As lay her journey, through that perlous Pace,<sup>l</sup>

<sup>i</sup> *a griesly foster.*] Forrester. So Chaucer, "Rom. R." 6329.  
 "Now Clerke, and now *Fostere*." And, in "Bevis of Hampton:"—  
 "A *foster* in the wood he met." Todd.

<sup>k</sup> *equally bylive.*] Or, *belive*; i. e. *active, quick*. We have already  
 had the word several times. See vol. i. pp. 110, 256, &c. C.

<sup>l</sup> *that perlous Pace.*] So all the editions. Quære, *place*. CHURCH.  
 Perhaps *pace* might be borrowed from the French word *pais*, a region,  
 land, or country; although indeed the pronunciation of the French  
 word may seem to discountenance this supposition. Todd. We own  
 that we do not see the difficulty, or the objection to "Pace," excepting  
 on the score of orthography, which Spenser notoriously often sacrificed  
 to his rhyme. "Perlous Pace" is perilous *pass*, with reference to the



With stedfast corage and stout hardiment :  
Ne evil thing she feard, ne evill thing she ment.

20.

At last, as nigh out of the wood she came,  
A stately Castle far away she spyde,  
To which her steps directly she did frame.  
That Castle was most goodly edifyde,  
And plashte for pleasure nigh that Forrest fyde :  
But faire before the gate a spacious playne,  
Mantled with greene, it selfe did spredden wyde,  
On which she saw six knights, that did darrayne  
Fiers battaill against one with cruell might and mayne.

21.

Mainely they all attonce upon him laid,  
And fore beset on every side arownd,  
That nigh he breathlesse grew, yet nought dismaid,  
Ne ever to them yielded foot of grownd,  
All had he lost much blood through many a wownd,  
But stoutly dealt his blowes, and every way,  
To which he turned in his wrathfull stownd,  
Made them recoile, and fly from dredd decay,  
That none of all the six before him durst assay.

22.

Like dastard Cures that, having at a bay  
The salvage beast embost in wearie chace,  
Dare not adventure on the stubborne pray,  
Ne byte before, but come from place to place  
To get a snatch when turned is his face.  
In such distresse and doubtfull jeopardy  
When Britomart him saw, she ran apace  
Unto his reskew, and with earnest cry  
Badd those same fixe forbear that single enemy.

---

danger Britomart incurred in proceeding, without her companions, through the "hideous horror" of the forest. Drayton introduced no change in his folio 1611, but allowed "Pace" to stand in the text. C.



## 23.

But to her cry they list not lenden eare,  
 Ne ought the more their mightie strokes surceasse;  
 But gathering him rownd about more neare,  
 Their direfull rancour rather did encrease;  
 Till that she rushing through the thickest preasse  
 Perforce disparted their compacted gyre,<sup>m</sup>  
 And soone compeld to hearken unto peace.  
 Tho gan she myldly of them to inquire  
 The cause of their dissention and outrageous yre.

## 24.

Whereto that single knight did answere frame:  
 "These fix would me enforce by oddes of might  
 To chaunge my lief, and love another Dame;  
 That death me liefer were then such despight,  
 So unto wrong to yield my wrested right:  
 For I love one, the truest one on grownd,  
 Ne list me chaunge; she th' Errant damzell hight;<sup>n</sup>  
 For whose deare sake full many a bitter stownd  
 I have endurd, and tasted many a bloody wownd."

## 25.

"Certes," (saide she) "then beene ye fixe to blame,  
 To weene your wrong by force to justify;  
 For knight to leave his Lady were great shame  
 That faithfull is, and better were to dy.  
 All losse is lesse, and lesse the infamy,  
 Then losse of love to him that loves but one:  
 Ne may love be compeld by maistery;  
 For soone as maistery comes sweet Love anone

---

<sup>m</sup> *their compacted gyre.*] "Gyre," or *gire*, is *circle*: they compactly encircled the knight. "Gyre" is from the Lat. *gyrus*, or more properly, as Richardson shows, from the Gr. *γυρός*. The corresponding word *giro* is very common in Italian. C.

<sup>n</sup> *she th' Errant damzell hight.*] So he calls Una, whom he names not; but describes her, as in F. Q. i. iii. 3; i. vi. 2; i. vii. 50. UPTON.



Taketh his nimble winges, and soone away is gone."<sup>o</sup> |

26.

Then spake one of those fix: "There dwelleth here  
Within this castle wall a Lady fayre,  
Whose foveraine beautie hath no living pere;  
Thereto so bounteous and so debonayre,  
That never any mote with her compayre:  
She hath ordaind this law, which we approve,  
That every knight which doth this way repayre,  
In case he have no Lady nor no love,  
Shall doe unto her service, never to remove:

27.

"But if he have a Lady or a Love,  
Then must he her forgoe with fowle defame,  
Or els with us by dint of sword approve,  
That she is fairer then our fairest Dame;  
As did this knight, before ye hether came."  
"Perdy," (said Britomart) "the choise is hard;  
But what reward had he that overcame?"  
"He should advaunced bee to high regard,"  
(Said they) "and have our Ladies love for his reward.

28.

"Therefore aread, Sir, if thou have a love."  
"Love have I sure," (quoth she) "but Lady none;  
Yet will I not fro mine owne love remove,  
Ne to your Lady will I service done,  
But wreake your wronges wrought to this knight alone,  
And prove his cause." With that, her mortall speare  
She mightily aventred towards one,

---

<sup>o</sup> *Ne may love be compeld by maistry;*  
*For soone as maistry comes sweet Love anone*  
*Taketh his nimble winges, and soone away is gone.]* This seems  
plainly from Chaucer, in the "Frankelins Tale," ver. 2310:—  
"Love wolle not be constreyn'd by maistry:  
"When maistry cometh, the god of love anone  
"Betith his winges, and farewell he is gone." UPTON.



And downe him smot ere well aware he weare;  
Then to the next she rode, and downe the next did beare.

29.

Ne did she stay till three on ground she layd,  
That none of them himselfe could reare againe:  
The fourth was by that other knight dismayd,  
All were he wearie of his former paine;  
That now there do but two of six remaine,  
Which two did yield before she did them smight.  
“Ah!” (saide she then) “now may ye all see plaine,  
That truth is strong, and trew love most of might,  
That for his trusty servaunts doth so strongly fight.”

30.

“Too well we see,” (saide they) “and prove too well  
Our faulty weakenes, and your matchlesse might:  
For thy, faire Sir, yours be the Damozell,  
Which by her owne law to your lot doth light,  
And we your liegemen faith unto you plight.”  
So underneath her feet their swords they mard,<sup>p</sup>  
And, after, her besought, well as they might,  
To enter in and reape the dew reward.  
She graunted; and then in they all together far’d.

31.

Long were it to describe the goodly frame,  
And stately port of Castle Joyeous,  
(For so that Castle hight by commun name)  
Where they were entertaynd with courteous  
And comely glee of many gracious  
Faire Ladies, and of many a gentle knight,  
Who, through a Chamber long and spacious,

---

<sup>p</sup> *their swords they mard.*] *Threw down*, says Church; but Upton takes “mard” in the sense of ignobly debasing the swords. One of the ordinary meanings of to mar, is to *spoil* or *injure*; and the knights spoiled, injured, or wronged their swords. The word is *shard* in the 4to. 1590, but the list of errata alters it to “mard.” C.



Eftsoones them brought unto their Ladies fight,  
That of them cleeped was the Lady of delight.

32.

But for to tell the sumptuous aray  
Of that great chamber should be labour lost ;  
For living wit, I weene, cannot display  
The roiall riches and exceeding cost  
Of every pillour and of every post,  
Which all of purest bullion framed were,  
And with great perles and pretious stones emboft ;  
That the bright glister of their beames cleare  
Did sparckle forth great light, and glorious did appeare.

33.

These stranger knights, through passing, forth were led  
Into an inner rowme, whose royaltee  
And rich purveyance might uneath be red ;  
Mote Princes place be seeme so deckt to bee.  
Which stately manner whenas they did see,  
The image of superfluous riotize,  
Exceeding much the state of meane degree,  
They greatly wondred whence so sumptuous guize  
Might be maintaynd, and each gan diversely devize.

34.

The wals were round about appareiled  
With costly clothes of Arras and of Toure ;  
In which with cunning hand was pourtrahed  
The love of Venus and her Paramoure,  
The fayre Adonis, turned to a flowre ;  
A worke of rare device and wondrous wit.  
First did it shew the bitter balefull stowre,  
Which her essayd with many a fervent fit,  
When first her tender hart was with his beautie smit.

35.

Then with what sleights and sweet allurements she  
Entyft the Boy, as well that art she knew,



And wooed him her Paramoure to bee ;  
 Now making girlonds of each flowre that grew,  
 To crowne his golden lockes with honour dew ;  
 Now leading him into a secret shade  
 From his Beauperes,<sup>a</sup> and from bright heavens vew,  
 Where him to sleepe she gently would perswade,  
 Or bathe him in a fountaine by some covert glade :

36.

And whilst he slept she over him would spread  
 Her mantle, colour'd like the starry skyes,  
 And her soft arme lay underneath his hed,  
 And with ambrosiall kisses bathe his eyes ;  
 And whilst he bath'd with her two crafty spies  
 She secretly would search each daintie lim,  
 And throw into the well sweet Rosemaryes,  
 And fragrant violets, and Paunces trim ;  
 And ever with sweet Nectar she did sprinkle him.

37.

So did she steale his heedelesse hart away,  
 And joyd his love in secret unespide :  
 But for she saw him bent to cruell play,  
 To hunt the salvage beast in Forrest wyde,  
 Dreadfull of daunger that mote him betyde,  
 She oft and oft adviz'd him to refraine  
 From chase of greater beastes, whose brutish pryde  
 Mote breede him scath unwares : but all in vaine ;  
 For who can shun the chance that dest'ny doth ordaine ?

38.

Lo ! where beyond he lyeth languishing,  
 Deadly engored of a great wilde Bore ;  
 And by his side the Goddesse groveling  
 Makes for him endlesse mone, and evermore  
 With her soft garment wipes away the gore

---

<sup>a</sup> *From his Beauperes.*] Fair companions ; from beau and pair, a peer, equal. UPTON.



Which staynes his snowy skin with hatefull hew :  
 But when she saw no helpe might him restore,  
 Him to a dainty flowre she did transmew,  
 Which in that cloth was wrought as if it lively grew.

39.

So was that chamber clad in goodly wize :  
 And rownd about it many beds were dight,  
 As whylome was the antique worldes guize,  
 Some for untimely ease, some for delight,  
 As pleased them to use that use it might ;  
 And all was full of Damzels and of Squyres,  
 Dauncing and reveling both day and night,  
 And swimming deepe in sensuall defyres ;  
 And Cupid still emongest them kindled lustfull fyres.

40.

And all the while sweet Musicke did divide  
 Her looser notes with Lydian harmony ;  
 And all the while sweete birdes thereto applide  
 Their daintie layes and dulcet melody,  
 Ay caroling of love and jollity,  
 That wonder was to heare their trim confort.  
 Which when those knights beheld, with scornefull eye  
 They sdeigned such lascivious disport,  
 And loath'd the loose demeanure of that wanton fort.<sup>r</sup>

41.

Thence they were brought to that great Ladies vew,  
 Whom they found sitting on a sumptuous bed  
 That glistred all with gold and glorious shew,  
 As the proud Persian Queenes accustomed.  
 She seemd a woman of great bountihed,  
 And of rare beautie, saving that askaunce  
 Her wanton eyes, ill signes of womanhed,

---

<sup>r</sup> of *that wanton sort*.] "Sort" is *company*, or *society*: hundreds of instances of its application might be quoted ; but see "Shakespeare," by Collier, 1858, ii. 219 ; iii. 288 ; iv. 33, 65, &c. C.



Did roll too lightly,<sup>s</sup> and too often glaunce,  
Without regard of grace or comely amenaunce.

42.

Long worke it were, and needlesse, to devize  
Their goodly entertainment and great glee.  
She caused them be led in courteous wize  
Into a bowre, disarmed for to be,  
And cheared well with wine and spiceree:  
The Redcrosse Knight was soon disarmed there;  
But the brave Mayd would not disarmed bee,  
But onely vented up her umbriere,<sup>t</sup>  
And so did let her goodly visage to appere.

43.

As when fayre Cynthia, in darkefome night,  
Is in a noyous cloud enveloped,  
Where she may finde the substance thin and light,  
Breakes forth her silver beames, and her bright hed  
Discovers to the world discomfited:  
Of the poore traveler that went astray  
With thousand blessings she is heried.<sup>u</sup>  
Such was the beautie and the shining ray,  
With which fayre Britomart gave light unto the day.

<sup>s</sup> *Did roll too lightly.*] “Lightly” is *highly* in both the 4tos. and is probably wrong. Our text, in this instance, is that of the folio 1609; but although we adopt this early printed emendation, we are by no means sure that it is right, and chiefly for this reason,—that in Drayton’s copy of the folio 1611 we find “lightly” erased, and *idly* substituted in the margin. It is extremely easy to suppose that the old compositor mistook and printed *highly* instead of *idly*: *idly* seems to suit the sense even better than “lightly.” C.

<sup>t</sup> *But onely vented up her umbriere.*] *Vented up*, i. e. she gave *vent* to, or lifted up, the visor of her helmet; *wore her beaver up*, as Shakespeare expresses it in “Hamlet.” So the Amazonian Bradamant lifts up her *vental* or *umbriere*, and discovers herself to Astolfo, “Orl. Fur.” C. xxiii. 10. UPTON.

<sup>u</sup> *she is heried.*] i. e. *worshipped*, or *honoured*. See vol. i. pp. 24, 32, 132, &c. C.



44.

And eke those fix, which lately with her fought,  
 Now were disarmd, and did them selves present  
 Unto her vew, and company unfought;  
 For they all seemed courteous and gent,  
 And all fixe brethren, borne of one parent,  
 Which had them traynd in all civilitee,  
 And goodly taught to tilt and turnament:  
 Now were they liegmen to this Ladie free,  
 And her knights service ought,\* to hold of her in fee.

45.

The first of them by name Gardante hight,  
 A jolly person, and of comely vew;  
 The second was Parlante, a bold knight;  
 And next to him Jocante did ensue;  
 Basciante did him selfe most courteous shew;  
 But fierce Bacchante seemd too fell and keene;  
 And yett in armes Noctante greater grew:  
 All were faire knights, and goodly well beseene;  
 But to faire Britomart they all but shadowes beene.

46.

For shee was full of amiable grace  
 And manly terror mixed therewithall;  
 That as the one stird up affections bace,  
 So th' other did mens rash desires apall,  
 And hold them backe that would in error fall:  
 As hee that hath espide a vermeill Rose,  
 To which sharp thornes and breres the way forstall,  
 Dare not for dread his hardy hand expose,  
 But wishing it far off his ydle wish doth lose.

47.

Whom when the Lady saw so faire a wight,  
 All ignorant of her contrary sex,

---

\* *And her knights service ought.*] "Ought," for *owed*, is so common as hardly to need a note. C.



(For shee her weend a fresh and lusty knight,)  
 Shee greatly gan enamoured to wex,  
 And with vaine thoughts her falsed fancy vex:  
 Her fickle hart conceived hasty fyre,  
 Like sparkes of fire that fall in sclender flex,<sup>y</sup>  
 That shortly brent into extreme desyre,  
 And ranfackt all her veines with passion entyre.

48.

Eftsoones shee grew to great impatience,  
 And into termes of open outrage brust,<sup>z</sup>  
 That plaine discovered her incontinence;  
 Ne reckt shee who her meaning did mistrust,  
 For she was given all to fleshly lust,  
 And poured forth in sensuall delight,  
 That all regard of shame she had discust,<sup>a</sup>  
 And meet respect of honor putt to flight:  
 So shamelesse beauty soone becomes a loathly fight.

49.

Faire Ladies, that to love captived arre,  
 And chaste desires doe nourish in your mind,  
 Let not her fault your sweete affections marre,  
 Ne blott the bounty of all womankind,  
 'Mongst thousands good one wanton Dame to find:  
 Emongst the Roses grow some wicked weeds:  
 For this was not to love, but lust, inclind;

<sup>y</sup> *that fall in sclender flex.*] The later impressions have *which* for "that:" the substitution could only be arbitrary, and therefore, as usual, we follow the 4to. 1590. C.

<sup>z</sup> *of open outrage brust.*] The folios improperly read *burst*. Spenser's own editions read "brust," which all the rest follow. So, in the next canto, St. 19. "But *brusting* forth," &c. Our old language must not thus be demolished. TODD. In this case also the rhyme demands "brust," if there were no other reason for preserving it. C.

<sup>a</sup> *she had discust.*] *Shaken off.* Lat. *discutere*; Ital. *discofiare*, to remove or put away. UPTON. We give Upton's note, but the Italian word *discofiare*, to put *aside*, has quite a different etymology. C.



For love does alwaies bring forth bounteous deeds,  
And in each gentle hart desire of honor breeds.

50.

Nought so of love this looser Dame did skill,  
But as a cole to kindle fleshly flame,  
Giving the bridle to her wanton will,  
And treading under foote her honest name:  
Such love is hate, and such desire is shame.  
Still did she rove at her with crafty glaunce  
Of her false eies, that at her hart did ayme,  
And told her meaning in her countenance;  
But Britomart<sup>b</sup> dissembled it with ignoraunce.

51.

Supper was shortly dight, and downe they satt;  
Where they were served with all sumptuous fare,  
Whiles fruitfull Ceres and Lyæus satt  
Poured out their plenty without spight or spare.  
Nought wanted there that dainty was and rare,  
And aye the cups their bancks did overflow;  
And aye betweene the cups she did prepare  
Way to her love, and secret darts did throw;  
But Britomart would not such guilfull message know.

52.

So, when they flaked had the fervent heat  
Of appetite with meates of every sort,  
The Lady did faire Britomart entreat  
Her to disarme, and with delightfull sport  
To loose her warlike limbs and strong effort;  
But when shee mote not thereunto be wonne,  
(For shee her sexe under that straunge purport  
Did use to hide, and plaine apparaunce shonne)

---

<sup>b</sup> *But Britomart, &c.*] That is, Britomart seemed as though she understood her not. CHURCH. We only give this note as a specimen of the sort of annotation formerly thought necessary: the poet's language is quite as clear as the commentary. C.



In playner wise to tell her grievance she begonne.

53.

And all attonce discovered her desire

With sighes, and sobs, and plaints, and piteous grieve,  
The outward sparkes of her inburning fire;  
Which spent in vaine, at last she told her brieve,  
That but if she did lend her short reliefe  
And doe her comfort, she mote algates dye:  
But the chaste damzell, that had never priefe  
Of such malengine<sup>c</sup> and fine forgerye,  
Did easely beleve her strong extremitye.

54.

Full easy was for her to have believe,

Who by self-feeling of her feeble sexe,  
And by long triall of the inward grieve  
Wherewith imperious love her hart did vexe,  
Could judge what paines doe loving harts perplexe.  
Who meanes no guile be guiled soonest shall,  
And to faire semblaunce doth light faith annexe:  
The bird that knowes not the false fowlers call,  
Into his hidden nett full easely doth fall.

55.

For thy she would not in discourteise wise

Scorne the faire offer of good will profest;  
For great rebuke it is love to despise,  
Or rudely sdeigne a gentle harts request;  
But with faire countenance, as beseemed best,  
Her entertaynd: nath'lesse shee inly deemd  
Her love too light, to wooe a wandring guest;  
Which she misconstruing, thereby esteemd  
That from like inward fire that outward smoke had  
steemd.

---

<sup>c</sup> *Of such malengine.*] In B. v. C. ix. Spenser personifies Malengin; and, as Richardson states, it means *evil genius*: as a substantive, we are here to understand it as *ill intention*, or *wicked purpose*. C.



56.

Therewith a while she her flit fancy fedd,  
 Till she mote winne fit time for her desire;  
 But yet her wound still inward freshly bledd,  
 And through her bones the false instilled fire  
 Did spread it selfe, and venime close inspire.  
 Tho were the tables taken all away;  
 And every knight, and every gentle Squire,  
 Gan choose his Dame with *Bascimano* gay,<sup>d</sup>  
 With whom he ment to make his sport and courtly play.

57.

Some fell to daunce; some fel to hazardry,  
 Some to make love, some to make meryment,  
 As diverse witts to diverse things apply;  
 And all the while faire Malecasta bent  
 Her crafty engins to her close intent.  
 By this th' eternall lampes, wherewith high Jove  
 Doth light the lower world, were halfe yspent,  
 And the moist daughters of huge Atlas strove  
 Into the Ocean deepe to drive their weary drove.

58.

High time it seemed then for everie wight  
 Them to betake unto their kindly rest:  
 Eftesoones long waxen torches weren light

---

<sup>d</sup> *with Bascimano gay.*] Of course, with *kissing of hands*: we spell it as in the 4to. 1590; but in the folios the word or words were changed to *Basciomani*. T. Warton and Todd dispute whether it was of Italian or of Spanish origin; and the latter quotes the two following apposite passages from authors of the day. "With vs the wemen giue their mouth to be kissed; in other places their cheek; in many places their *hand*, or in steed of an offer to the hand, to say these words, *Bezo los manos*."—Puttenham's "Arte of English Poetrie," 4to. 1589, p. 239. See also Barnabe Rich's "Faults and Nothing but Faults," 1606, p. 8, where he describes an affected traveller, who, "at his returne, hath but some few foolish phrases in the French, Spanish, or Italian language, with the *baselos manos*, the ducke, the mump, and the shrugge," &c. Puttenham goes farther and tells us that in his time, in England, "some others, surmounting in all courtly civilitie, will say *Los manos et los pienes*." C.



Unto their bowres to guyden every guesť.  
 Tho, when the Britonesse saw all the rest  
 Avoided quite, she gan her selfe despoile,  
 And safe committ to her soft feathered nest;  
 Wher through long watch, and late daies weary toile,  
 She soundly slept, and carefull thoughts did quite assoile.

59.

Now whenas all the world in silence deepe  
 Yshrowded was, and every mortall wight  
 Was drowned in the depth of deadly sleepe;  
 Faire Malecasta, whose engrieved spright  
 Could find no rest in such perplexed plight,  
 Lightly arose out of her wearie bed,  
 And, under the blacke vele of guilty Night,  
 Her with a scarlott mantle covered  
 That was with gold and Ermines faire enveloped.

60.

Then panting softe, and trembling every joynt,  
 Her fearfull feete towards the bowre she mov'd,  
 Where she for secret purpose did appoynt  
 To lodge the warlike maide, unwisely loov'd;  
 And, to her bed approching, first she prov'd  
 Whether she slept or wakte: with her softe hand  
 She softly felt if any member moov'd,  
 And lent her weary eare<sup>e</sup> to understand  
 If any puffe of breath or signe of sence shee fond.<sup>f</sup>

---

<sup>e</sup> *And lent her weary eare.*] So the text is given in both the 4tos., but the folios and modern editors have altered "weary" to *wary*. "Weary" is probably what the poet wrote; for Malecasta might well be soon "weary" of listening, considering the state of her blood at the time. If "weary" were not Spenser's word, no correction of it is found among the errata to the 4to. 1590, and it passed again in the 4to. 1596. We have, therefore, no right to change it. C.

<sup>f</sup> *or signe of sence shee fond.*] We print "fond" as it stands in the 4tos., and as it stands in the first line of the next stanza. The then broad pronunciation of such words as "hand" and "understand" rendered the rhyme sufficient, without altering "fond" to *fand*, as in



## 61.

Which whenas none she fond, with easy shifte,  
 For feare least her unwares she should abrayd,<sup>g</sup>  
 Th' embroder'd quilt she lightly up did lifte,  
 And by her side her selfe she softly layd,  
 Of every finest fingers touch affrayd;  
 Ne any noise she made, ne word she spake,  
 But inly sigh'd. At last the royall Mayd  
 Out of her quiet slomber did awake,  
 And chaunged her weary side the better ease to take.

## 62.

Where feeling one close couched by her side,  
 She lightly lept out of her filed bedd,<sup>h</sup>  
 And to her weapon ran, in minde to gride<sup>i</sup>  
 The loathed leachour. But the Dame, halfe dedd  
 Through suddain feare and ghastly drerihedd,  
 Did shrieke alowd, that through the hous it rong,  
 And the whole family, therewith adredd,  
 Rashly out of their rouzed couches sprong,<sup>k</sup>  
 And to the troubled chamber all in armes did throng.

## 63.

And those fixe knights, that ladies Champions  
 And eke the Redcrosse knight ran to the stownd,

the folios. At the same time it is not unlikely that the poet wrote *fand*; or perhaps "hand" was *bond*, and "understand" *understond*, when the stanza came from his pen. C.

<sup>g</sup> *she should abrayd.*] *Awake* says Todd; and such is doubtless the meaning, as well as of "abray" in B. iv. C. vi. St. 36; but it is from the A. S. *abredian*, deripere, arripere, to snatch, or break by snatching; so that *awake* can only be considered one of the consequential senses of "abrayd." Shakespeare has *braid*: see edit. Collier, 1858, ii. 599. C.

<sup>h</sup> *out of her filed bedd.*] Out of her *defiled* bed. See the note on *file*, "Shep. Cal." July, [vol. i. p. 87.] Todd.

<sup>i</sup> *in minde to gride.*] To *pierce*. See Warton's note on *gride*, "Shep. Cal." February, [vol. i. p. 21.] Todd.

<sup>k</sup> *Rashly out of their rouzed couches sprong.*] *Inconsiderately*, says Church; and such certainly is one of the meanings of "rashly," as on p. 360; but here it is to be taken in the sense of *hastily*, *suddenly*. C.



Halfe armd and halfe unarmd, with them attons :  
 Where when confusedly they came, they fownd  
 Their lady lying on the fenceleffe grownd :  
 On thother fide they faw the warlike Mayd  
 Al in her fnow-white fmocke, with locks unbownd,  
 Threatning the point of her avenging blaed ;  
 That with fo troublous terror they were all difmayd.

64.

About their Ladye firft they flockt arownd ;  
 Whom having laid in comfortable couch,  
 Shortly they reard out of her frosen fwownd ;  
 And afterwarde they gan with fowle reproch  
 To ftirre up ftirfe, and troublous contecke<sup>1</sup> broch :  
 But by enfample of the laft dayes losse,  
 None of them rashly durst to her approach,  
 Ne in fo glorious spoile themselves emboffe :<sup>m</sup>  
 Her succourd eke the Champion of the bloody Crosse.

65.

But one of those fixe knights, Gardante hight,  
 Drew out a deadly bow and arrow keene,  
 Which forth he sent, with felonous despight  
 And fell intent, against the virgin sheene :  
 The mortall Steele stayd not till it was seene  
 To gore her fide ; yet was the wound not deepe,  
 But lightly rased her soft filken skin,

---

<sup>1</sup> *and troublous contecke.*] Spenser here, when he might have used *contest*, chooses rather Chaucer's obsolete term *conteck*. Thus, in the "Knights Tale," ver. 2006 :—

"*Conteke* with bloody knyves, and sharpe menace."

See also "Nonnes Pr. T." ver. 10047. Our poet has used it before in his "Shep. Cal." May and September, [vol. i. pp. 61, 105.] T. WARTON.

<sup>m</sup> *themselves emboffe.*] "Emboffe" has various significations in Spenser : see F. Q. i. ix. 9 ; i. xi. 20 ; iii. i. 22 ; iii. xii. 17, &c. Here it means to *adorn*, to *ornament*. In F. Q. ii. vii. 28, we have "emboft with pearles." TODD. It is "emboft with massy gold," and not "with pearles" as Todd affirms : see this vol. p. 203. C.



That drops of purple blood thereout did weepe,  
Which did her lilly smock with stains of vermeil steep.

66.

Wherewith enrag'd she fiercely at them flew,  
And with her flaming sword about her layd,  
That none of them foule mischief could eschew,  
But with her dreadfull strokes were all dismayd:  
Here, there, and every where, about her fwayd  
Her wrathfull Steele, that none mote it abyde;  
And eke the Redcrosse knight gave her good ayd,  
Ay joyning foot to foot, and syde to syde;  
That in short space their foes they have quite terrifyde.

67.

Tho, whenas all were put to shamefull flight,  
The noble Britomartis her arayd,  
And her bright armes about her body dight.  
For nothing would she lenger there be stayd,  
Where so loose life, and so ungentle trade,  
Was vsd of knightes and Ladies seeming gent:  
So earely, ere the grosse Earthes gryesy shade<sup>n</sup>  
Was all disperst out of the firmament,  
They tooke their steeds, and forth upon their journey  
went.

---

<sup>n</sup> *the grosse Earthes gryesy shade.*] Perhaps we ought here to read *griessly*. So "*griessly* night," F. Q. i. v. 20; iv. vii. 22. "*Griessly* shadowes," F. Q. ii. vii. 51; iii. iv. 54. "*Griessly shade*," F. Q. iii. vi. 37. "*Griessly shades* of night," F. Q. v. x. 33. If we keep the received reading "*gryesy shade*," we must interpret it (though somewhat far-fetched) *moist, humid*, as in Virgil, *Æn.* ii. 8. "*Humida nox.*" And in *Æn.* iii. 589. "*Humentemque* Aurora polo dimoverat *umbram.*" Again, in *Æn.* iv. 351. "*Humentibus umbris.*" UPTON. It is "*gryesy*" in the 4tos. as well as in the folios, and the epithet is, therefore, not lightly to be rejected. C.





## CANTO II.

*The Redcrosse knight to Britomart  
describeth Artegall:*

*The wondrous myrrhour, by which she  
in love with him did fall.*

I.



HERE have I cause in men just blame to find,  
That in their proper praise too partiall  
bee,  
And not indifferent to woman kind,  
To whom no share in armes and chevalree  
They doe impart, ne maken memoree  
Of their brave gestes and prowesse martiall :  
Scarfe do they spare to one, or two, or three,  
Rowme in their writtes ; yet the same writing small  
Does all their deedes deface, and dims their glories all.

2.

But by record of antique times I finde  
That wemen wont in warres to beare most sway,  
And to all great exploites them selves inclind,  
Of which they still the girlond bore away ;  
Till envious Men, fearing their rules decay,  
Gan coyne streight lawes to curb their liberty :  
Yet sith they warlike armes have laide away,  
They have exceld in artes and pollicy,  
That now we foolish men that prayse gin eke t'envy.



3.

Of warlike puiſſaunce in ages ſpent,  
 Be thou, faire Britomart, whoſe prayſe I wryte;  
 But of all wiſedom bee thou precedent,  
 O ſoveraine Queene! whoſe prayſe I would endyte,  
 Endite I would as dewtie doth excyte;  
 But ah! my rymes to[o] rude and rugged arre,  
 When in ſo high an object<sup>a</sup> they do lyte,  
 And, ſtriving fit to make, I feare, doe marre:  
 Thy ſelfe thy prayſes tell, and make them knowne farre.

4.

She, traveling with Guyon, by the way<sup>b</sup>  
 Of ſondry thinges faire purpoſe gan to find,<sup>c</sup>  
 T'abridg their journey long, and lingring day;  
 Mongſt which it fell into that Fairies mind  
 To aſke this Briton Maid, what uncouth wind  
 Brought her into thoſe partes, and what inqueſt  
 Made her diſſemble her diſguiſed kind?  
 Faire Lady ſhe him ſeemd, like Lady dreſt,  
 But faireſt knight alive, when armed was her breſt.

<sup>a</sup> *When in ſo high an object, &c.*] “In” is often uſed in old writers where now we uſe *on*. Thus, in F. Q. iii. iv. 16:—

“But ſhe againe him *in* the ſhield did ſmite.”

We ſhould ſay, “*on* the ſhield.” Again, F. Q. v. iv. 40:—

“——— And *in* his necke

“Her proud foot ſetting.” UPTON.

<sup>b</sup> *She, traveling with Guyon, by the way.*] It is, as Upton remarks, an overſight, to repreſent Britomart as travelling with Guyon: ſhe was travelling with St. George. Upton propoſed to read:—

“She traveling with the Redcroſſe knight by the way;”  
 a very bad line; and Todd more reaſonably propoſed to amend it thus:—

“She traveling with Redcroſſe by the way.”

On the other hand, Drayton, in his copy of the folio 1611, writes *S. George* in the margin:—

“She traveling with *S. George* by the way;”  
 laying the emphasis on *Saint*, which certainly is allowable. With this note, we make no change in the old text, leaving it to the reader’s diſcretion to adopt which he may prefer. C.

<sup>c</sup> *faire purpoſe gan to find.*] Here again we have “purpoſe” for *converſe*, or *diſcourſe*. It is common in Spenser. C.



5.

Thereat she fighting softly had no powre  
 To speake a while, ne ready answere make;  
 But with hart-thrilling throbs and bitter stowre,  
 As if she had a fever fitt, did quake,  
 And every daintie limbe with horreur shake;  
 And ever and anone the rosy red  
 Flashed through her face, as it had beene a flake  
 Of lightning through bright heaven fulmined:  
 At last, the passion past, she thus him answered.

6.

“Faie Sir, I let you weete, that from the howre  
 I taken was from nourses tender pap,  
 I have been trained up in warlike stowre,  
 To tossen speare and shield, and to affrap<sup>d</sup>  
 The warlike ryder to his most mishap:  
 Sithence I loathed have my life to lead,  
 As Ladies wont, in pleasures wanton lap,  
 To finger the fine needle and nyce thread;  
 Me lever were with point of foemans speare be dead.

7.

“All my delight on deedes of armes is sett,  
 To hunt out perilles and adventures hard,  
 By sea, by land, where so they may be mett,  
 Onely for honour and for high regard,  
 Without respect of richesse or reward:  
 For such intent into these partes I came,  
 Withouten compasse or withouten card,  
 Far fro my native soyle, that is by name  
 The greater Brytayne, here to seeke for praise and fame.

8.

“Fame blazed hath, that here in Faery lond

---

<sup>d</sup> *and to affrap.*] *Strike down.* Ital. *affrapare*; Fr. *frapper*. In F. Q. ii. i. 26, [this vol. p. 94], it signifies to *encounter*. UPTON.



Doe many famous knightes and Ladies wonne,<sup>e</sup>  
 And many straunge adventures to bee fond,  
 Of which great worth and worship may be wonne;  
 Which to prove, I this voyage have begonne.<sup>f</sup>  
 But mote I weete of you, right courteous knight,  
 Tydings of one that hath unto me donne  
 Late foule dishonour and reprochfull spight,  
 The which I seeke to wreake, and Arthegall he hight."

9.

The worde gone out she backe againe would call,  
 As her repenting so to have mislayd,  
 But that he, it uptaking ere the fall,  
 Her shortly answered: "Faire martiall Mayd,  
 Certes ye misavised beene t' upbrayd  
 A gentle knight with so unknighly blame;  
 For, weete ye well, of all that ever playd  
 At tilt or tourney, or like warlike game,  
 The noble Arthegall hath ever borne the name.

10.

"For thy great wonder were it, if such shame  
 Should ever enter in his bounteous thought,  
 Or ever doe that mote deservén blame:  
 The noble corage never weeneth ought  
 That may unworthy of it selfe be thought.  
 Therefore, faire Damzell, be ye well aware,  
 Least that too farre ye have your sorrow fought:  
 You and your countrey both I wish welfare,  
 And honour both; for each of other worthy are."

11.

The royall Maid woxe inly wondrous glad,

---

<sup>e</sup> *and Ladies wonne.*] *Dwell.* The same word rhymes to "wonne," i. e. *acquired*, (as here,) in the preceding canto, St. 3, [p. 339.] *Todd.*

<sup>f</sup> *Which to prove, I this voyage have begonne.*] So the first edition, with better accent, and more poetical, I think, than the second and the folios:—

"Which *I to prove*, this voyage have begonne." *Upton.*



To heare her Love so highly magnifyde ;  
 And joyd that ever she affixed had  
 Her hart on knight so goodly glorifyde,  
 How ever finely she it faind to hyde.  
 The loving mother, that nine monethes did beare<sup>g</sup>  
 In the deare closett<sup>h</sup> of her painefull fyde  
 Her tender babe, it seeing safe appeare,  
 Doth not so much rejoyce as she rejoyced theare.

12.

But to occasion him to further talke,  
 To feed her humor with his pleasing stile,  
 Her list<sup>i</sup> in stryfull termes<sup>k</sup> with him to balke,<sup>l</sup>  
 And thus replyde: "How ever, Sir, ye fyle<sup>m</sup>  
 Your courteous tongue his prayfes to compyle,  
 It ill beseemes a knight of gentle fort,  
 Such as ye have him boasted, to beguyle  
 A simple maide, and worke so hainous tort,  
 In shame of knighthood, as I largely can report.

13.

"Let bee therefore my vengeance to disswade,

<sup>g</sup> *The loving mother, that nine monethes did beare, &c.*] Perhaps he had in view John xvi. 21: "A woman when she is in travail, hath sorrow: but, as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world." UPTON.

<sup>h</sup> *In the deare closett, &c.*] See F. Q. v. v. 44. So Chaucer, p. 115, edit. Urr:—

"Thou Maide and Mothir ———  
 "Which in the *cloistre of thy blisfull fidis*  
 "Took Mann's shape—."

And p. 27:—

"And though your life be medlid with grevaunce,  
 "And at your *bert's closet* be your wound." CHURCH.

<sup>i</sup> *Her list.*] She was pleased. CHURCH. She had *desire*. C.

<sup>k</sup> *in stryfull termes.*] This is Spenser's manner of spelling *strife-full*. The word has occurred before. TODD.

<sup>l</sup> *with him to balke.*] To deal with him in cross purposes, as Mr. Upton observes; or to *baffle* him. TODD.

<sup>m</sup> *Sir, ye fyle, &c.*] See the same expression, and with the same meaning, that of smoothing, or polishing his speech, in F. Q. B. i. C. i. St. 35, vol. i. p. 187. C.



And read where I that faytour false may find."<sup>n</sup>

"Ah! but if reason faire might you perswade  
To flake your wrath, and mollify your mind,"  
(Said he) "perhaps ye should it better find:  
For hardie thing it is, to weene by might  
That man to hard conditions to bind,  
Or ever hope to match in equall fight,  
Whose prowesse paragone saw never living wight.

14.

"Ne foothlich is it easie<sup>o</sup> for to read  
Where now on earth, or how, he may be fownd;  
For he ne wonneth in one certeine stead,  
But restlesse walketh all the world arownd,  
Ay doing thinges that to his fame redownd,  
Defending Ladies cause and Orphans right,  
Wherefo he heares that any doth confownd  
Them comfortlesse through tyranny or might:  
So is his soveraine honour raisde to heavens hight."

15.

His feeling wordes her feeble sence much pleased,  
And softly sunck into her molten hart:  
Hart that is inly hurt is greatly eased  
With hope of thing that may allegge<sup>p</sup> his smart;  
For pleasing wordes are like to Magick art,  
That doth the charmed Snake in slomber lay.  
Such secrete ease felt gentle Britomart,  
Yet list the same efforce with faind gaineray;  
So dischord ofte in Musick makes the sweeter lay;

---

<sup>n</sup> *that faytour false may find.*] See Mr. Church's explanation of *faytour*, F. Q. i. xii. 35, [this vol. p. 97.] See also Tyrwhitt's Gloss. Chaucer. "*Faitour*, a lazy, idle fellow." TODD.

<sup>o</sup> *Ne foothlich is it easie.*] *Nor truly* is it easie; from the A. S. *soth*, and the old adverbial termination. Chaucer uses *soothly*, and Gower "foothlich." C.

<sup>p</sup> *that may allegge.*] *Ease, alleviate.* Fr. *alleger*. The folio of 1679 reads *alledge*. CHURCH. But the folios 1609 and 1611 have, like the 4tos., "*allegge*," i. e. *allay*. C.



## 16.

And sayd ; “ Sir knight, these ydle termes forbear ;  
 And, sith it is uneath to find his haunt,  
 Tell me some markes by which he may appeare,  
 If chaunce I him encounter paravaunt ;<sup>q</sup>  
 For perdy one shall other slay, or daunt :  
 What shape, what shield, what armes, what steed,  
     what stedd,  
 And what so else his person most may vaunt ? ”  
 All which the Redcrosse knight to point aredd,  
 And him in everie part<sup>r</sup> before her fashioned.

## 17.

Yet him in everie part before she knew,  
 However list her now her knowledge fayne,  
 Sith him whylome in Britayne she did vew,  
 To her revealed in a mirrhour playne ;  
 Whereof did grow her first engrafted payne,  
 Whose root and stalke so bitter yet did taste,  
 That but the fruit more sweetnes did contayne,  
 Her wretched dayes in dolour she mote waste,  
 And yield the pray of love to lothsome death at last.

## 18.

By straunge occasion she did him behold,  
 And much more straungely gan to love his sight,  
 As it in bookes hath written beene of old.<sup>s</sup>

<sup>q</sup> *If chaunce I him encounter paravaunt.*] *Peradventure*, says Todd, not perceiving that such an explanation renders the line mere tautology. “Paravaunt” is *openly, publicly*; and in this signification it occurs in F. Q. B. vi. C. x. St. 15. In “Colin Clout’s Come Home Again” it is also met with, and there (spelt *paravant*) it seems to mean *before all*. C.

<sup>r</sup> *And him in everie part.*] So Spenser’s own editions read; the repetition in the next line being entirely in the poet’s manner. The rest here read, “And him in everie *point*.” Todd. Todd was a careless collator: the folios 1609 and 1611 both have “Yet him in everie *part*.” C.

<sup>s</sup> *As it in bookes hath written beene of old.*] So, in F. Q. iii. vi. 6. “As it in antique *bookes* is mentioned.” And in F. Q. iv. xi. 8 and 10. “As we in *records* read.” What *bookes* and *records* are these? These



In Deheubarth, that now South-wales is hight,<sup>t</sup>  
 What time king Ryence raign'd and dealed right,  
 The great Magitien Merlin had deviz'd,  
 By his deepe science and hell-dreaded might,  
 A looking-glasse, right wondrously aguiz'd,  
 Whose vertues through the wyde worlde soone were  
 solemniz'd.

19.

It vertue had to shew in perfect fight  
 Whatever thing was in the world contaynd,  
 Betwixt the lowest earth and hevens hight,  
 So that it to the looker appertaynd :  
 Whatever foe had wrought, or frend had faynd,  
 Therein discovered was,<sup>u</sup> ne ought mote pas,  
 Ne ought in secret from the same remaynd ;  
 For thy it round and hollow shaped was,  
 Like to the world itselſe, and seemd a world of glas.

20.

Who wonders not, that reades so wonderous worke ?  
 But who does wonder, that has red the Towre  
 Wherein th' Aegyptian Phao long did lurke  
 From all mens vew, that none might her discoure,  
 Yet she might all men vew out of her bowre ?  
 Great Ptolomæe it for his lemans fake

---

are the *bookes* (mentioned in F. Q. ii. ix. 57, this vol. p. 259) containing the antiquities of Fairy land : these are the *antique rolles*, and volumes, "Of Faerie Knights and fayrest Tanaquill." See also F. Q. iii. iii. 4 ; iv. xi. 4. As Boyardo and Ariosto often refer to Archbishop Turpin to authenticate their wonderful tales, so our poet refers to certain *bookes*, *recordes*, or *rolles*. UPTON.

<sup>t</sup> *In Deheubarth, that now South-wales is hight.*] When Wales was divided into three principalities, the countries of the Silures and Demetæ were called by the natives "Deheubarth," and by the English "South-wales." UPTON.

<sup>u</sup> *Therein discovered was.*] See also St. 21. It is manifest that Spenser drew the idea of this mirror from that which is presented by the strange knight to Cambuscan, in Chaucer, "Squ. Tale," v. 153. T. WARTON. A similar mirror is introduced by much later poets. C.



Ybuilded all of glasse, by Magicke powre,  
And also it impregnable did make ;  
Yet when his love was false he with a peaze it brake.<sup>x</sup>

21.

Such was the glassy globe that Merlin made,  
And gave unto king Ryence for his gard,  
That never foes his kingdome might invade,  
But he it knew at home before he hard  
Tydings thereof, and so them still debar'd.  
It was a famous Present for a Prince,  
And worthy worke of infinite reward,  
That treasons could bewray, and foes convince :<sup>y</sup>  
Happy this Realme, had it remayned ever since !

22.

One day it fortun'd fayre Britomart  
Into her fathers closet to repayre ;  
For nothing he from her reserv'd apart,  
Being his onely daughter and his hayre ;  
Where when she had espyde that mirrhour fayre,  
Her selfe awhile therein she vewd in vaine :  
Tho, her avizing of the vertues rare  
Which thereof spoken were, she gan againe  
Her to bethinke of that mote to her selfe pertaine.

23.

But as it falleth, in the gentlest harts  
Imperious Love hath highest set his throne,  
And tyrannizeth in the bitter smarts  
Of them that to him buxome are and prone :<sup>z</sup>

<sup>x</sup> *with a peaze it brake.*] That is, he brake it with a *violent blow*, with *the weight* of his stroke. Todd. "Peaze" and "poize" may be considered the same word: Fr. *peser*, Lat. *pendere*. C.

<sup>y</sup> *and foes convince.*] *Conviēt* his foes, according to Mr. Church; *overthrow* them, according to Mr. Upton, who [correctly] adds, that Shakespeare uses *convince* in this sense very often. The Latin word *convinco* admits both interpretations. Todd.

<sup>z</sup> *buxome are and prone.*] *Yielding*, or *obedient*. The following,



So thought this Mayd (as maydens use to done)  
 Whom fortune for her husband would allot:  
 Not that she lusted after any one,  
 For she was pure from blame of finfull blott;  
 Yet wist her life at last must lincke in that same knot.

24.

Eftsoones there was presented to her eye  
 A comely knight, all arm'd in complete wize,  
 Through whose bright ventayle,<sup>a</sup> lifted up on hye,  
 His manly face, that did his foes agrize  
 And frends to termes of gentle truce entize,  
 Lookt foorth, as Phœbus face out of the east  
 Betwixt two shady mountaynes doth arize:  
 Portly his person was, and much increast  
 Through his Heroicke grace and honorable gest.

25.

His crest was covered with a couchant Hownd,  
 And all his armour seemd of antique mould,  
 But wondrous massy and assured fownd,  
 And round about yfretted all with gold,  
 In which there written was, with cyphres old,  
*Achilles armes, which Arthegall did win:*  
 And on his shield enveloped sevenfold  
 He bore a crowned little Ermelin,  
 That deckt the azure field with her fayre pouldred skin.<sup>b</sup>

---

from Gabriel Harvey's "Pierce's Supererrogation," 1593, p. 196, exactly explains the old use of the word:—"So contrary to forwardnesse or testivenesse, so tractable, so buxom, so flexible, so applicable to every time, place, and person." C.

<sup>a</sup> *Through whose bright ventayle.*] That part of the helmet which could be raised to give air to the wearer was called the "ventayle," or *aventayle*, as Chaucer terms it. C.

<sup>b</sup> *with her fayre pouldred skin.*] That is, with her skin spotted, or *variegated*; in its primary sense, *besprinkled*: this is the genuine spelling of *powdered*, according to the etymology to which Skinner conjectures it to belong, viz. à *pulvere*, conspergo *pulvere*. T. WARTON.



26.

The Damzell well did vew his Personage,  
 And liked well, ne further fastned not,  
 But went her way ; ne her unguilty age  
 Did weene, unwares, that her unlucky lot  
 Lay hidden in the bottome of the pot.  
 Of hurt unwist<sup>c</sup> most daunger doth redound ;  
 But the false Archer, which that arrow shot  
 So flyly that she did not feele the wound,  
 Did smyle full smoothly at her weetlesse wofull stound.

27.

Thenceforth the fether in her lofty crest,  
 Ruffed of love, gan lowly to availe ;  
 And her proud portance and her princely gest,  
 With which she earst tryumphed, now did quaile :  
 Sad, solemne, fowre, and full of fancies fraile,  
 She woxe ; yet wist she nether how, nor why.  
 She wist not, filly Mayd, what she did aile,  
 Yet wist she was not well at ease perdy ;  
 Yet thought it was not love, but some melancholy.

28.

So soone as Night had with her pallid hew<sup>d</sup>  
 Defaste the beautie of the shyning skye,  
 And reſte from men the worldes desired vew,  
 She with her Nourse adowne to sleepe did lye ;  
 But sleepe full far away from her did fly :  
 In ſtead thereof ſad ſighes and ſorrowes deepe  
 Kept watch and ward about her warily,  
 That nought she did but wayle, and often ſteepe  
 Her dainty couch with teares which cloſely ſhe did weepe.

<sup>c</sup> *Of hurt unwist, &c* ] “Unwist,” *unknown*. That is, most danger arises from the hurts we know not of. CHURCH.

<sup>d</sup> *with her pallid hew.* ] “Pallid” seems an inappropriate epithet for night: perhaps we ought to take it as *palled*, the colour of a *pall*, viz. black. Of course, we make no change. C.



29.

And if that any drop of slombring rest  
 Did chaunce to still into her weary spright,  
 When feeble nature felt her selfe opprest,  
 Streight way with dreames, and with fantastick fight  
 Of dreadfull things, the same was put to flight;  
 That oft out of her bed she did astart,  
 As one with vew of ghastly feends affright:  
 Tho gan she to renew her former smart,  
 And thinke of that fayre visage written in her hart.

30.

One night, when she was toft with such unrest,  
 Her aged Nourse, whose name was Glauce hight,  
 Feeling her leape out of her loathed nest,  
 Betwixt her feeble armes her quickly keight,<sup>e</sup>  
 And downe againe her in her warme bed dight:<sup>f</sup>  
 "Ah! my deare daughter, ah! my dearest dread,  
 What uncouth fit," (sayd she) "what evill plight  
 Hath thee opprest, and with sad drearyhead  
 Chaunged thy lively cheare, and living made thee dead?"

31.

"For not of nought these fuddein ghastly feares  
 All night afflict thy naturall repose;  
 And all the day, when as thine equall peares  
 Their fit disports with faire delight doe chose,  
 Thou in dull corners doest thy selfe inclose;  
 Ne tastest Princes pleasures, ne doest spred  
 Abroad thy fresh youths fayrest flowre, but lose  
 Both leafe and fruite, both too untimely shed,  
 As one in wilfull bale for ever buried.

<sup>e</sup> *her quickly keight.*] Spenser's mode of forming the past tense of *to catch*: he adopts it again, (as here, for the sake of the rhyme,) in F. Q. B. v. C. vi. St. 29. C.

<sup>f</sup> *her in her warme bed dight.*] So Spenser's first edition reads. All other editors conform to the second edition, "*in her warme bed her dight.*" TODD.



32.

“ The time that mortall men their weary cares  
 Do lay away, and all wilde beastes do rest,  
 And every river eke his course forbears,  
 Then doth this wicked evill thee infest,  
 And rive with thousand throbs thy thrilled brest :  
 Like an huge Aetn’ of deepe engulfed gryefe,<sup>g</sup>  
 Sorrow is heaped in thy hollow chest,  
 Whence foorth it breakes in fighes and anguish ryfe,  
 As smoke and sulphure mingled with confused stryfe.

33.

“ Ay me ! how much I feare least love it bee !  
 But if that love it be, as sure I read  
 By knowen signes and passions which I see,  
 Be it worthy of thy race and royall sead,  
 Then I avow, by this most sacred head  
 Of my deare foster childe, to ease thy griefe  
 And win thy will : Therefore away doe dread ;<sup>h</sup>  
 For death nor daunger from thy dew reliefe  
 Shall me debarre : tell me therefore, my liefest lief !”

34.

So having sayd, her twixt her armes twaine  
 Shee streightly straynd, and colled tenderly ;<sup>i</sup>  
 And every trembling joynt and every vaine  
 Shee softly felt, and rubbed busily,  
 To doe the frosen cold away to fly ;  
 And her faire deawy eies with kisses deare

<sup>g</sup> *Like an huge Aetn’ of deepe engulfed gryefe.*] A proverbial expression. *Ætna malorum.*—*Onus Ætnæ gravior.* See also Ariosto, C. i. 40 :—

“ Sospirando piangea tal, ch’ un ruscello

“ Parean le guance, e’l petto un Mongibello.” UPTON.

Spenser uses the word “ Mongiball” in this vol. p. 248. C.

<sup>h</sup> *Therefore away doe dread.*] It would have been more perspicuous if the poet had written, “ Therefore *doe away* dread.” TODD. There is surely no want of perspicuousness ; and what would have become of the versification, if Todd’s arrangement had been followed ? C.

<sup>i</sup> *and colled tenderly.*] *Hung about her neck.* Lat. *collum.* CHURCH.



Shee ofte did bathe, and ofte againe did dry ;  
And ever her importund not to feare  
To let the secret of her hart to her appeare.

## 35.

The Damzell pauzd ; and then thus fearfully :

“ Ah ! Nurse, what needeth thee to eke my payne ?  
Is not enough that I alone doe dye,  
But it must doubled bee with death of twaine ?  
For nought for me but death there doth remaine.”  
“ O daughter deare !” (saide she) “ despeire no whit ;  
For never fore but might a salve obtaine :  
That blinded God, which hath ye blindly smit,  
Another arrow hath your lovers hart to hit.”

## 36.

“ But mine is not” (quoth she) “ like other wound ;  
For which no reason can finde remedy.”  
“ Was never such, but mote the like be fownd,”  
(Said she) “ and though no reason may apply  
Salve to your sore, yet love can higher stye  
Then reasons reach, and oft hath wonders donne.”  
“ But neither God of love nor God of skye  
Can doe” (saide she) “ that which cannot be donne.”  
“ Things ofte impossible” (quoth she) “ seeme ere  
begonne.”

## 37.

“ These idle wordes” (saide she) “ doe nought aswage  
My stubborne smart, but more annoiaunce breed :  
For no, no usuall fire, no usuall rage  
Yt is, O Nurse ! which on my life doth feed,  
And sucks the blood which from my hart doth bleed :  
But since thy faithful zeale lets me not hyde  
My crime, (if crime it be) I will it reed.  
Nor Prince nor pere it is, whose love hath gryde<sup>k</sup>

---

<sup>k</sup> *whose love hath gryde.*] i. e. hath pierced. See vol. i. p. 21, &c. C.



My feeble brest of late, and launched this wound wyde.

38.

“ Nor man it is, nor other living wight,  
For then some hope I might unto me draw ;  
But th’ only shade and semblant of a knight,  
Whose shape or person yet I never saw,  
Hath me subjected to loves cruell law :  
The same one day, as me misfortune led,  
I in my fathers wondrous mirrhour saw,  
And, pleased with that seeming goodly-hed,<sup>1</sup>  
Unwares the hidden hooke with baite I swallowed.

39.

“ Sithens it hath infixed faster hold  
Within my bleeding bowells, and so fore  
Now ranckleth in this same fraile fleshly mould,  
That all mine entrailes flow with poisonous gore,  
And th’ ulcer groweth daily more and more ;  
Ne can my ronning fore finde remedee,  
Other then my hard fortune to deplore,  
And languish, as the leafe faln from the tree,  
Till death make one end of my daies and miseree !”

40.

“ Daughter,” (said she) “ what need ye be dismayd ?  
Or why make ye such Monster of your minde ?  
Of much more uncouth thing I was affrayd,  
Of filthy lust, contrary unto kinde ;  
But this affection nothing straunge I finde ;  
For who with reason can you aye reprove  
To love the semblaunt pleasing most your minde,  
And yield your heart whence ye cannot remove ?  
No guilt in you, but in the tyranny of love.

---

<sup>1</sup> *that seeming goodly-hed.*] A rather unusual mode of printing a word, uniting the last part of it by a hyphen: *head*, *bed*, or *hood*, denoting state or condition, are generally made part of the word, (see St. 30, &c.) but sometimes printed as a separate word. C.



41.

“ Not so th’ Arabian Myrrhe did sett her mynd,  
 Nor so did Biblis spend her pining hart;  
 But lov’d their native flesh against al kynd,  
 And to their purpose used wicked art:  
 Yet playd Pasiphaë a more monstrous part,  
 That lov’d a Bul, and learnd a beast to bee.  
 Such shamefull lustes who loaths not, which depart  
 From course of nature and of modestee?  
 Swete love such lewdnes bands<sup>m</sup> from his faire companee.

42.

“ But thine, my Deare, (welfare thy heart, my deare!)  
 Though straunge beginning had, yet fixed is  
 On one that worthy may perhaps appeare;  
 And certes seemes bestowed not amis:  
 Joy thereof have thou and eternall blis!”  
 With that, upleaning on her elbow weake,  
 Her alablafter brest<sup>n</sup> she soft did kis,  
 Which all that while shee felt to pant and quake,  
 As it an Earth-quake were: at last she thus bespake.

43.

“ Beldame, your words doe worke me litle ease;  
 For though my love be not so lewdly bent  
 As those ye blame, yet may it nought appease

---

<sup>m</sup> *Swete love such lewdnes bands.*] To *band* properly signifies to join together in a company, to assemble, as in Acts xxiii. 12. “And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together.” Spenser, therefore, either for the convenience of the verse used *bands* for *disbands*, or, what is most probable, the word was written in his copy *banns*, which, according to Junius, is to forbid by proscription, *interdicere*; and from whence the verb to *banish* is derived. T. WARTON.

<sup>n</sup> *Her alablafter brest.*] The second edition reads *alablasted*, which must be wrong. This spelling, which is agreeable to all the old editions, is vindicated by Skinner in his Introduction to his Etymological Dictionary. UPTON. *Alablafter* was the usual reading of our elder poets, from whom I could give numerous examples. I find G. Wither the first who writes *alabaster*. See his “Mistresse of Philarete,” 1622. TODD. A total mistake: Chaucer has *alabaſtre*; “Kn. Tale,” v. 1912. C.



My raging smart, ne ought my flame relent,  
 But rather doth my helpelesse grieve augment;  
 For they, how ever shamefull and unkinde,<sup>o</sup>  
 Yet did possesse their horrible intent:  
 Short end of sorrowes they therby did finde;  
 So was their fortune good, though wicked were their  
 minde.

44.

“ But wicked fortune mine, though minde be good,<sup>p</sup>  
 Can have no ende nor hope of my desire,  
 But feed on shadowes whiles I die for food,  
 And like a shadow wexe, whiles with entire  
 Affection I doe languish and expire.  
 I, fonder then Cephifus foolish chyld,  
 Who, having vewed in a fountaine shere<sup>q</sup>  
 His face, was with the love thereof beguyld;  
 I, fonder, love a shade, the body far exyld.”

45.

“ Nought like,” (quoth shee) “ for that same wretched boy  
 Was of him selfe the ydle Paramoure,  
 Both love and lover, without hope of joy,  
 For which he faded to a watry flowre:  
 But better fortune thine, and better howre,  
 Which lov’st the shadow of a warlike knight;  
 No shadow but a body hath in powre:  
 That body, wheresoever that it light,  
 May learned be by cyphers, or by Magicke might.

<sup>o</sup> *how ever shamefull and unkinde.*] *Unnatural.* The same as “ contrary unto kinde,” St. 40. “ Against al kynd,” St. 41. CHURCH.

<sup>p</sup> *though minde be good.*] The first folio [as well as that of 1611] reads “ though mine be good.” CHURCH.

<sup>q</sup> *in a fountain shere.*] “ Shere” is *transparent*. Again, F. Q. iii. xi. 7: “ She at last came to a fountaine sheare.” Again, F. Q. iv. vi. 20: “ Pactolus with his waters shere;” which seems copied from Golding’s “ Ovid,” 4to. 1587, Met. iv:—

“ The water was so pure and sheere.” TODD.



46.

“ But if thou may with reason yet repress  
 The growing evill, ere it strength have gott,  
 And thee abandond wholly do possesse,  
 Against it strongly strive, and yield thee nott  
 Til thou in open felde adowne be smott :  
 But if the passion mayster thy fraile might,  
 So that needs love or death must bee thy lott,  
 Then, I avow to thee, by wrong or right  
 To compas thy desire, and find that loved knight.”

47.

Her chearefull words much cheard the feeble spright  
 Of the sicke virgin, that her downe she layd  
 In her warme bed to sleepe, if that she might ;  
 And the old-woman carefully displayd  
 The clothes about her round with busy ayd ;  
 So that at last a litle creeping sleepe  
 Surprisd her sence : Shee, therewith well apayd,  
 The dronken lamp down in the oyl did steepe,  
 And sett her by to watch, and sett her by to weepe.

48.

Earely, the morrow next, before that day  
 His joyous face did to the world revele,  
 They both uprose and tooke their ready way  
 Unto the Church, their praiers to appele  
 With great devotion, and with little zeale :  
 For the faire Damzel from the holy herse<sup>r</sup>  
 Her love-sicke hart to other thoughts did steale ;

<sup>r</sup> *from the holy herse.*] “From the holy *herse*” is, I suppose, the same as if he had said, “from the holy *berfal*,” which is used afterwards, F. Q. iii. xi. 18 :—

“Sad *berfal* of his heavy stresse.”

So that *holy herse* is here, the rehearsal of the prayers in the church-service, at which Britomart is now described as present. *Herse* occurs in the Pastoral of November, as the burden of Colin's song, “O heavie *herse*,” and, “O happie *herse*,” where E. K. interprets *herse*, “The solemne Obsequie in Funerals.” T. WARTON.



And that old Dame said many an idle verse,  
Out of her daughters hart fond fancies to reverse.

49.

Retourned home, the royall Infant fell  
Into her former fitt ; for why no powre<sup>s</sup>  
Nor guidaunce of herselfe in her did dwell :  
But th' aged Nourse, her calling to her bowre,  
Had gathered Rew, and Savine, and the flowre  
Of Camphora, and Calamint, and Dill ;  
All which she in a earthen Pot did poure,  
And to the brim with Colt wood did it fill,  
And many drops of milk and blood through it did spill.

50.

Then, taking thrise three heares from off her head,  
Them trebly breaded in a threefold lace,  
And round about the Pots mouth bound the thread ;  
And, after having whispered a space  
Certain sad words with hollow voice and bace,  
Shee to the virgin sayd, thrise sayd she itt ;  
“ Come, daughter, come ; come, spit upon my face ;  
Spitt thrise upon me, thrise upon me spitt ;  
Th' uneven number for this busines is most fitt.”<sup>t</sup>

<sup>s</sup> *for why no powre.*] It has been usual to print “ for why ” with a mark of interrogation after it ; but wrongly, since it merely means *because* : Britomart fell into her former condition *because* she had no power to control herself. C.

<sup>t</sup> *Th' uneven number for this busines is most fitt.*] I cannot help citing a passage from Petronius, which illustrates these foolish and superstitious ceremonies :—“ Illa de sinu licium protulit varii coloris filis intortum, cervicemque vinxit meam : mox turbatum sputo pulverem medio sustulit digito, frontemque repugnantis signavit : hoc peracto carmine, ter me iussit exspuere, terque lapillos conjicere in sinum, quos ipsa præcantatos purpura involverat,” &c. This silly custom of spitting they used in order to avert what was odious or ill ominous. See the scholiast on Theoc. Idyll. vi. 39 : Τρίς εἰς ἐμὸν ἔπτυσσα κόλπον. Spenser happily expresses *come* thrice, and *spit upon me*, thrice. Yet he should not have said *face*, but *bosom* : these wicked rhymes, however, must plead his excuse. UPTON.



51.

That fayd, her rownd about ſhe from her turnd,  
 She turned her contrary to the Sunne;  
 Thriſe ſhe her turnd contrary, and returnd  
 All contrary; for ſhe the right did ſhunne;  
 And ever what ſhe did was ſtreight undonne.  
 So thought ſhe to undoe her daughter's love;  
 But love, that is in gentle breaſt begonne,  
 No ydle charmes ſo lightly may remove:  
 That well can witneſſe who by tryall it does prove.

52.

Ne ought it mote the noble Mayd avayle,  
 Ne ſlake the fury of her cruell flame,  
 But that ſhee ſtill did waſte, and ſtill did wayle,  
 That, through long languour and hart-burning breme,<sup>u</sup>  
 She ſhortly like a pyned ghooſt became  
 Which long hath waited by the Stygian ſtrond.  
 That when old Glauce ſaw, for feare leaſt blame  
 Of her miſcarriage ſhould in her be fond,  
 She wiſt not how t'amend, nor how it to withſtond.

---

<sup>u</sup> *and hart-burning breme.*] Mr. Upton has here converted, in his Gloſſary, *breme* into a ſubſtantive, which he interprets *vexation*; but I conceive, with Mr. Church, that *breme* is the adjective *breem* or *breme*, (which the rhyme has here altered,) and which Spenser uſes, *F. Q.* vii. vii. 40, for *ſevere* or *ſharp*, as alſo in his “*Shep. Cal.*” Feb. [vol. i. p. 23]. Todd. *E. K.* vol. i. p. 32, interprets, “*breme*,” *chill*, *bitter*, but it alſo means *violent*, *outrageous*; and we have no doubt that Church and Todd were right in taking it as an epithet applied to “*heart-burning*.” There is no ſuch ſubſtantive as “*breme*” or *breme* in Engliſh: the ſubſtantive is *breemneſs*. C.





### CANTO III.

*Merlin bewrayes to Britomart  
The state of Arthegall;  
And shews the famous Progeny,  
Which from them springen shall.*

I.



MOST sacred fyre, that burnest mightily  
In living brests, ykindled first above  
Emongst th' eternall spheres and lamping  
sky,  
And thence poured into men, which men  
call Love!

Not that same, which doth base affections move  
In brutish mindes, and filthy lust inflame,  
But that sweete fit that doth true beautie love,  
And choseth vertue for his dearest Dame,  
Whence spring all noble deedes and never dying fame:

2.

Well did Antiquity a God thee deeme,  
That over mortall mindes hast so great might,  
To order them as best to thee doth seeme,  
And all their actions to direct aright:  
The fatall purpose of divine foresight  
Thou doest effect in destined descents,  
Through deepe impression of thy secret might,  
And stirredst up th' Heroes high intents,  
Which the late world admyres for wondrous moniments.



3.

But thy dredd dartes in none doe triumph more,  
Ne braver prooffe in any of thy powre  
Shewd'st thou, then in this royall Maid of yore,  
Making her seeke an unknowne Paramoure,  
From the worlds end, through many a bitter stowre :  
From whose two loynes thou afterwarde did rayse  
Most famous fruites of matrimoniall bowre,  
Which through the earth have spredd their living  
    prayse,  
That fame in tromp of gold eternally displayes.

4.

Begin then, O my dearest sacred Dame !  
Daughter of Phœbus and of Memorye,  
That doest ennoble with immortall name  
The warlike Worthies, from antiquitye,  
In thy great volume of Eternitye :  
Begin, O Clio ! and recount from hence  
My glorious Soveraines goodly auncestrye,  
Till that by dew degrees, and long protense,<sup>a</sup>  
Thou have it lastly brought unto her Excellence.

5.

Full many wayes within her troubled mind  
Old Glauce cast to cure this Ladies grieve ;  
Full many waies she fought, but none could find,  
Nor herbes, nor charmes, nor counsel, that is chiefe  
And choicest med'cine for sick harts reliefe :  
For thy great care she tooke, and greater feare,  
Least that it should her turne to fowle reprieve

---

<sup>a</sup> *and long protense.*] So the first edition reads, but other editions, *pretence*. The first edition is right : *protense*, a *protendo*, from stretching and drawing out. “Cujus *protendere* famam.” Claudian, “De Laud. Stil.” 1. 36. The Italians have *protendere*, *proteso*, *protensione*. UPTON. We have not met with the substantive in any other author; but Dryden, in his Transl. of Virgil, B. x, as Richardson shows, talks of the “protended spear” of an adversary. C.



And fore reproch, when fo her father deare  
Should of his dearest daughters hard misfortune heare.

6.

At last she her avisde, that he which made  
That mirrhour, wherein the sicke Damosell  
So straungely vewed her straunge lovers shade,  
To weet, the learned Merlin, well could tell  
Under what coast of heaven the man did dwell,  
And by what means his love might best be wrought :  
For, though beyond the Africk Ismael  
Or th' Indian Peru he were, she thought  
Him forth through infinite endeavour to have fought.

7.

Forthwith them selves disguising both in straunge  
And base atyre, that none might them bewray,  
To Maridunum, that is now by chaunge  
Of name Cayr-Merdin cald, they tooke their way :  
There the wise Merlin whylome wont (they say)  
To make his wonne, low underneath the ground,  
In a deepe delve, farre from the vew of day,  
That of no living wight he mote be found,  
When so he counfeld with his sprights encompass round.

8.

And, if thou ever happen that same way  
To traveill, go to see that dreadful place.  
It is an hideous hollow cave (they say)  
Under a Rock that lyes a litle space  
From the swift Barry, tombling downe apace  
Emongst the woody hilles of Dynevowre :<sup>b</sup>  
But dare thou not, I charge, in any cace  
To enter into that same balefull Bowre,  
For feare the cruell Feendes should thee unwares devowre :

---

<sup>b</sup> *Emongst the woody hilles of Dynevowre.*] The principal seat of the princes of South-wales was Dynefar, or Dynevor castle, near Caermarthen, who from thence were called the kings of Dynevor. See Drayton's "Polyolb." S. 5. UPTON.



9.

But standing high aloft low lay thine eare,  
 And there such ghastly noyse of yron chaines  
 And brasen Caudrons thou shalt rombling heare,  
 Which thousand sprights with long enduring paines  
 Doe tosse, that it will stonn thy feeble braines;  
 And oftentimes great grones, and grievous stownds,  
 When too huge toile and labour them constraines,  
 And oftentimes loud strokes and ringing fowndes  
 From under that deepe Rock most horribly rebowndes.

10.

The cause, some say, is this: A litle whyle  
 Before that Merlin dyde, he did intend  
 A brasen wall in compas to compyle  
 About Cairmardin, and did it commend  
 Unto these Sprights to bring to perfect end:  
 During which worke the Lady of the Lake,  
 Whom long he lov'd, for him in hast did send;  
 Who, thereby forst his workemen to forsake,  
 Them bownd till his retourne their labour not to flake.

11.

In the meane time, through that false Ladies traine  
 He was surprisd, and buried under beare,  
 Ne ever to his worke returnd againe:  
 Nath'lesse those feends may not their work forbear,  
 So greatly his commandement they feare,  
 But there doe toyle and traveile day and night,  
 Untill that brasen wall they up doe reare;  
 For Merlin had in Magick more insight  
 Than ever him before, or after, living wight:

12.

For he by wordes could call out of the sky  
 Both Sunne and Moone, and make them him obay;  
 The Land to sea, and sea to maineland dry,  
 And darksom night he eke could turne to day:

11.

c c



Huge hostes of men he could alone dismay,  
 And hostes of men of meanest thinges could frame,  
 Whenso him list his enimies to fray;  
 That to this day, for terror of his fame,  
 The feends do quake when any him to them does name.

13.

And sooth men say that he was not the sonne  
 Of mortall Syre or other living wight,  
 But wondrously begotten, and begonne  
 By false illusion of a guilefull Spright  
 On a faire Lady Nonne, that whilome hight  
 Matilda, daughter to Pubidius,  
 Who was the lord of Mathtraval<sup>c</sup> by right,  
 And coosen unto king Ambrosius;  
 Whence he indued was with skill so merveilous.

14.

They, here arriving, staid awhile without,  
 Ne durst adventure rashly in to wend,  
 But of their first intent gan make new dout,  
 For dread of daunger which it might portend;  
 Untill the hardy Mayd (with love to frend)  
 First entering, the dreadfull Mage there fownd  
 Deepe busied bout worke of wondrous end,  
 And writing straunge characters in the grownd,  
 With which the stubborne feendes he to his service bownd.

15.

He nought was moved at their entraunce bold,  
 For of their comming well he wist afore;  
 Yet list them bid their businesse to unfold,  
 As if ought in this world in secrete store  
 Were from him hidden, or unknowne of yore.  
 Then Glauce thus: "Let not it thee offend,

---

<sup>c</sup> *Who was the lord of Mathtraval.*] Roderic the Great (see St. 45) divided Wales into three provinces, Aberffraw, Dinevowr, and Mathtraval. See Wynne's "Hist. of Wales," p. 27. CHURCH.



That we thus rashly through thy darksome dore  
Unwares have prest; for either fatall end,  
Or other mightie cause, us two did hether send."

16.

He bad tell on; And then she thus began.

"Now have three Moones with borrowd brothers light  
Thrice shined faire, and thrice seemd dim and wan,  
Sith a fore evill, which this virgin bright  
Tormenteth and doth plunge in dolefull plight,  
First rooting tooke; but what thing it mote bee,  
Or whence it sprong, I can not read aright:  
But this I read, that, but if remedee  
Thou her afford, full shortly I her dead shall see."

17.

Therewith th' Enchaunter softly gan to smile  
At her smooth speeches, weeting inly well  
That she to him dissembled womanish guyle,  
And to her said: "Beldame, by that ye tell  
More neede of leach-crafte<sup>d</sup> hath your Damozell,  
Then of my skill: who helpe may have elsewhere,  
In vaine seekes wonders out of Magick spell."

Th' old woman wox half blanck those wordes to heare,  
And yet was loth to let her purpose plaine appeare;

18.

And to him said: "Yf any leaches skill,  
Or other learned meanes, could have redrest  
This my deare daughters deepe engrafted ill,  
Certes I should be loth thee to molest;  
But this sad evill, which doth her infest,

<sup>d</sup> *More neede of leach-crafte.*] *The art of healing, or of physic.* So Chaucer, "Kn. Tale," v. 2748:—

"The clotered blood, for any *leche-crafte*,

"Corrumpeth, &c."

And in Golding's "Ovid," Met. xv. p. 190, b. edit. 1612: "By force of herbes and *leechcraft*." TODD.



Doth course of naturall cause farre exceed,  
 And housed is within her hollow brest,  
 That either seemes some curfed witches deed,  
 Or evill spright, that in her doth such torment breed."

19.

The wifard could no lenger beare her bord,<sup>e</sup>  
 But, brusting forth<sup>f</sup> in laughter, to her sayd :  
 " Glauce, what needes this colourable word  
 To cloke the cause that hath it selfe bewrayd ?  
 Ne ye, fayre Britomartis, thus arayd,  
 More hidden are then Sunne in cloudy vele ;  
 Whom thy good fortune, having fate obayd,  
 Hath hether brought for succour to appele ;  
 The which the powres to thee are pleased to revele."

20.

The doubtfull Mayd, seeing her selfe descryde,  
 Was all abasht, and her pure yvory  
 Into a cleare Carnation fuddeine dyde ;  
 As fayre Aurora, ryfing hastily,  
 Doth by her blushing tell that she did lye  
 All night in old Tithonus frozen bed,  
 Whereof she seemes ashamed inwardly :  
 But her olde Nourse was nought dishartened,  
 But vauntage made of that which Merlin had ared ;

21.

And sayd ; " Sith then thou knowest all our grieve,

<sup>e</sup> *No lenger beare her bord.*] Her *jest*, her *pretence* ; for what she said was *not true*. The word "bord" is often used for *jest* or *merri-ment*. See F. Q. iv. iv. 13. So Chaucer, "Manc. Prol." v. 17030, edit. Tyrwhitt :—

"That, that I spake, I sayd it in my *bourd*."

And Drayton, "Shepheards Garland," edit. 1593, p. 53 :—

"Gramercy, Borrill, for thy company,

"For all thy jesses and all thy merrie *bourds*." Todd.

<sup>f</sup> *But, brusting forth.*] So every edition, and not *bursting*, as Todd and others printed it. "Brust" was the more ancient form of the word, and it became *brast* and *breft* in the past tense. C.



(For what doest not thou knowe ?) of grace I pray,  
 Pitty our playnt, and yield us meet reliefe."  
 With that the Prophet still awhile did stay,  
 And then his spirite thus gan foorth display :  
 " Most noble Virgin, that by fatall lore  
 Hast learn'd to love, let no whit thee dismay  
 The hard beginne that meetes thee in the dore,  
 And with sharpe fits thy tender hart oppresseth fore :

22.

" For so must all things excellent begin ;  
 And eke enrooted deepe must be that Tree,  
 Whose big embodied braunches shall not lin<sup>g</sup>  
 Till they to hevens hight forth stretched bee :  
 For from thy wombe a famous Progenee  
 Shall spring out of the auncient Trojan blood,  
 Which shall revive the sleeping memoree  
 Of those same antique Peres, the hevens brood,  
 Which Greeke and Asian rivers stayned with their blood.

23.

" Renowmed kings, and sacred Emperours,  
 Thy fruitfull Ofspring, shall from thee descend ;  
 Brave Captaines, and most mighty warriours,  
 That shall their conquests through all lands extend,  
 And their decayed kingdomes shall amend :<sup>h</sup>  
 The feeble Britons, broken with long warre,  
 They shall upreare, and mightily defend  
 Against their forren foe that commes from farre,  
 Till universall peace compound all civill jarre.

<sup>g</sup> *braunches shall not lin.*] "Lin" is *cease*, and we have it again in St. 30: the branches should continue, or not *cease* to grow. It is from the A. S. *linnan* ; as *blin*, also to cease or desist, is from the A. S. *blinnan* : the last may once have been written *belinnan*, and is, in truth, the same word as *linnan*, with the prefix. C.

<sup>h</sup> *kingdomes shall amend.*] The second and subsequent folio read, without authority, "*all* amend." Todd. This is a mistake: the second folio, that of 1611, reads, like the 4tos., "*shall* amend." Todd is not to be trusted as collator. C.



24.

“ It was not, Britomart, thy wandring eye  
 Glauncing unwares in charmed looking glas,  
 But the streight course of heavenly destiny,  
 Led with eternall providence, that has  
 Guyded thy glaunce, to bring his will to pas :  
 Ne is thy fate, ne is thy fortune ill,  
 To love the prowest knight that ever was.  
 Therefore submit thy wayes unto his will,  
 And doe by all dew meanes thy destiny fulfill.”

25.

“ But read,” (saide Glaunce) “ thou Magitian,  
 What meanes shall she out seeke, or what waies take ?  
 How shall she know, how shall she finde the man ?  
 Or what needes her to toyle, fith fates can make  
 Way for themselves their purpose to pertake ?”  
 Then Merlin thus : “ Indeede the fates are firme,  
 And may not shrinck, though all the world do shake ;  
 Yet ought mens good endeavours them confirme,  
 And guyde the heavenly causes to their constant terme.

26.

“ The man, whom heavens have ordaynd to bee  
 The spouse of Britomart, is Arthegall :  
 He wonneth in the land of Fayeree,  
 Yet is no Fary borne, ne fib at all<sup>i</sup>  
 To Elfes, but sprong of seed terrestriall,  
 And whylome by false Faries stolne away,  
 Whyles yet in infant cradle he did crall ;  
 Ne other to himselfe is knowne this day,  
 But that he by an Elfe was gotten of a Fay :

27.

“ But footh he is the sonne of Gorlois,

<sup>i</sup> *ne fib at all.*] *Relation.* “ Ne fib at all,” i.e. *he is no way related.*  
 So Chaucer, p. 223, ed. Urr :—

“ Was *fibbe* to Arthour of Breteigne.” CHURCH.



And brother unto Cador, Cornish king ;  
 And for his warlike feates renownmed is,  
 From where the day out of the sea doth spring,  
 Untill the closure of the Evening :  
 From thence him, firmly bound with faithfull band,  
 To this his native soyle thou backe shalt bring,  
 Strongly to ayde his countrey to withstand  
 The powre of forreine Paynims which invade thy land.

28.

“ Great ayd thereto his mighty puissaunce  
 And dreaded name shall give in that sad day ;  
 Where also prooffe of thy prow valiaunce<sup>k</sup>  
 Thou then shalt make, t’ increase thy lover’s pray.  
 Long time ye both in armes shall beare great fway,  
 Till thy wombes burden thee from them do call,  
 And his last fate him from thee take away ;  
 Too rathe cut off<sup>l</sup> by practise criminall  
 Of secrete foes, that him shall make in mischief fall.

29.

“ With thee<sup>m</sup> yet shall he leave, for memory  
 Of his late puissaunce, his ymage dead,  
 That living him in all activity  
 To thee shall represent. He, from the head  
 Of his coosen Constantius, without dread  
 Shall take the crowne that was his fathers right,  
 And therewith crowne himselfe in th’ others stead :

<sup>k</sup> *prooffe of thy prow valiaunce.*] “ Prow ” is from the Fr. *preux*, and means *courageous, brave, hardy*. Skinner conjecturally derives it from *probus* or *probat*. C.

<sup>l</sup> *Too rathe cut off.*] Too early. In “ The Shep. Cal.” for December, vol. i. p. 139, we read :—

“ Thus is my harvest hastened all to *rathe*.”

In his Ecl. for February, Spenser uses it in the comparative degree, when speaking of “ the *rather* lambes,” i.e. the *earlier* lambs. Milton applies “ *rathe* ” as an epithet to the primrose. C.

<sup>m</sup> *With thee.*] So the first edition. The rest read, “ *Where* thee, &c.” TODD.



Then shall he isswe forth with dreadfull might  
Against his Saxon foes in bloody field to fight.

30.

“ Like as a Lyon that in drowfie cave  
Hath long time slept, himselfe so shall he shake ;  
And comming forth shall spred his banner brave  
Over the troubled South, that it shall make  
The warlike Mertians for feare to quake :  
Thrise shall he fight with them, and twise shall win ;  
But the third time shall fayre accordaunce make :  
And, if he then with victorie can lin,  
He shall his dayes with peace bring to his earthly In.

31.

“ His sonne, hight Vortipore, shall him succeede  
In kingdome, but not in felicity :  
Yet shall he long time warre with happy speed,  
And with great honour many batteills try ;  
But at the last to th’ importunity<sup>n</sup>  
Of froward fortune shall be forst to yield :  
But his sonne Malgo shall full mightily  
Avenge his fathers losse with speare and shield,  
And his proud foes discomfit in victorious field.

32.

“ Behold the man ! and tell me, Britomart,  
If ay more goodly creature thou didst see ?  
How like a Gyaunt in each manly part  
Beares he himselfe with portly majestee,  
That one of th’ old Heroes seemes to bee !  
He the fix Islands,<sup>o</sup> comprovinciall

<sup>n</sup> to th’ importunity.] i.e. the cruelty of froward fortune. Spenser here uses “ importunity ” as the Latins used *importunus*. C.

<sup>o</sup> He the six Islands, &c.] Viz. Ireland, Iseland, Godland, the Orkneys, Norway, and Dacia. Geoffry of Monmouth, and Robert of Gloucester, say that he was the *handsomest* and the *strongest* prince that ever reigned in Britain. CHURCH.



In auncient times unto great Britainee,  
 Shall to the fame reduce, and to him call  
 Their fondry kings to do their homage severall.

33.

“ All which his sonne Careticus awhile  
 Shall well defend, and Saxons powre suppressē;  
 Untill a straunger king, from unknowne foyle  
 Arriving, him with multitude oppressē;  
 Great Gormond, having with huge mightinesse  
 Ireland subdewd, and therein fixt his throne,  
 Like a swift Otter, fell through emptinesse,  
 Shall over swim the sea, with many one  
 Of his Norveyfes, to assist the Britons fone.

34.

“ He in his furie all shall overronne,  
 And holy Church with faithlesse handes deface,  
 That thy sad people, utterly fordonne,  
 Shall to the utmost mountaines fly apace.  
 Was never so great waste in any place,  
 Nor so fowle outrage doen by living men;  
 For all thy Citties they shall sacke and race,  
 And the greene grassee that groweth they shall bren,  
 That even the wilde beast shall dy in starved den.

35.

“ Whiles thus thy Britons<sup>p</sup> doe in languour pine,  
 Proud Etheldred shall from the North arise,  
 Serving th' ambitious will of Augustine,  
 And, passing Dee, with hardy enterprise  
 Shall backe repulse the valiaunt Brockwell twise,  
 And Bangor with massacred Martyrs fill;  
 But the third time shall rew his foolhardise:  
 For Cadwan, pittying his peoples ill,  
 Shall stoutly him defeat, and thousand Saxons kill.

---

<sup>p</sup> *Whiles thus thy Britons.*] So the first edition emphatically reads;  
 the rest read, “ *the Britons.*” TODD.



36.

“ But after him, Cadwallin mightily  
 On his sonne Edwin all those wrongs shall wreake ;  
 Ne shall availe the wicked forcery  
 Of false Pellite his purposes to breake,  
 But him shall slay, and on a gallows bleak  
 Shall give th’ enchaunter his unhappy hire.  
 Then shall the Britons, late dismayd and weake,  
 From their long vassalage gin to respire,  
 And on their Paynim foes avenge their ranckled ire.

37.

“ Ne shall he yet his wrath so mitigate,  
 Till both the sonnes of Edwin he have slayne,  
 Offricke and Ofricke, twinnes unfortunate,  
 Both slaine in battaile upon Layburne playne,  
 Together with the king of Louthiane,  
 Hight Adin, and the king of Orkeny,  
 Both joynt partakers of their fatall payne :<sup>a</sup>  
 But Penda, fearefull of like destiny,  
 Shall yield him selfe his liegeman, and sweare fealty.

38.

“ Him shall he make his fatall Instrument  
 T’ afflict the other Saxons unsubdewd ;  
 He marching forth with fury insolent  
 Against the good king Oswald, who indewd  
 With heavenly powre, and by Angels reskewd,  
 Al holding crosses in their hands on hye,  
 Shall him defeate withouten blood imbrewd :  
 Of which that field, for endlesse memory,  
 Shall Hevenfield be cald to all posterity.

---

<sup>a</sup> *Both joynt partakers of their fatall payne.*] That is, the fatal end of *Offricke* and *Ofricke*. Edits. after the first read, “ *the fatall payne* ; ” which Mr. Upton interprets, *the endeavour that proved fatal* to them. TODD.



39.

“ Whereat Cadwallin wroth shall forth issew,  
 And an huge hoste into Northumber lead,  
 With which he godly Oswald shall subdew,  
 And crowne with martiredome his sacred head :  
 Whose brother Oswin, daunted with like dread,  
 With price of silver shall his kingdome buy ;  
 And Penda, seeking him adowne to tread,  
 Shall tread adowne, and doe him fowly dye ;  
 But shall with guifts<sup>r</sup> his Lord Cadwallin pacify.

40.

“ Then shall Cadwallin die ; and then the raine  
 Of Britons eke with him attonce shall dye ;  
 Ne shall the good Cadwallader, with paine  
 Or powre, be hable it to remedy,  
 When the full time, prefixt by destiny,  
 Shalbe expird of Britons regiment :  
 For heven it selfe shall their successe envy,  
 And them with plagues and murrins pestilent  
 Consume, till all their warlike puissaunce be spent.

41.

“ Yet after all these sorrowes, and huge hills  
 Of dying people, during eight yeares space,  
 Cadwallader, not yielding to his ills,  
 From Armoricke, where long in wretched cace  
 He liv'd, retourning to his native place,  
 Shalbe by vision staide from his intent :  
 For th' heavens have decreed to displace  
 The Britons for their finnes dew punishment,  
 And to the Saxons over-give their government.

42.

“ Then woe, and woe, and everlasting woe,

---

<sup>r</sup> *But shall with guifts.*] The old spelling of *gifts*, which last Todd (following the folios) prints ; but, by an ordinary error of mistaking the long *f* for *f*, it stands *guifts* in the 4to. 1590. C.



Be to the Briton babe that shalbe borne  
 To live in thraldome of his fathers foe!  
 Late king, now captive; late lord, now forlorne;  
 The worlds reproch, the cruell victors scorne;  
 Banisht from princely bowre to wasteful wood!  
 O! who shal helpe me to lament and mourne  
 The royall seed, the antique Trojan blood,  
 Whose empire lenger here then ever any stood?"

43.

The Damzell was full deepe empaffioned  
 Both for his griefe, and for her peoples sake,  
 Whose future woes so plaine he fashioned;  
 And, fighting fore, at length him thus bespake:  
 "Ah! but will hevens fury never flake,  
 Nor vengeaunce huge relent it selfe at last?  
 Will not long misery late mercy make,  
 But shall their name for ever be defaste,  
 And quite from of the earth their memory be raste?"<sup>s</sup>

44.

"Nay but the terme" (sayd he) "is limited,  
 That in this thraldome Britons shall abide;  
 And the just revolution measured  
 That they as Straungers shalbe notifide:  
 For twise fowre hundreth yeares shalbe supplide,<sup>t</sup>  
 Ere they to former rule restor'd shalbee,<sup>u</sup>

<sup>s</sup> *And quite from of the earth their memory be raste.*] Todd, while professing to follow the old spelling, prints "of" *off*, for which it was, doubtless, intended by the poet. "Of" is obtained from the errata of the edit. 1590; but, nevertheless, it is not found in the folio 1611, although certainly the ear is not satisfied without it. C.

<sup>t</sup> *For twise fowre hundreth yeares shalbe supplide.*] So the first edition reads: the rest omit *yeares*; and some [as the folio 1611] insert *full* to complete the verse: "For twice fowre hundreth shalbe *full* supplide." TODD. It merits notice that Drayton, in his copy of the folio 1611, adds "yeares" and erases *full*, thereby making it tally with the 4to. 1590. C.

<sup>u</sup> *Ere they to former rule restor'd shalbee.*] Nobody has remarked



And their importune fates all fatisfide :  
 Yet, during this their most obscuritee,  
 Their beames shall ofte breake forth, that men them  
 faire may see.

45.

“ For Rhodoricke, whose surname shalbe Great,  
 Shall of him selfe a brave ensample shew,  
 That Saxon kings his frendship shall intreat ;  
 And Howell Dha shall goodly well indew  
 The salvage minds with skill of just and trew :  
 Then Griffyth Conan also shall upreare  
 His dreaded head, and the old sparkes renew  
 Of native corage, that his foes shall feare,  
 Least back againe the kingdom he from them should  
 beare.

46.

“ Ne shall the Saxons selves all peaceably  
 Enjoy the crowne, which they from Britons wonne  
 First ill, and after ruled wickedly ;  
 For, ere two hundred yeares be full outronne,  
 There shall a Raven, far from rising Sunne,  
 With his wide wings upon them fiercely fly,  
 And bid his faithlesse chickens overronne  
 The fruitfull plaines, and with fell cruelty  
 In their avenge tread downe the victors surquedry.

47.

“ Yet shall a third both these and thine subdew.  
 There shall a Lion<sup>x</sup> from the sea-bord wood  
 Of Neustria come roring, with a crew

---

that here the original impression is at fault by reading “ Ere they unto their former rule restor’d shalbee.” The line has two redundant and and quite needless syllables, which were subsequently omitted. C.

<sup>x</sup> *There shall a Lion.*] William the first was called “the lion of Neustria:” by the “Raven,” in the preceding stanza, we need hardly say that Spenser meant the Dane. C.



Of hungry whelpes, his battailous bold brood,  
 Whose clawes were newly dipt in cruddy blood,  
 That from the Daniske Tyrants head shall rend  
 Th' usurped crowne, as if that he were wood,<sup>y</sup>  
 And the spoile of the countrey conquered  
 Emongst his young ones shall divide with bountyhed.

48.

“ Tho, when the terme is full accomplishid,  
 There shall a sparke of fire, which hath long-while  
 Bene in his ashes raked up and hid,  
 Bee freshly kindled in the fruitfull Ile  
 Of Mona, where it lurked in exile;  
 Which shall breake forth into bright burning flame,  
 And reach into the house that beares the stile  
 Of roiall majesty and soveraine name:  
 So shall the Briton blood their crowne agayn reclame.<sup>z</sup>

49.

“ Thenceforth eternall union shall be made  
 Betweene the nations different afore,  
 And sacred Peace shall lovingly persuade  
 The warlike minds to learne her goodly lore,  
 And civile armes to exercise no more:  
 Then shall a royall Virgin raine, which shall  
 Stretch her white rod over the Belgicke shore,  
 And the great Castle smite<sup>a</sup> so sore withall,  
 That it shall make him shake, and shortly learn to fall.

<sup>y</sup> *as if that he were wood.*] i. e. as if the lion were “wood,” *wild* or *mad*: (see vol. i. p. 238.) In the first line of the stanza we have “wood” in its ordinary sense; “the sea-bord wood” being the wood by the sea-shore, or border. C.

<sup>z</sup> *So shall the Briton blood their crowne agayn reclame.*] By the accession of Henry of Richmond to the crown the prophecy of Merlin and of Cadwallader came to be fulfilled, that the Briton blood should reign again in Britain. Henry, descended from the Tudors, was born in Mona, now called Anglesey. See Drayton’s “Polyolbion,” p. 141. UPTON.

<sup>a</sup> *And the great Castle smite.*] By the “great Castle” Spenser means Spain or Castille. The “royal virgin” is, of course, Elizabeth. C.



50.

“ But yet the end is not.”—There Merlin stayd,  
 As overcomen of the spirites powre,  
 Or other ghastly spectacle dismayd,  
 That secretly he saw, yet note discoure:<sup>b</sup>  
 Which suddain fitt, and halfe extatick stoure,  
 When the two fearefull women saw, they grew  
 Greatly confusd in behaveoure.  
 At last, the fury past, to former hew  
 Hee turnd againe, and chearfull looks as earst<sup>c</sup> did shew.

51.

Then, when them selves they well instructed had  
 Of all that needed them to be inquired,  
 They both, conceiving hope of comfort glad,  
 With lighter hearts unto their home retir'd;  
 Where they in secret counsell close conspir'd,  
 How to effect so hard an enterprize,  
 And to possesse the purpose they desir'd:  
 Now this, now that, twixt them they did devize,  
 And diverse plots did frame to make in strange disguise.

52.

At last the Nourse in her foolhardy wit  
 Conceiv'd a bold devise, and thus bespake:  
 “ Daughter, I deeme that counsel aye most fit,  
 That of the time doth dew advantage take.  
 Ye see that good king Uther now doth make<sup>d</sup>

<sup>b</sup> yet note discoure.] Yet was not able to discover: “note” ought, properly, to have been printed *n'ote*, i. e. *ne wote*. We have had “discure” for *discover* already: see this vol. p. 254. C.

<sup>c</sup> Hee turnd againe, and chearfull looks as earst, &c.] *Hee* is corrected from the errata subjoined to Spenser's first edition. All the rest inaccurately read *Shee*. In Spenser's own editions, the words *as earst* are wanting in this line; no doubt, through the carelessness of the printer. They are first found in the folio of 1609, and have been admitted into every subsequent edition. Todd. In the folio 1611, *She* is continued; but Drayton, in his copy of it, struck out the letter *S*. C.

<sup>d</sup> Ye see that good king Uther now doth make, &c.] This passage is



Strong warre upon the Paynim brethren, hight  
 Oeta and Oza, whome hee lately brake  
 Beside Cayr Verolame in victorious fight,  
 That now all Britany doth burne in armes bright.

53.

“ That, therefore, nought our passage may impeach,<sup>e</sup>  
 Let us in feigned armes our selves disguise,  
 And our weake hands (need makes good schollers)  
 teach<sup>f</sup>

The dreadful speare and shield to exercise :  
 Ne certes, daughter, that fame warlike wize,  
 I weene, would you misseeme ; for ye beene tall,  
 And large of limbe t’ atchieve an hard emprize ;  
 Ne ought ye want but skil, which practize small  
 Wil bring, and shortly make you a mayd Martiall.

54.

“ And, footh, it ought your corage much inflame  
 To heare so often, in that royall hous,  
 From whence, to none inferior, ye came,  
 Bards tell of many wemen valorous,  
 Which have full many feats adventurous  
 Performd, in paragone of proudest men :  
 The bold Bunduca, whose victorious

---

very material to fix the historical point of time when these transactions are supposed to be carrying on. That point of time is when Uther Pendragon, king of Britain, was attacked by Oeta, the son of Hengist, and his kinsman Eosa. So the names are written by Geoffry of Monmouth, B. viii. C. 18. And in C. 23 he mentions Oeta and Eosa being killed at Verolam. UPTON.

<sup>e</sup> *That therefore nought our passage may impeach.*] So Spenser’s own editions read, thus distinguishing *impeach*, to hinder, from *impeach*, to accuse. The rest read, *impeach*. See also the note on F. Q. i. viii. 34 [vol. i. p. 313]. TODD.

<sup>f</sup> *(need makes good schollers) teach.*] So the first edition. The second edition, and the folios read, “ *whom need new strength shall teach.*” The alteration is so much for the worse, that I dare be confident it is not Spenser’s. CHURCH. Drayton made no note here in his folio, 1611. C.



Exploits made Rome to quake ; stout Guendolen ;  
Renowned Martia ; and redoubted Emmilen.

55.

“ And, that which more then all the rest may sway,  
Late dayes ensample, which these eyes beheld :  
In the last field before Menevia,  
Which Uther with those forrein Pagans held,  
I saw a Saxon Virgin, the which feld  
Great Ulfin thrise upon the bloody playne ;  
And, had not Carados her hand withheld  
From rash revenge, she had him surely slayne :  
Yet Carados himselfe from her escapt with payne.”

56.

“ Ah ! read,” (quoth Britomart) “ how is she hight ?”  
“ Fayre Angela” (quoth she) “ men do her call,  
No whit lesse fayre then terrible in fight :  
She hath the leading of a Martiall  
And mightie people, dreaded more then all  
The other Saxons, which doe, for her sake  
And love, themselves of her name *Angles* call.  
Therefore, faire Infant, her ensample make  
Unto thy selfe, and equall corage to thee take.”

57.

Her harty wordes so deepe into the mynd  
Of the yong Damzell funke, that great desire  
Of warlike armes in her forthwith they tynd,<sup>s</sup>  
And generous stout courage did inspyre,  
That she resolv'd, unweeting to her Syre,  
Advent'rous knighthood on her selfe to don ;  
And counfeld with her Nourse her Maides attyre  
To turne into a massy habergeon,  
And bad her all things put in readinesse anon.

---

<sup>s</sup> *in her forthwith they tynd.*] To tine, or “ tyne,” is from the A. S. *tendan* : it is frequently used by Spenser, and it generally means *to set on fire*, or *inflame* : see this vol. p. 294. C.



58.

Th' old woman nought that needed did omit ;  
But all thinges did conveniently purvay.  
It fortun'd (so time their turne did fitt)  
A band of Britons, ryding on forray  
Few dayes before, had gotten a great pray  
Of Saxon goods ; emongst the which was seene  
A goodly Armour, and full rich aray,  
Which long'd to Angela, the Saxon Queene,  
All fretted round with gold, and goodly wel beseene.

59.

The same, with all the other ornaments,  
King Ryence caused to be hanged hy  
In his chiefe Church, for endlesse moniments  
Of his succeſſe and gladfull victory :  
Of which her ſelfe avising readily,  
In th' evening late old Glauce thether led  
Faيرة Britomart, and, that ſame Armory  
Downe taking, her therein appareled  
Well as ſhe might, and with brave bauldrick garniſhed.

60.

Befide thoſe armes there ſtood a mightie ſpeare,  
Which Bladud made by Magick art of yore,  
And uſd the ſame in batteill aye to beare ;  
Sith which it had beene here preſerv'd in ſtore,  
For his great virtues proved long afore :  
For never wight ſo faſt in ſell could fit,  
But him perforce unto the ground it bore.  
Both ſpeare ſhe tooke and ſhield which hong by it ;  
Both ſpeare and ſhield of great powre, for her purpoſe fit.

61.

Thus when ſhe had the virgin all arayd,  
Another harneſſe which did hang thereby  
About her ſelfe ſhe dight, that the yong Mayd  
She might in equall armes accompany,



And as her Squyre attend her carefully.  
 Tho to their ready Steedes they clombe full light,  
 And through back waies, that none might them espy,  
 Covered with secret cloud of silent night,  
 Themselves they forth convaide, and passed forward right.

62.

Ne rested they, till that to Faery lond  
 They came, as Merlin them directed late :  
 Where, meeting with this Redcrosse Knight, she fond  
 Of diverse thinges discourses to dilate,  
 But most of Arthegall and his estate.  
 At last their wayes so fell, that they mote part :  
 Then each to other, well affectionate,  
 Friendship professed with unfained hart.  
 The Redcrosse Knight diverst, but forth rode Britomart.<sup>h</sup>

---

<sup>h</sup> *The Redcrosse Knight diverst, but forth rode Britomart.] We hear no more of St. George in the remaining Books, only mentioned by the bye in F. Q. v. iii. 53. The poet's design seems plainly to bring all the various knights together, before the poem concluded, at the Court of the Fairy Queen. UPTON. "Diverst" is diverged, took a different, or diverse way, while Britomart proceeded straight forward. Todd collects needless authorities to show that "diverst" means diverted. C.*







## CANTO IV.

*Bold Marinell of Britomart  
Is throwne on the Rich strand:  
Faire Florimell of Arthure is  
Long followed, but not fond.*

I.



HERE is the Antique glory now become,  
That whylome wont in wemen to ap-  
peare?<sup>a</sup>

Where be the brave atchievements doen  
by some?

Where be the batteilles, where the shield and speare,  
And all the conquests which them high did reare,  
That matter made for famous Poets verse,  
And boastfull men so oft abasht to heare?

Beene they all dead, and laide in dolefull herse,  
Or doen they onely sleepe, and shall againe reverse?<sup>b</sup>

2.

If they be dead, then woe is me therefore;

---

<sup>a</sup> *Where is the Antique glory now become,  
That whylome wont in wemen to appeare? &c.* This introduc-  
tion in praise of women seems to be enlarged from that of Ariosto,  
C. xx. 1:—

“La donne antiche hanno mirabil cose,” &c.  
In F. Q. iii. ii. 1. [p. 362.] he has touched upon the same argument:—  
“Here have I cause in men just blame to find,” &c.

T. WARTON.

<sup>b</sup> *and shall againe reverse.* Return. See the note on F. Q. i. ix.  
48, [this vol. p. 18.] CHURCH.



But if they sleepe, O let them soone awake!  
 For all too long I burne with envy fore  
 To heare the warlike feates which Homere spake  
 Of bold Penthesilee, which made a lake  
 Of Greekish blood so ofte in Trojan plaine:  
 But when I reade, how stout Debora strake<sup>c</sup>  
 Proud Sisera; and how Camill' hath slaine<sup>d</sup>  
 The huge Orilochus, I swell with great disdain.

3.

Yet these, and all that els had puissaunce,  
 Cannot with noble Britomart compare,  
 Aswell for glorie of great valiaunce,  
 As for pure chastitee and vertue rare,  
 That all her goodly deedes do well declare.  
 Well worthie stock, from which the branches sprong  
 That in late yeares so faire a blossome bare,  
 As thee, O Queene! the matter of my song,  
 Whose lignage from this Lady I derive along.

4.

Who when, through speaches with the Redcrosse Knight,  
 She learned had th' estate of Arthegall,  
 And in each point her selfe informd aright,  
 A friendly league of love perpetuall  
 She with him bound, and Congé tooke withall:  
 Then he forth on his journey did proceede,  
 To seeke adventures which mote him befall,  
 And win him worship through his warlike deed,  
 Which alwaies of his paines he made the chiefeest meed.

5.

But Britomart kept on her former course,

<sup>c</sup> *how stout Debora strake, &c.*] It was through her means, and Barak's, that Sisera was discomfited; but it was Jael that "strake" the nail into his temples: Judg. iv. 21. UPTON.

<sup>d</sup> *and how Camill' hath slaine.*] Camilla, who slew the huge Orilochus, as mentioned in Virgil, Æn. xi. 690. UPTON.



Ne ever dofte her armes, but all the way  
 Grew penfive through that amarus difcourfe,  
 By which the Redcroffe knight did earft difplay  
 Her lovers fhape and chevalrous aray :  
 A thoufand thoughts ſhe fafhiond in her mind,  
 And in her feigning fancie did pourtray  
 Him fuch as fitteft ſhe for love could find,<sup>e</sup>  
 Wife, warlike, perfonable, courteous, and kind.

6.

With fuch felfe-pleafing thoughts her wound ſhe fedd,  
 And thought fo to beguile her grievous ſmart ;  
 But fo her ſmart was much more grievous bredd,  
 And the deepe wound more deep engord her hart,  
 That nought but death her dolour mote depart.  
 So forth ſhe rode, without repofe or reft,  
 Searching all lands and each remoteft part,  
 Following the gyardance of her blinded gueft,  
 Till that to the feacoaft at length ſhe her addreft.

7.

There ſhe alighted from her light-foot beaft,  
 And fitting downe upon the rocky ſhore,  
 Badd her old Squyre unlace her lofty creaft :  
 Tho having vewd awhile the farges hore  
 That gainft the craggy clifts did loudly rore,  
 And in their raging furquedry difdaynd  
 That the faft earth affronted them fo fore,<sup>f</sup>  
 And their devouring covetize reſtraynd ;  
 Thereat ſhe ſighed deepe, and after thus complaynd.

8.

“ Huge ſea of forrow and tempeſtuous grieve,

<sup>e</sup> *ſhe for love could find.*] It is “ *be* for love could find ” in the 4to. 1590 only. The emendation was firſt made in the 4to. 1596, and all the folios adopted it. C.

<sup>f</sup> *affronted them ſo fore.*] *Oppoſed*, [reſiſted them in front.] See the note on *affront*, F. Q. i. viii. 13, [vol. i. p. 306.] TODD.



Wherein my feeble barke is tossed long  
 Far from the hoped haven of reliefe,  
 Why doe thy cruel billowes beat so strong,  
 And thy moyft mountaines each on others throng,  
 Threatning to swallow up my fearefull lyfe?  
 O! doe thy cruell wrath and spightfull wrong  
 At length allay, and stint thy stormy strife,  
 Which in thy troubled bowels<sup>g</sup> raignes and rageth ryfe.

9.

“For els my feeble vessell, crazd and crackt  
 Through thy strong buffets and outrageous blowes,  
 Cannot endure, but needes it must be wrackt  
 On the rough rocks, or on the sandy shallowes,  
 The whiles that love it steres, and fortune rowes:  
 Love, my lewd Pilott,<sup>h</sup> hath a restlesse minde;  
 And fortune, Boteswaine, no assurance knowes;  
 But faile withouten starres gainst tyde and winde:  
 How can they other doe, sith both are bold and blinde?”

10.

“Thou God of windes, that raignest in the seas,  
 That raignest also in the Continent,  
 At last blow up some gentle gale of ease,  
 The which may bring my ship, ere it be rent,  
 Unto the gladsome port of her intent.  
 Then, when I shall my selfe in safety see,  
 A table, for eternall moniment  
 Of thy great grace and my great jeoparddee,  
 Great Neptune, I avow to hallow unto thee!”

11.

Then fighting softly fore, and inly deepe,

<sup>g</sup> *Which in thy troubled bowels.*] So the 4to. 1590: later editions, without necessity, substitute *these* for “thy.” C.

<sup>h</sup> *Love, my lewd Pilott.*] The word “lewd” had three significations in the time of Spenser—*ignorant*, *wicked*, and *lustful*: the poet may have intended to apply it in a double, or treble sense to love. C.



She shut up all her plaint in privy grieve;  
 For her great courage would not let her weepe,  
 Till that old Glauce gan with sharpe reprieve  
 Her to restraine, and give her good reliefe  
 Through hope of those, which Merlin had her told  
 Should of her name and nation be chiefe,  
 And fetch their being from the sacred mould  
 Of her immortall womb, to be in heaven enrold.

12.

Thus as she her recomforted, she spyde  
 Where far away one, all in armour bright,  
 With hasty gallop towards her did ryde.  
 Her dolour soone she ceast, and on her dight  
 Her Helmet, to her Courser mounting light:  
 Her former sorrow into sudden wrath,  
 Both coosen passions of distroubled spright,  
 Converting, forth she beates the dusty path:  
 Love and despight attonce her courage kindled hath.

13.

As, when a foggy mist hath overcast  
 The face of heven, and the cleare ayre engroste,  
 The world in darknes dwels; till that at last  
 The watry Southwinde, from the seabord coste  
 Upblowing, doth disperse the vapour lo'ste,<sup>i</sup>  
 And poures it selfe forth in a stormy showre:  
 So the fayre Britomart, having disclo'ste  
 Her cloudy care into a wrathfull stowre,  
 The mist of grieve dissolv'd did into vengeance powre.

14.

Eftsoones, her goodly shield addressing fayre,

---

<sup>i</sup> *the vapour lo'ste* ] "The vapour lo'ste" is the vapour *looste*, *loosed*, *dissolved*; as "disclo'ste," in the seventh line, is *disclooste*, *disclosed*. So he uses *dispost* for *disposed*, F. Q. ii. viii. 26, [this vol. p. 225.] The folios here read *lost*. CHURCH. He might, however, have added that the folios have *disclo'st*, though they misprint "lo'ste." C.



That mortall speare she in her hand did take,  
 And unto battaill did her selfe prepayre.  
 The knight, approching, sternely her bespake :  
 "Sir knight, that doest thy voyage rashly make  
 By this forbidden way in my despight,  
 Ne doest by others death ensample take,  
 I read thee soone retyre, whiles thou hast might,  
 Least afterwards it be too late to take thy flight."

15.

Ythrild with deepe disdaine of his proud threat,  
 She shortly thus : "Fly they, that need to fly ;  
 Wordes fearen babes.<sup>k</sup> I meane not thee entreat  
 To passe, but maugre thee will passe or dy."  
 Ne lenger stayd for th' other to reply,  
 But with sharpe speare<sup>l</sup> the rest made dearly knowne.  
 Strongly the straunge knight ran, and sturdily  
 Strooke her full on the brest, that made her downe  
 Decline her head, and touch her crouper with her crown.

16.

But she againe him in the shield did smite  
 With so fierce furie and great puissaunce,  
 That, through his three-square scuchin percing quite  
 And through his mayled hauberque, by mischaunce  
 The wicked steele through his left side did glaunce.  
 Him so transfixed she before her bore  
 Beyond his croupe, the length of all her launce ;  
 Till, sadly fousing on the sandy shore,  
 He tumbled on an heape, and wallowd in his gore.

---

<sup>k</sup> *Wordes fearen babes.*] i. e. words *frighten* babes, cause them to fear. Spenser had this transitive use of *to fear* in common with nearly all the poets of his time : so Shakespeare, "Tam. of the Shrew," A. i. Sc. 2. "*Fear* boys with bugs,"—*frighten* boys with bugbears. C.

<sup>l</sup> *But with sharpe speare.*] This is the emendation of the first folio, which all subsequent editions have followed. "Speare" is *speares* in the earlier impressions. TODD.



17.

Like as the sacred Oxe that carelesse stands,  
 With gilden hornes and flowry girlonds crownd,  
 Proud of his dying honor and deare bandes,  
 Whiles th' altars fume with frankincense arownd,  
 All suddainly, with mortall stroke astownd,  
 Doth groveling fall, and with his streaming gore  
 Distaines the pillours and the holy grownd,  
 And the faire flowres that decked him afore:  
 So fell proud Marinell upon the pretious shore.

18.

The martiall Mayd stayd not him to lament,  
 But forward rode, and kept her ready way  
 Along the strond; which, as she over-went,  
 She saw bestrowed all with rich aray  
 Of pearles and pretious stones of great assay,  
 And all the gravell mixt with golden owre:  
 Whereat she wondred much, but would not stay  
 For gold, or perles, or pretious stones, an howre,  
 But them despised all; for all was in her powre.

19.

Whiles thus he lay in deadly stonishment,  
 Tydings hereof came to his mothers eare:  
 His mother was the blacke-browd Cymoent,  
 The daughter of great Nereus, which did beare  
 This warlike sonne unto an earthly peare,  
 The famous Dumarin; who, on a day  
 Finding the Nymph a sleepe in secret wheare,<sup>m</sup>

---

<sup>m</sup> *Finding the Nymph a sleepe in secret wheare.*] Our poet is the best interpreter of his own phrases. See the "Shep. Cal." May, v. 9 [vol. i. p. 56]:—

"Youghthes folke now flocken in every *where*,

"To gather May buskets and smelling brere."

That is, in every *place*; as E. K. our poet's friend, and oldest commentator, there explains it. UPTON.



As he by chaunce did wander that same way,  
Was taken with her love, and by her closely lay.

20.

There he this knight of her begot, whom borne  
She, of his father, Marinell did name;  
And in a rocky cave, as wight forlorne,  
Long time she fostred up, till he became  
A mighty man at armes, and mickle fame  
Did get through great adventures by him donne:  
For never man he suffred by that fame  
Rich strond to travell, whereas he did wonne,  
But that he must do battail with the Sea-nymphes sonne.

21.

An hundred knights of honorable name  
He had subdewd, and them his vassals made;  
That through all Farie lond his noble fame  
Now blazed was, and feare did all invade,  
That none durst passen through that perilous glade:  
And to advaunce his name and glory more,  
Her Sea-god fyre she dearely did perswade  
T' endow her sonne with threasure and rich store  
Bove all the sonnes that were of earthly wombes ybore.

22.

The God did graunt his daughters deare demaund,  
To doen his Nephew in all riches flow,  
Eftsoones his heaped waves he did commaund  
Out of their hollow bosome forth to throw  
All the huge threasure, which the sea below  
Had in his greedy gulfe devoured deepe,  
And him enriched through the overthrow  
And wreckes of many wretches, which did weepe  
And often wayle their wealth, which he from them did  
keepe.

23.

Shortly upon that shore there heaped was



Exceeding riches and all pretious things,  
 The spoyle of all the world ; that it did pas  
 The wealth of th' East, and pompe of Persian kings :  
 Gold, amber, yvorie, perles, owches, rings,  
 And all that els was pretious and deare,  
 The sea unto him voluntary brings ;  
 That shortly he a great Lord did appeare,  
 As was in all the lond of Faery, or else wheare.

24.

Thereto he was a doughty dreaded knight,  
 Tryde often to the scath of many Deare,  
 That none in equall armes him matchen might :  
 The which his mother seeing gan to feare  
 Least his too haughtie hardines might reare  
 Some hard mishap in hazard of his life.  
 For thy she oft him counfeld to forbear  
 The bloody batteill, and to stirre up strife,  
 But after all his warre to rest his wearie knife.<sup>n</sup>

25.

And, for his more assuraunce, she inquir'd  
 One day of Proteus by his mighty spell  
 (For Proteus was with prophecy inspir'd)  
 Her deare sonnes destiny to her to tell,  
 And the sad end of her sweet Marinell :  
 Who, through foresight of his eternall skill,  
 Bad her from womankind to keepe him well,  
 For of a woman he should have much ill ;  
 A virgin straunge and stout him should dismay or kill.

---

<sup>n</sup> *to rest his wearie knife.*] “ Knife ” is usually employed for *sword* in the old romances. Todd. Shakespeare, in his “ Henry VIII. ” used “ knife ” for the sword of justice, according to a MS. emendation in the corrected folio 1632 :—

“ and so give me up  
 “ To the sharpest *knife* of justice.”

The usual reading has been “ sharpest kinde ” for “ sharpest *knife*.” See “ Shakesp. ” by Collier, edit. 1858, vol. iv. p. 403 ; where, however, “ kind ” is preserved, because it is intelligible, though perhaps wrong. C.



26.

For thy she gave him warning every day  
 The love of women not to entertaine;  
 A lesson too too hard<sup>o</sup> for living clay  
 From love in course of nature to refraine.  
 Yet he his mothers lore did well retaine,  
 And ever from fayre Ladies love did fly;  
 Yet many Ladies fayre did oft complaine,  
 That they for love of him would algates dy:  
 Dy, who so list for him, he was loves enemy.

27.

But ah! who can deceive his destiny,  
 Or weene by warning to avoyd his fate?  
 That, when he sleepest in most security  
 And safest seemes, him soonest doth amate,  
 And findeth dew effect or soone or late;  
 So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme.<sup>p</sup>  
 His mother bad him wemens love to hate,  
 For she of womans force did feare no harme;  
 So, weening to have arm'd him, she did quite disarme.

28.

This was that woman, this that deadly wovnd,  
 That Proteus prophecide should him dismay;  
 The which his mother vainely did expownd  
 To be hart-wounding love, which should assay  
 To bring her sonne unto his last decay.  
 So tickle be the termes of mortall state,  
 And full of subtile sophismes, which doe play

---

<sup>o</sup> *A lesson too too hard.*] This is an old form of expression, to signify exceeding. It is of such frequent occurrence, even after the Restoration, that it is superfluous to cite examples. C.

<sup>p</sup> *So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme.*] This is the reading of the second edition, which the folios follow. Spenser's first edition has "*fleshy arme.*" Milton seems to have considered the second edition as presenting the genuine reading: see "*Par. Reg.*" B. iii. 387:—

"Much ostentation vain of *fleshy arm.*" TODD.



With double fences, and with false debate,  
T' approve the unknownen purpose of eternall fate.

29.

Too trew the famous Marinell it fownd;  
Who, through late triall, on that wealthy Strond  
Inglorious now lies in sencelesse fwownd,  
Through heavy stroke of Britomartis hond.  
Which when his mother deare did understond,  
And heavy tidings heard, whereas she playd  
Amongst her watry sisters by a pond,  
Gathering sweete daffadillyes, to have made  
Gay girlonds from the Sun their forheads fayr to shade;

30.

Eftsoones both flowres and girlonds far away  
Shee flong, and her faire deawy lockes yrent;  
To sorrow huge she turnd her former play,  
And gamesom merth to grievous dreriment:  
Shee threw her selfe downe on the Continent,  
Ne word did speake, but lay as in a fwowne,<sup>q</sup>  
Whiles al her sisters did for her lament  
With yelling outcries, and with shrieking fowne;  
And every one did teare her girlond from her crowne.

31.

Soone as shee up out of her deadly fitt  
Arose, shee bad her charett to be brought;  
And all her sisters that with her did fitt  
Bad eke attonce their charetts to be fought:  
Tho, full of bitter grieve and pensife thought,  
She to her wagon clombe; clombe all the rest,  
And forth together went with sorow fraught.  
The waves, obedient to theyr beheast,  
Them yielded ready passage, and their rage surceast.

---

<sup>q</sup> *but lay as in a fwowne.*] *Swornd* in the 4to. 1590 only, and the word was often so spelt of old; but here the rhyme shows that we ought to follow the later editions. So "gamesom" is *gamefon* in 1590. C.



32.

Great Neptune stoode amazed at their fight,  
 Whiles on his broad rownd backe they softly slid,  
 And eke him selfe mournd at their mournful plight,  
 Yet wist not what their wailing ment; yet did,  
 For great compassion of their sorow, bid  
 His mighty waters to them buxome bee:<sup>r</sup>  
 Eftefoones the roaring billowes still abid,  
 And all the griesly Monsters of the See  
 Stood gaping at their gate,<sup>s</sup> and wondred them to see.

33.

A teme of Dolphins raunged in aray  
 Drew the smooth charett of sad Cymoent:  
 They were all taught by Triton to obay  
 To the long raynes<sup>t</sup> at her commaundement:  
 As swifte as swallowes on the waves they went,  
 That their brode flaggy finnes no fome did reare,  
 Ne bubling rowndell they behinde them sent.  
 The rest, of other fishes drawen weare,  
 Which with their finny oars the swelling sea did sheare.

34.

Soone as they bene arriv'd upon the brim  
 Of the Rich strond, their charets they forlore,  
 And let their temed fishes softly swim  
 Along the margent of the fomy shore,  
 Least they their finnes should bruze, and furbate fore  
 Their tender feete upon the stony grownd:  
 And comming to the place, where all in gore  
 And cruddy blood enwallowed they fownd  
 The lucklesse Marinell lying in deadly fwownd,

<sup>r</sup> *to them buxome bee.*] To be *obedient* or *yielding* to them, as before, in this vol. p. 60. C.

<sup>s</sup> *Stood gaping at their gate.*] Stood gaping at their *progress*, at the way they went: A. S. *gæt*, from *gangan* to go. C.

<sup>t</sup> *To the long raynes.*] So the first edition reads: the second edition reads *traines*. TODD. The folios also have *traines*. C.



35.

His mother fwowned thrife, and the third time  
 Could scarce recovered bee out of her paine :  
 Had ſhe not beene devoide of mortall ſlime,  
 Shee ſhould not then have bene relyv'd againe ;  
 But, ſoone as life recovered had the raine,  
 Shee made ſo piteous mone and deare wayment,<sup>u</sup>  
 That the hard rocks could ſcarfe from tears refraine ;  
 And all her ſiſter Nymphes with one conſent  
 Supplide her fobbing breaches with ſad complement.<sup>x</sup>

36.

“ Deare image of my ſelfe, (ſhe ſayd) “ that is  
 The wretched ſonne of wretched mother borne,  
 Is this thine high advauncement? O! is this  
 Th’ immortall name, with which thee, yet unborne,  
 Thy Grandfire Nereus promiſt to adorne?  
 Now lyest thou of life and honor reſte ;  
 Now lyest thou a lumpe of earth forlorne ;  
 Ne of thy late life memory is leſte,  
 Ne can thy irrevocable deſteny bee weſte.<sup>y</sup>

37.

“ Fond Proteus, father of falſe prophecis !  
 And they more fond that credit to thee give !  
 Not this the worke of womans hand ywis,  
 That ſo deepe wound through theſe deare members  
 drive.  
 I feared love ; but they that love doe live,  
 But they that dye doe nether love nor hate :

<sup>u</sup> *piteous mone and deare wayment.*] Todd in his Dict. truly ſtates that “wayment” for *lament* is obſolete. It occurs in Chaucer’s “Troilus and Creſſeid:” ii. 65, and in Drayton’s “Shepherd’s Garland,” 1593, as ſhown in our note on p. 91 of this vol. C.

<sup>x</sup> *with ſad complement.*] i. e. with ſad completion: they filled up the intervals of her lamentation. C.

<sup>y</sup> *deſteny bee weſte.*] Be *waved*, avoided, removed. CHURCH. We have before had “weſte” uſed as the paſt tenſe of the verb to *waſt*; and ſuch, indeed, may be its meaning here. C.



Nath'lesse to thee thy folly I forgive ;  
 And to my selfe, and to accursed fate,  
 The guilt I doe ascribe : deare wisedom bought too late !

38.

“ O ! what availes it of immortall feed  
 To beene ybredd and never borne to dye ?  
 Farre better I it deeme to die with speed  
 Then waste in woe and wayfull miserye :  
 Who dyes, the utmost dolor doth abyẽ ;<sup>z</sup>  
 But who that lives is leste to waile his losse :  
 So life is losse, and death felicity :  
 Sad life worse then glad death ; and greater crosse  
 To see frends grave, then dead the grave self to engrosse.

39.

“ But if the heavens did his dayes envie,  
 And my short blis maligne, yet mote they well  
 Thus much afford me, ere that he did die,  
 That the dim eies of my deare Marinell  
 I mote have closed, and him bed farewell,  
 Sith other offices for mother meet  
 They would not graunt<sup>a</sup>——  
 Yett, maulgre them, farewell, my sweetest sweet !  
 Farewell, my sweetest sonne, till we againe may meet !”

40.

Thus when they all had forowed their fill,  
 They softly gan to search his griesly wound :  
 And, that they might him handle more at will,

<sup>z</sup> *the utmost dolor doth abyẽ.*] “Abye” is *abide, suffer, or endure*, as we have already seen in this vol. pp. 155, 226. C.

<sup>a</sup> *They would not graunt.*] This is one of Spenser's incomplete lines—perhaps left so purposely, to show more effectually the grief of a mother, who suddenly breaks off from an accusation of the heavens to bid farewell to her dead offspring. The last line in this stanza varies in the old copies : we give the text of the 4to. 1590 ; but subsequent impressions alter the last six words thus : “sith we no more shall meet”—which were preferred by Church, but for no sufficient reason. C.



They him difarmd ; and, fpredding on the grownd  
 Their watchet mantles<sup>b</sup> frindgd with filver rownd,  
 They foftly wipt away the gelly blood  
 From th' orifice ; which having well upbownd,  
 They pourd in foveraine balme and Nectar good,<sup>c</sup>  
 Good both for erthly med'cine and for heavenly food.

41.

Tho when the lilly handed Liagore<sup>d</sup>  
 (This Liagore whilome had learned skill  
 In leaches craft, by great Apolloes lore,  
 Sith her whilome upon high Pindus hill  
 He loved, and at laft her wombe did fill  
 With heavenly feed, whereof wife Pæon fprong)  
 Did feele his pulse, fhee knew there ftained ftill  
 Some litle life his feeble fprites emong ;  
 Which to his mother told, despeyre fhe from her flong.

42.

Tho up him taking in their tender hands,  
 They eafely unto her charett beare :  
 Her teme at her commaundement quiet ftands,  
 Whiles they the corfe into her wagon reare,

<sup>b</sup> *Their watchet mantles.*] The word “watchet” was formerly common for *blue*. See Cotgrave's Dict. in v. COLOUR. “*Blew or watchet colour, couleur pers.*” See again F. Q. iv. ii. 27. TODD.

<sup>c</sup> *They pourd in foveraine balme and Nectar good.*] So Venus in the cure of Æneas, Virg. Æn. xii. 419 :—

“ ——— Spargitque salubres

“ Ambrosiæ succos et odoriferam panaceam.”

And Thetis pours in nectar to preserve the body of Patroclus from corruption, Hom. Il. σ'. 38 :—

Πατρόκλω δ' αὐτ' ἀμβροσίην καὶ νέκταρ ἐρυθρὸν  
 Στάξει κατὰ ῥινῶν, ἵνα οἱ χρῶς ἐμπεδος εἴη. UPTON.

<sup>d</sup> *Tho when the lilly handed Liagore.*] *Lilly handed*, λευκώλενος. Liagore was one of the daughters of Nereus, according to Hesiod, Θεογ. ver. 257. But this mythology is partly our poet's own, and partly borrowed from the story of Apollo's ravishing Oenone, and teaching her the secrets and uses of medicinal herbs. He says Pæon was born of Liagore and Apollo: Pæon was physician of the gods, and is mentioned in Homer, Il. ε'. 401, and 900. UPTON.



And strowe with flowres the lamentable beare.  
Then all the rest into their coches clim,  
And through the brackish waves their passage shear:  
Upon great Neptunes necke they softly swim,  
And to her watry chamber swiftly carry him.

## 43.

Deepe in the bottome of the sea her bowre  
Is built of hollow billowes heaped hye,  
Like to thicke clouds that threat a stormy showre,  
And vaulted all within, like to the Skye,  
In which the Gods doe dwell eternally:  
There they him laide in easy couch well dight,  
And sent in haste for Tryphon, to apply  
Salves to his wounds, and medicines of might;  
For Tryphon of sea gods the soveraine leach is hight.

## 44.

The whiles the Nymphes sitt all about him rownd,  
Lamenting his mishap and heavy plight;  
And ofte his mother, vewing his wide wound,  
Curfed the hand that did so deadly smight  
Her dearest sonne, her dearest harts delight:  
But none of all those curses overtooke  
The warlike Maide, th' ensample of that might;  
But fairely well shee thryvd, and well did brooke  
Her noble deedes, ne her right course for ought forfooke.

## 45.

Yet did false Archimage her still pursew,  
To bring to passe his mischievous intent,  
Now that he had her singled from the crew  
Of courteous knights, the Prince and Fary gent,  
Whom late in chace of beauty excellent  
Shee lefte, pursewing that same foster strong;  
Of whose fowle outrage they impatient,  
And full of firy zeale, him followed long,  
To reskew her from shame, and to revenge her wrong.



46.

Through thick and thin, through mountains and through  
playns,

Those two gret champions did attonce pursue  
The fearefull damzell with incessant payns;  
Who from them fled, as light-foot hare from vew  
Of hunter swifte and sent of howndes trew.  
At last they came unto a double way;  
Where, doubtfull which to take, her to reskew,  
Themselves they did dispart, each to assay  
Whether more happy were to win so goodly pray.

47.

But Timias, the Princes gentle Squyre,  
That Ladies love unto his Lord forlent,<sup>e</sup>  
And with proud envy and indignant yre  
After that wicked foster fiercely went:  
So beene they three three sondry wayes ybent;  
But fayrest fortune to the Prince befell,  
Whose chaunce it was, that soone he did repent,  
To take that way in which that Damozell  
Was fledd afore, affraid of him as feend of hell.

48.

At last of her far of<sup>f</sup> he gained vew.  
Then gan he freshly pricke his fomy steed,

---

<sup>e</sup> *unto his Lord forlent.*] “Forlent” is not in Richardson’s Dictionary; but Upton seems wrong in interpreting it *before left*: it might mean *utterly left*. There is difficulty also in Church’s explanation—“perhaps ‘forlent’ means left.” However, such appears to be the sense of the poet, although we know not in what way he arrived (excepting in the compulsion of the rhyme) at such a past tense of *forleave*, which is also wanting in our dictionaries. Todd, in his “Johnson,” has *forelend*, to which he assigns the sense of “to give beforehand,” and he cites this passage of Spenser as his example. Richardson has *for-left*. C.

<sup>f</sup> *At last of her far of.*] Here “of” stands for *off* in all the old editions, although Todd and others (not Professor Child, who adheres strictly to the ancient impressions) have printed *off*, without notice. The sense is perfectly intelligible without, even thus far, perverting the undisputed text of the time. C.



And ever as he nigher to her drew,  
 So evermore he did increase his speed,  
 And of each turning still kept wary heed :  
 Alowd to her he oftentimes did call,  
 To doe away vaine doubt and needleffe dread :  
 Full myld to her he spake, and oft let fall  
 Many meeke wordes to stay and comfort her withall.

49.

But nothing might relent her hasty flight,  
 So deepe the deadly feare of that foule fwaine  
 Was earst impressed in her gentle spright.  
 Like as a fearefull Dove, which through the raine  
 Of the wide ayre her way does cut amaine,  
 Having farre off espyde a Tassell gent,<sup>s</sup>  
 Which after her his nimble winges doth straine,  
 Doubleth her hast for feare to bee for-hent,<sup>h</sup>  
 And with her pineons cleaves the liquid firmament.

50.

With no lesse hast, and eke with no lesse dread,  
 That fearefull Ladie fledd from him, that ment  
 To her no evill thought nor evill deed ;  
 Yet former feare of being fowly shent<sup>i</sup>  
 Carried her forward with her first intent :  
 And though, oft looking backward, well she vewde  
 Her selfe freed from that foster insolent,  
 And that it was a knight which now her sewde,  
 Yet she no lesse the knight feard then that villein rude.

<sup>s</sup> a *Tassell gent.*] “Tassell” is the male of the *goshawk*. It should be written *tercel*, or *tiercel*, from the Italian, *terzuolo*; which name it is said to have obtained, because it is a *tierce*, or *third* less than the female. TODD. Shakespeare has Tassel-gentle in “Romeo and Juliet,” A. ii. Sc. 2. C.

<sup>h</sup> for *feare to bee for-hent.*] So Spenser’s own editions read; but the folios read *fore-hent*, which is right; that is, *taken before she can escape*. UPTON. “For-hent” may mean *utterly taken*. C.

<sup>i</sup> of *being fowly shent.*] Foully *dishonoured*. To *shend* is a verb of wide signification, sometimes meaning no more than to *rebuke*, *reprove*, or even to *scold*. See St. 58 of this canto, and vol. i. p. 97. C.



## 51.

His uncouth shield and straunge armes her dismayd,  
 Whose like in Faery lond were seldom seene,  
 That fast she from him fledd, no lesse afrayd  
 Then of wilde beastes if she had chafed beene;  
 Yet he her followd still with corage keene  
 So long, that now the golden Hesperus  
 Was mounted high in top of heaven sheene,  
 And warnd his other brethren joyeous  
 To light their blessed lamps in Joves eternall hous.

## 52.

All suddeinly dim wox the dampish ayre,  
 And griesly shadowes covered heaven bright,  
 That now with thousand starres was decked fayre:  
 Which when the Prince beheld, a lothfull fight,  
 And that perforce, for want of lenger light,  
 He mote surceasse his suit, and lose the hope  
 Of his long labour, he gan fowly wyte<sup>k</sup>  
 His wicked fortune that had turnd aslope,  
 And cursed night that rest from him so goodly scope.

## 53.

Tho, when her wayes he could no more descry,  
 But to and fro at disaventure strayd;  
 Like as a ship, whose Lodestar suddeinly  
 Covered with cloudes her Pilott hath dismayd;  
 His wearisome pursuit perforce he stayd,  
 And from his loftie steed dismounting low  
 Did let him forage. Downe himselfe he layd  
 Upon the grassy ground to sleepe a throw:<sup>l</sup>  
 The cold earth was his couch, the hard steele his pillow.

---

<sup>k</sup> *he gan fowly wyte.*] To "wyte" or *wite* is to *blame*, to *complain* of: see vol. i. pp. 97 and 101, where E. K. gives "to blame the blameless herd groom," as the meaning of Spenser's to "wite the witelesse herd groome." See also this vol. p. 309. C.

<sup>l</sup> *to sleepe a throw.*] A *short space*, a little while. CHURCH.



54.

But gentle Sleepe envyde him any rest :  
In stead thereof sad sorow and disdaine  
Of his hard hap did vexe his noble brest,  
And thousand Fancies bett his ydle brayne  
With their light wings, the fights of semblants vaine.  
Oft did he wish that Lady faire mote bee  
His Faery Queene, for whom he did complaine,  
Or that his Faery Queene were such as shee ;  
And ever hasty Night he blamed bitterlie.

55.

“ Night ! thou foule Mother of annoyaunce sad,  
Sister of heavie death, and nourse of woe,  
Which wast begot in heaven, but for thy bad  
And brutish shape thrust downe to hell below,  
Where, by the grim floud of Cocytus flow,  
Thy dwelling is in Herebus black hous,  
(Black Herebus, thy husband, is the foe  
Of all the Gods,) where thou ungratious  
Halfe of thy dayes doest lead in horreur hideous.

56.

“ What had th’ eternall Maker need of thee  
The world in his continuall course to keepe,  
That doest all thinges deface, ne lettest see  
The beautie of his worke ? Indeed, in sleepe  
The slouthfull body that doth love to steep  
His lustlesse limbes, and drowne his baser mind,  
Doth praise thee oft, and oft from Stygian deepe  
Calles thee his goddesse, in his errour blind,  
And great Dame Natures handmaide chearing every  
kind.

57.

“ But well I wote, that to an heavy hart  
Thou art the roote and nourse of bitter cares,  
Breeder of new, renewer of old smarts :



In stead of rest thou lendest rayling teares ;<sup>m</sup>  
 In stead of sleepe thou sendest troublous feares  
 And dreadfull visions, in the which alive  
 The dreary image of sad death appeares :  
 So from the wearie spirit thou doest drive  
 Desired rest, and men of happinesse deprive.

58.

“ Under thy mantle black there hidden lye  
 Light-shonning thefte, and traiterous intent,  
 Abhorred bloodshed, and vile felony,  
 Shamefull deceipt, and daunger imminent,  
 Fowle horror, and eke hellish dreriment :  
 All these, I wote, in thy protection bee,  
 And light doe shonne for feare of being shent ;  
 For light ylike is loth'd of them and thee ;  
 And all that lewdnesse love doe hate the light to see.

59.

“ For day discovers all dishonest wayes,  
 And sheweth each thing as it is in deed :  
 The prayfes of high God he faire displayes,  
 And his large bountie rightly doth areed :  
 Dayes dearest children be the blessed seed<sup>n</sup>  
 Which darknesse shall subdue and heaven win :  
 Truth is his daughter ; he her first did breed  
 Most sacred virgin without spot of sinne.  
 Our life is day, but death with darknesse doth begin.

60.

“ O ! when will day then turne to me againe,

<sup>m</sup> *thou lendest rayling teares.*] Tears trickling down. See the note on *raile*, F. Q. i. vi. 43. [vol. i. p. 279.] TODD.

<sup>n</sup> *Dayes dearest children be the blessed seed.*] This is the emendation of the second edition, to which every subsequent one has adhered. The first reads,

“The children of day be,” &c. TODD.

We adopt the change (which may have been Spenser's), as an improvement both of the meaning and metre : the line as it stood originally was harsh and uncouth. C.



And bring with him his long expected light?  
 O Titan! hast to reare thy joyous waine;  
 Speed thee to spred abroad thy beames bright,  
 And chace away this too long lingring night;  
 Chace her away, from whence she came, to hell:  
 She, she it is, that hath me done despight:  
 There let her with the damned spirits dwell,  
 And yield her rowme to day that can it governe well."

61.

Thus did the Prince that wearie night outweare  
 In restlesse anguish and unquiet paine;  
 And earely, ere the morrow did upreare  
 His deawy head out of the Ocean maine,  
 He up arose, as halfe in great disdaine,  
 And clombe unto his steed. So forth he went  
 With heavy looke and lumpish pace, that plaine  
 In him bewraid great grudge and maltalent:<sup>o</sup>  
 His steed eke seemd t' apply his steps to his intent.

---

<sup>o</sup> *great grudge and maltalent.*] *Ill-will*, or *spleen*. So Sorrow is described tearing her hair, in Chaucer's "Rom. R." 330:—

"As she that had it all to rent

"For angre and for *male talent*."

So *malentbalenté*, in old French, signifies an *ill-minded* person. See Cotgrave's Dict. in V. Todd. The word also occurs, as Richardson shows, in "The Merchants Second Tale," imputed to Chaucer; but Chaucer and Spenser seem the only writers in whose works it has been yet found. C.





## CANTO V.

*Prince Arthur beares of Florimell:  
three fosters Timias wound;  
Belphebe findes him almost dead,  
and reareth out of sownd.<sup>a</sup>*

I.



WONDER it is to see in diverse mindes  
How diversly love doth his pageaunts  
play,  
And shewes his powre in variable kindes:  
The baser wit, whose ydle thoughts al-  
way

Are wont to cleave unto the lowly clay,  
It stirreth up to sensuall desire,  
And in lewd slouth to wast his carelesse day;  
But in brave sprite it kindles goodly fire,  
That to all high desert and honour doth aspire.

2.

Ne suffereth it uncomely idlenesse  
In his free thought to build her sluggish nest,  
Ne suffereth it thought of ungentlenesse  
Ever to creepe into his noble brest;  
But to the highest and the worthiest

---

<sup>a</sup> *and reareth out of sownd.*] "Sownd" is one of the various old and arbitrary forms of *swoon*: here the rhyme required it. C.



Lifteth it up that els would lowly fall :  
It lettes not fall, it lettes it not to rest ;  
It lettes not scarfe this Prince to breath at all,  
But to his first pourfuit him forward ftill doth call.

## 3.

Who long time wandred through the forest wyde  
To finde some iffue thence ; till that at laft<sup>b</sup>  
He met a Dwarfe that seemed terrifyde  
With some late perill which he hardly pafte,  
Or other accident which him aghaft ;  
Of whom he asked, whence he lately came,  
And whether now he traveiled fo faft ?  
For fore he fwat, and, ronning through that fame  
Thicke forest, was becracht and both his feet nigh lame.

## 4.

Panting for breath, and almoft out of hart,  
The Dwarfe him answerd ; “ Sir, ill mote I ftay  
To tell the fame : I lately did depart  
From Faery court, where I have many a day  
Served a gentle Lady of great fway  
And high accompt through out all Elfin land,  
Who lately left the fame, and tooke this way.  
Her now I feeke ; and if ye underftand  
Which way ſhe fared hath, good Sir, tell out of hand.”

## 5.

“ What miſter wight,”<sup>c</sup> (faide he) “ and how arayd ? ”  
“ Royally clad ” (quoth he) “ in cloth of gold,  
As meeteſt may beſeeme a noble mayd :  
Her faire lockes in rich circlet be enrolde,  
A fayrer wight did never Sunne behold ;  
And on a Palfrey rydes more white then ſnow,  
Yet ſhe her ſelfe is whiter manifold.

<sup>b</sup> *till that at laſt.*] So the 4tos. 1590 and 1596. The folios read,  
“ till at the laſt.” CHURCH.

<sup>c</sup> *What miſter wight.*] What manner of perſon : ſee this vol. p. 9. C.



The surest signe, whereby ye may her know,  
Is that she is the fairest wight alive, I trow."

6.

"Now certes, swaine," (saide he) "such one, I weene,  
Fast flying through this forest from her fo,  
A foule ill-favoured foster, I have seene:  
Her selfe, well as I might, I reskewd tho,  
But could not stay, so fast she did foregoe,  
Carried away with wings of speedy feare."

"Ah, dearest God!" (quoth he) "that is great woe,  
And wondrous ruth to all that shall it heare:  
But can ye read, Sir, how I may her finde, or where?"

7.

"Perdy, me lever were to weeten that,"  
(Saide he) "then ransome of the richest knight,  
Or all the good that ever yet I gat:  
But froward fortune, and too forward Night,  
Such happinesse did, maugre, to me spight,  
And fro me rest both life and light attone.  
But, Dwarfes, aread what is that Lady bright  
That through this Forrest wandreth thus alone?  
For of her errour straunge I have great ruth and mone."

8.

"That Ladie is," (quoth he) "where so she bee,  
The bountiest virgin and most debonaire  
That ever living eye, I weene, did see.  
Lives none this day that may with her compare  
In stedfast chastitie and vertue rare,  
The goodly ornaments of beautie bright;  
And is ycleped Florimell the fayre,  
Faire Florimell belov'd of many a knight,  
Yet she loves none but one, that Marinell is hight.

9.

"A Sea-nymphes sonne, that Marinell is hight,  
Of my deare Dame is loved dearly well:



In other none, but him, she sets delight ;  
All her delight is set on Marinell,  
But he sets nought at all by Florimell ;  
For Ladies love his mother long ygoe  
Did him, they say, forwarne through sacred spell :  
But fame now flies, that of a forreine foe  
He is yslaine, which is the ground of all our woe.

10.

“ Five daies there be since he (they say) was slaine,  
And fowre since Florimell the Court forwent,  
And vowed never to returne againe,  
Till him alive or dead she did invent.  
Therefore, faire Sir, for love of knighthood gent,  
And honour of trew Ladies, if ye may  
By your good counsell, or bold hardiment,  
Or succour her, or me direct the way,  
Do one or other good, I you most humbly pray.

11.

“ So may ye gaine to you full great renowne  
Of all good Ladies through the worlde so wide,  
And haply in her hart finde highest rowme  
Of whom ye seeke to be most magnifide ;  
At least eternall meede shall you abide.”  
To whom the Prince : “ Dwarfe, comfort to thee take,  
For till thou tidings learne what her betide,  
I here avow thee never to forsake.  
Ill weares he armes, that nill them use for Ladies sake.

12.

So with the Dwarfe he back retourn'd againe,  
To seeke his Lady where he mote her finde ;  
But by the way he greatly gan complaine  
The want of his good Squire late left behinde,  
For whom he wondrous pensive grew in minde,  
For doubt of daunger which mote him betide ;  
For him he loved above all mankinde,



Having him trew and faithfull ever tride,  
And bold, as ever Squire that waited by knights side :

13.

Who all this while full hardly was assayd  
Of deadly daunger, which to him betidd ;  
For whiles his Lord purswd that noble Mayd,  
After that foster fowle he fiercely ridd  
To bene avenged of the shame he did  
To that faire Damzell: Him he chaced long  
Through the thicke woods wherein he would have hid  
His shamefull head from his avengement strong,  
And oft him threatned death for his outrageous wrong.

14.

Nathlesse the villen sped himselfe so well,  
Whether through swiftnesse of his speedie beast,<sup>d</sup>  
Or knowledge of those woods where he did dwell,  
That shortly he from daunger was releast,  
And out of fight escaped at the least :  
Yet not escaped from the dew reward  
Of his bad deedes, which daily he increast,  
Ne ceased not, till him oppressed hard  
The heavie plague that for such leachours is prepard.

15.

For soone as he was vanisht out of fight,  
His coward courage gan emboldned bee,  
And cast t'avenge him of that fowle despight  
Which he had borne of his bold enimee :  
Tho to his brethren came, for they were three  
Ungratious children of one gracelesse fyre,<sup>e</sup>  
And unto them complayned how that he

<sup>d</sup> *his speedie beast.*] The poet, I think, has forgot himself. See B. iii. C. i. St. 17, [this vol. p. 344.] CHURCH.

<sup>e</sup> *Tho to his brethren came, for they were three Ungratious children of one gracelesse fyre.*] Perhaps alluding to the threefold distinction of lustful desire, viz. the lust of the eye, the lust of the ear, and the lust of the flesh: "Mulier visa, audita, tacta." UPTON.



Had used beene of that foolehardie Squyre :  
So them with bitter words he stird to bloodie yre.

16.

Forthwith themselves with their sad instruments  
Of spoyle and murder they gan arme bylive,  
And with him foorth into the Forrest went  
To wreake the wrath, which he did earst revive  
In there sterne breasts, on him which late did drive  
Their brother to reproch and shamefull flight ;  
For they had vow'd that never he alive  
Out of that forest should escape their might :  
Vile rancour their rude harts had fild with such despight.

17.

Within that wood there was a covert glade,  
Foreby a narrow foord, to them well knowne,  
Through which it was uneath for wight to wade ;<sup>f</sup>  
And now by fortune it was overflowne.  
By that same way they knew that Squyre unknowne  
Mote algates passe : for thy themselves they set  
There in await with thicke woods overgrowne,  
And all the while their malice they did whet  
With cruell threats his passage through the ford to let.

18.

It fortun'd, as they devised had :  
The gentle Squyre came ryding that same way,  
Unweeting of their wile and treason bad,  
And through the ford to passen did assay ;  
But that fierce foster, which late fled away,  
Stoutly foorth stepping on the further shore,  
Him boldly bad his passage there to stay,  
Till he had made amends, and full restore  
For all the damage which he had him doen afore.

---

<sup>f</sup> *for wight to wade.*] Another proof of the facility with which old printers confounded the letters *w* and *m* : "wade" is *made* in the 4to. 1590, but not afterwards ; the mistake having been pointed out in the errata to that edition. C.



## 19.

With that at him a quiv'ring dart he threw,  
 With so fell force, and villenous despite,  
 That through his haberjeon the forkehead flew,  
 And through the linked mayles empierced quite,  
 But had no powre in his soft flesh to bite.  
 That stroke the hardy Squire did fore displease,  
 But more that him he could not come to smite;  
 For by no meanes the high banke he could sease,  
 But labour'd long in that deepe ford with vaine disease.

## 20.

And still the foster with his long bore-speare  
 Him kept from landing at his wished will.  
 Anone one sent out of the thicket neare  
 A cruell shaft, headed with deadly ill,  
 And fethered with an unlucky quill:  
 The wicked steele stayd not till it did light  
 In his left thigh, and deeply did it thrill.  
 Exceeding grieve that wound in him empight,  
 But more that with his foes he could not come to fight.

## 21.

At last, through wrath and vengeaunce making way,  
 He on the bancke arrayvd with mickle payne,  
 Where the third brother him did fore assay,  
 And drove at him with all his might and mayne  
 A forest-bill, which both his hands did strayne;  
 But warily he did avoide the blow,  
 And with his speare requited him agayne,  
 That both his sides were thrilled with the throw,  
 And a large streame of blood<sup>s</sup> out of the wound did flow.

---

<sup>s</sup> *And a large streame of blood.*] Nobody has remarked upon a discrepancy here between the old copies: in the 4to. 1590 the text is, "And a large streame of *flood*;" but *flood* is a manifest misprint for "blood," which is rightly adopted in later impressions. In St. 19, "no powre" is misprinted "*now* powre," in the first edition. C.



## 22.

He, tombling downe, with gnashing teeth did bite  
 The bitter earth, and bad to lett him in  
 Into the balefull house of endlesse night,  
 Where wicked ghosts doe waile their former fin.  
 Tho gan the battaile freshly to begin;  
 For nathemore for that spectacle bad  
 Did th' other two their cruell vengeaunce blin,<sup>h</sup>  
 But both attonce on both sides him bestad,  
 And load upon him layd his life for to have had.

## 23.

Tho when that villayn he aviz'd, which late  
 Affrighted had the fairest Florimell,  
 Full of fiers fury and indignant hate  
 To him he turned, and with rigor fell  
 Smote him so rudely on the Pannikell,<sup>i</sup>  
 That to the chin he cleft his head in twaine.  
 Downe on the ground his carkas groveling fell:  
 His sinfull fowle with desperate disdaine  
 Out of her fleshly ferme<sup>k</sup> fled to the place of paine.

## 24.

That seeing, now the only last of three  
 Who with that wicked shafte him wounded had,  
 Trembling with horror, as that did foresee  
 The fearefull end of his avengement fad,

<sup>h</sup> *their cruell vengeaunce blin.*] Church was for reading "blin" *lin*; and the meaning, if not the word, is the same, as many examples would establish: to "blin" and to *lin* are both to *cease*, or *finish*; the first being only *lin* with the ordinary prefix *be*, i. e. *belin*, or "blin." C.

<sup>i</sup> *on the Pannikell.*] The *brainpan*, the *skull*, the *crown of the head*. Ital. *pannicula*; Fr. *pannicule*. UPTON.

<sup>k</sup> *Out of her fleshly ferme.*] *Farm*; here perhaps in the sense of *lodging-house*: Sax. *feorm*, [or *fearm*,] *hospitium*. See Manning's edition of Lye's Saxon Dictionary, in v. *feorm*. Compare Cic. De Sen. xxiii. "Ex *vita* ita discedo, tanquam ex *hospitio*." TODD. We, probably, had "ferme" from the Fr. C.



Through which he follow should his brethren bad,  
His bootelesse bow in feeble hand upcaught,  
And therewith shott an arrow at the lad;  
Which fayntly fluttring scarce his helmet raught,  
And glauncing fel to ground, but him annoyed naught.

25.

With that he would have fled into the wood;  
But Timias him lightly overhent,  
Right as he entring was into the flood,  
And strooke at him with force so violent,  
That headlesse him into the foord he sent:  
The carcas with the streame was carried downe,  
But th' head fell backward on the Continent;  
So mischief fel upon the meaners crowne.  
They three be dead with shame, the Squire lives with  
renowne.

26.

He lives, but takes small joy of his renowne;  
For of that cruell wound he bled so fore,  
That from his steed he fell in deadly swowne:  
Yet still the blood forth gusht in so great store,  
That he lay wallowd all in his owne gore.  
Now God thee keepe, thou gentlest squire alive,  
Els shall thy loving Lord thee see no more;  
But both of comfort him thou shalt deprive,  
And eke thy selfe of honor which thou didst atchive.

27.

Providence heavenly passeth living thought,  
And doth for wretched mens reliefe make way;  
For loe! great grace or fortune thether brought  
Comfort to him that comfortlesse now lay.  
In those same woods ye well remember may  
How that a noble hunteresse did wonne,  
Shee, that base Braggadochio did affray,  
And made him fast out of the forest ronne;



[ Belphebe was her name, as faire as Phœbus sunne.<sup>1</sup>

28.

Shee on a day, as shee purfewd the chace  
 Of some wilde beaſt, which with her arrowes keene  
 She wounded had, the ſame along did trace  
 By tract of blood, which ſhe had freſhly ſeene  
 To have beſprinckled all the graſſy greene:  
 By the great perſue<sup>m</sup> which ſhe there perceav'd,  
 Well hoped ſhee the beaſt engor'd had beene,  
 And made more haſte the life to have bereav'd:  
 But ah! her expectation greatly was deceav'd.

29.

Shortly ſhe came whereas that woefull Squire,  
 With blood deformed, lay in deadly ſwound;  
 In whoſe faire eyes, like lamps of quenched fire,  
 The Chriſtall humor ſtood congealed rownd;  
 His locks, like faded leaves fallen to grownd,  
 Knotted with blood in bounces rudely ran;  
 And his ſweete lips, on which before that ſtownd  
 The bud of youth to bloſſome faire began,  
 Spoild of their roſy red were woxen pale and wan.

30.

Saw never living eie more heavy ſight,  
 That could have made a rocke of ſtone to rew,

<sup>1</sup> *as faire as Phœbus sunne.*] As Spenser is generally exact in making the rhyme catch the eye as well as the ear, I should have made no doubt that he gave "*as faire as Phœbus sonne*," though he had never spelt the word *son* in like manner elsewhere: but the reader must have observed that he writes *sonne* for *son* in a hundred places. The poet plainly means *Phaëton*. So, in *F. Q.* i. iv. 9 [vol. i. p. 229]:—

"Exceeding shone, like Phœbus *fayrest childe*." CHURCH.

The folio of 1679, Hughes, and Tonson's edition in 1758, have chosen to print it *sun*. But Mr. Church, I think, is right. TODD. It is "*funne*" in all the old copies. C.

<sup>m</sup> *By the great persue.*] "*Persue*" is evidently the *track* of the beast, and the word may be technical,—the great means of pursuit afforded by the blood of the animal. We know of no instance of the use of the word "*persue*" in the same way. C.



Or rive in twaine: which when that Lady bright,  
 Besides all hope, with melting eies did vew,  
 All fuddeinly abasht shee chaunged hew,  
 And with sterne horror backward gan to start;  
 But when shee better him beheld<sup>n</sup> shee grew  
 Full of soft passion and unwonted smart:  
 The point of pittie perced through her tender hart.

31.

Meekely shee bowed downe, to weete if life  
 Yett in his frosen members did remaine;  
 And, feeling by his pulses beating rife  
 That the weake fowle her feat did yett retaine,  
 Shee cast to comfort him with busy paine.  
 His double folded necke she reard upright,  
 And rubd his temples and each trembling vaine;  
 His mayled haberjeon she did undight,  
 And from his head his heavy burganet did light.

32.

Into the woods thenceforth in haste shee went,  
 To seeke for hearbes that mote him remedy;  
 For shee of herbes had great intendiment,<sup>o</sup>  
 Taught of the Nymphe which from her infancy  
 Her nourced had in trew Nobility:  
 There, whether yt divine Tobacco<sup>p</sup> were,

<sup>n</sup> *But when shee better him beheld.*] It is "*bitter* him beheld" in the 4to. 1590 only. The same easy misprint is met with in Shakespeare's "*Henry IV.*" Pt. 2. A. ii. Sc. 1. where "I have heard better news," stands "*bitter* news" in the 4tos. and folios. C.

<sup>o</sup> *bad great intendiment.*] Ital. *intendimento*; *intendment*, *understanding*. UPTON. Shakespeare and other authors sometimes use "*intendment*" for *intention*; but Spenser seems to take his etymology of "*intendiment*" from the Fr. *entendre*. C.

<sup>p</sup> *divine Tobacco.*] Tobacco was, at this time, but newly discovered to the English, and not an ordinary herb, as it is at present. Probably tobacco is here mentioned with so much honour, with intent to pay a compliment to Sir Walter Raleigh, our author's friend and patron, who first introduced and used tobacco in England in 1584. T. WARTON. The very clever, but unknown, author of the poem called "*The Meta-*



Or Panachæa, or Polygony,<sup>q</sup>  
 Shee fownd, and brought it to her patient deare,  
 Who al this while lay bleding out his hart-blood neare.

## 33.

The soveraine weede betwixt two marbles plaine  
 Shee pownded small, and did in peeces bruze;  
 And then atweene her lilly handes twaine  
 Into his wound the juice thereof did scruze;<sup>r</sup>  
 And round about, as she could well it uze,  
 The flesh therewith she suppled and did steepe,  
 T' abate all spafme, and soke the swelling bruze;  
 And, after having searcht the intuse deepe,  
 She with her scarf did bind the wound from cold to keepe.

## 34

By this he had sweet life recur'd agayne,  
 And, groning inly deepe, at last his eies,  
 His watry eies drizling like deawy rayne,  
 He up gan lifte toward the azure skies,  
 From whence descend all hopelesse remedies:  
 Therewith he sigh'd; and, turning him aside,  
 The goodly Maide, ful of divinities  
 And gifts of heavenly grace, he by him spide,  
 Her bow and gilden quiver lying him beside.

## 35.

“Mercy, deare Lord!” (saide he) “what grace is this  
 That thou hast shewed to me sinfull wight,  
 To send thine Angell from her bowre of blis

---

morphosis of Tobacco,” 4to. 1602, thus bursts out in praise of it:—

“The marrow of the world, starre of the West,  
 The pearle whereby this lower Orbe is blest;  
 The joy of mortals, umpire of all strife,  
 Delight of nature, Mithridate of life.”

It was as the “methridate of life” that Belphebe applied it to the Squire’s wounds. C.

<sup>q</sup> Or *Panachæa*, or *Polygony*.] *Panacea* is mentioned in the cure of Æneas, Virg. *Æn.* xii. 419. UPTON.

<sup>r</sup> *did scruze*.] *Squeeze*. See also *F. Q.* ii. xii. 56; this vol. p. 323. C.



To comfort me in my distressed plight.  
 Angell, or Goddesse doe I call thee right?  
 What service may I doe unto thee meete,  
 That hast from darkenes me returnd to light,  
 And with thy heavenly salves and med'cines sweete  
 Hast drest my sinfull wounds? I kisse thy blessed feete."

36.

Thereat she blushing said; "Ah! gentle Squire,  
 Nor Goddesse I, nor Angell; but the Mayd  
 And daughter of a woody Nymphe, desire  
 No service but thy safety and ayd;  
 Which if thou gaine, I shalbe well apayd.  
 Wee mortall wights, whose lives and fortunes bee  
 To commun accidents stil open layd,  
 Are bownd with commun bond of frailtee,  
 To succor wretched wights whom we captived see."

37.

By this her Damzells, which the former chace  
 Had undertaken after her, arrayv'd,  
 As did Belphebe,<sup>s</sup> in the bloody place,  
 And thereby deemd the beast had bene depriv'd  
 Of life, whom late their ladies arow ryv'd:  
 For thy the bloody tract they followd fast,  
 And every one to ronne the swiftest stryv'd;  
 But two of them the rest far overpast,  
 And where their Lady was arrived at the last.

38.

Where when they saw that goodly boy with blood  
 Defowled, and their Lady dresse his wovnd,  
 They wondred much; and shortly understood  
 How him in deadly cace theyr Lady fownd,  
 And reskewed out of the heavy stownd.

---

<sup>s</sup> *As did Belphebe.*] The sense would perhaps be clearer if we could read, "As *bad* Belphebe," i. e. as Belphebe had done before them, viz. arrived "in the bloody place." C.



Eftfoones his warlike courser, which was strayed  
 Farre in the woodes whiles that he lay in frownd,  
 She made those Damzels searce; which being stayd,  
 They did him set thereon, and forth with them conveyd.

39.

Into that forest farre they thence him led,  
 Where was their dwelling, in a pleasant glade  
 With mountaines rownd about environed,  
 And mightie woodes which did the valley shade;  
 And like a stately Theatre<sup>t</sup> it made  
 Spreading it selfe into a spacious plaine:  
 And in the midst a little river plaide  
 Emongst the pumy stones,<sup>u</sup> which seemd to plaine  
 With gentle murmure that his cours they did restraine.<sup>w</sup>

40.

Beside the same a dainty place there lay,  
 Planted with mirtle trees and laurells greene,  
 In which the birds song many a lovely lay  
 Of Gods high praise, and of their sweet loves teene,<sup>x</sup>  
 As it an earthly Paradize had beene:  
 In whose enclosed shadow there was pight  
 A faire Pavilion, scarcely to bee seene,  
 The which was al within most richly dight,  
 That greatest Princes liking<sup>y</sup> it mote well delight.

<sup>t</sup> *And like a stately Theatre.*] Compare Milton, "Par. Lost," B. iii. 141:—

"————— a woody theatre

"Of stateliest view ———." TODD.

<sup>u</sup> *Emongst the pumy stones.*] Meaning strictly *pumice* stones; but in "The Shep. Cal." for March (vol. i. p. 39) Spenser uses *pumies* for stones generally—"and oft the pumies latched." C.

<sup>w</sup> *his cours they did restraine.*] This is the reading of the second edition, and is evidently a correction of the error in the first, which reads, "*their* cours." TODD.

<sup>x</sup> *and of their sweet loves teene.*] "Teene" is, of course, *sorrow*. C.

<sup>y</sup> *That greatest Princes liking.*] It is "liking" in the 4to. 1590; but afterwards needlessly altered to *living*. C.



41.

Thether they brought that wounded Squyre, and layd  
 In easie couch his feeble limbes to rest.  
 He rested him awhile; and then the Mayd  
 His readie wound with better salves new drest:  
 Daily she dressed him, and did the best,  
 His grievous hurt to guarish,<sup>z</sup> that she might;  
 That shortly she his dolour hath redrest,  
 And his foule sore reduced to faire plight:  
 It she reduced, but himselfe destroyed quight.

42.

O foolish physick, and unfruitfull paine,  
 That heales up one, and makes another wound!  
 She his hurt thigh to him recurd againe,  
 But hurt his hart, the which before was sound,  
 Through an unwary dart, which did rebownd  
 From her faire eyes and gracious countenance.  
 What bootes it him from death to be unbownd,  
 To be captived in endlesse duraunce  
 Of sorrow and despeyre without aleggeaunce!<sup>a</sup>

43.

Still as his wound did gather, and grow hole,  
 So still his hart woxe fore, and health decayd:  
 Madnesse to save a part, and lose the whole!  
 Still whenas he beheld the heavenly Mayd,  
 Whiles dayly playsters to his wovnd she layd,  
 So still his Malady the more increast,  
 The whiles her matchlesse beautie him dismayd.  
 Ah God! what other could he do at least,  
 But love so fayre a Lady that his life releast?

44.

Long while he strove in his corageous brest  
 With reason dew the passion to subdew,

<sup>z</sup> *His grievous hurt to guarish.*] *Heal.* Fr. *guérir* CHURCH.

<sup>a</sup> *without alleggeaunce.*] *Alleviation.* See F. Q. iii. ii. 15, [this vol. p. 367;] and "Shep. Cal." March, ver. 5. [vol. i. p. 35.] TODD.



And love for to dislodge out of his nest :  
 Still when her excellencies he did vew,  
 Her soveraine bountie<sup>b</sup> and celestiall hew,  
 The same to love he strongly was constraynd ;  
 But when his meane estate he did review,  
 He from such hardy boldnesse was restraynd,  
 And of his lucklesse lott and cruell love thus playnd.

45.

“ Unthankfull wretch,” (saide he) “ is this the meed,  
 With which her soverain mercy thou doest quight?<sup>c</sup>  
 Thy life she saved by her gracious deed ;  
 But thou doest weene with villeinous despight  
 To blott her honour, and her heavenly light.  
 Dye ; rather dye, then so disloyally  
 Deeme of her high desert, or seeme so light :  
 Fayre death it is, to shonne more shame, to dy :  
 Dye ; rather dy, then ever love disloyally.

46.

“ But if to love disloyalty it bee,  
 Shall I then hate her that from deathes dore  
 Me brought ? ah, farre be such reproch fro mee !  
 What can I lesse doe then her love therefore,  
 Sith I her dew reward cannot restore ?  
 Dye ; rather dye, and dying doe her serve ;  
 Dying her serve, and living her adore ;  
 Thy life she gave, thy life she doth deserve :  
 Dye ; rather dye, then ever from her service swerve.

47.

“ But, foolish boy, what bootes thy service bace  
 To her to whom the heavens doe serve and sew ?

---

<sup>b</sup> *Her soveraine bountie.*] He did not view Belphebe's "bounty," but her *beauty*; and so, though we venture upon no alteration, we apprehend the poet wrote. In like manner, in "The Merry Wives of Windsor," (Shakesp. by Collier, edit. 1858, i. 182.) *bounty* is doubtless misprinted for *beauty*. The mistake was easy. C.

<sup>c</sup> *thou doest quight.*] i. e. *requite*: all the poets of that day used *quit* and *quite* in the same way. C.



Thou, a meane Squyre of meeke and lowly place ;  
She, heavenly borne and of celestiaall hew.  
How then ? of all love taketh equall vew ;  
And doth not highest God vouchsafe to take  
The love and service of the basest crew ?  
If she will not ; dye meekly for her sake :  
Dye ; rather dye, then ever so faire love forsake !”

48.

Thus warreid he long time against his will ;  
Till that through weaknesse he was forst at last  
To yield himselfe unto the mightie ill,  
Which, as a victour proud, gan ranfack fast  
His inward partes, and all his entrayles wast,  
That neither blood in face nor life in hart  
It left, but both did quite drye up and blast ;  
As percing levin, which the inner part  
Of every thing consumes, and calcineth by art.

49.

Which seeing fayre Belphebe gan to feare,  
Least that his wound were inly well not heald,  
Or that the wicked steele empoysned were :  
Litle shee weend that love he close conceald.  
Yet still he wasted, as the snow congeald  
When the bright sunne his beams theron doth beat :  
Yet never he his hart to her reveald ;  
But rather chose to dye for sorow great,  
Then with dishonorable termes her to entreat.

50.

She, gracious Lady, yet no paines did spare  
To doe him ease, or doe him remedy.  
Many Restoratives of vertues rare,  
And costly Cordialles she did apply,  
To mitigate his stubborne malady :  
But that sweet Cordiall, which can restore  
A love-sick hart, she did to him envy ;



To him, and to all<sup>d</sup> th' unworthy world forlore  
She did envy that soveraine salve in secret store.

51.

That daintie Rose, the daughter of her Morne,  
More deare then life she tendered, whose flowre  
The girland of her honour did adorne:  
Ne suffred she the Middayes scorching powre,  
Ne the sharp Northerne wind thereon to showre;  
But lapped up her filken leaves most chayre,<sup>e</sup>  
When so the froward skye began to lowre;  
But, soone as calmed was the cristall ayre,  
She did it fayre dispred and let to florish fayre.<sup>f</sup>

52.

Eternall God, in his almightie powre,  
To make ensample of his heavenly grace,  
In Paradize whylome did plant this flowre;  
Whence he it fetcht out of her native place,  
And did in stocke of earthly flesh enrace,<sup>g</sup>  
That mortall men her glory should admyre.  
In gentle Ladies breste, and bounteous race  
Of woman kind, it, fayrest Flowre, doth spyre,  
And beareth fruit of honour and all chaste desyre.

53.

Fayre ympes of beautie, whose bright shining beames  
Adorne the world with like to heavenly light,  
And to your willes both royalties and Reames  
Subdew, through conquest of your wondrous might,

<sup>d</sup> *To him, and to all.*] So the first and second editions read. The rest omit the second *to*. Todd.

<sup>e</sup> *her filken leaves most chayre.*] Our best dictionaries do not contain this word; but *chary* is still in constant use in different parts of England. "Chayre," like *chary*, must be from the Fr. *cher*, *dear*. C.

<sup>f</sup> *and let to florish fayre.*] Todd tells us that the folio 1611 reads, "and let *it* florish fayre." This is a mistake. C.

<sup>g</sup> *And did in stocke of earthly flesh enrace.*] So all impressions, which we follow; but Drayton, in his folio 1611, tells us to read *encase*, which may be right, and, possibly, what the poet wrote. C.



With this fayre flowre your goodly girlonds dight  
 Of chastity and vertue virginall,  
 That shall embellish more your beautie bright,  
 And crowne your heades with heavenly coronall,  
 Such as the Angels were before Gods tribunall !

54.

To your faire selves<sup>b</sup> a faire ensample frame  
 Of this faire virgin, this Belphebe fayre ;  
 To whom, in perfect love and spotlesse fame  
 Of chastitie, none living may compayre :  
 Ne poyfnous Envy justly can empayre  
 The prayse of her fresh flowring Maydenhead ;  
 For thy she standeth on the highest stayre  
 Of th' honorable stage of womanhead,  
 That Ladies all may follow her ensample dead.

55.

In so great prayse of stedfast chastity  
 Nathlesse she was so courteous and kynde,  
 Tempred with grace and goodly modesty,  
 That seemed those two vertues strove to fynd  
 The higher place in her Heroick mynd :  
 So striving each did other more augment,  
 And both encreast the prayse of woman kynde,  
 And both encreast her beautie excellent :  
 So all did make in her a perfect complement.

---

<sup>b</sup> *To your faire selves.*] The poet recommends to the ladies the example of his Virgin Queen. Drayton, in the first edition of his "*Maidilda*," 1594, has thus introduced a similar compliment to Elizabeth, including in it a compliment also to the commendation which had been bestowed by Spenser :—

"And thou, O *Beta*, Soueraigne of his thought,  
 "*Englands Diana*, let him thinke on thee ;  
 "BY THY PERFECTIONS let his Muse be taught,  
 "And in his breast so deepe imprinted be,  
 "That he may write of SACRED CHASTITIE :  
 "Though not like *Collin in thy Britomart*,  
 "Yet loues as much, although he wants *his arte*." TODD.





## CANTO VI.

*The birth of fayre Belphebe and  
Of Amorett is told :  
The Gardins of Adonis fraught  
With pleasures manifold.*

1.



ELL may I weene, faire Ladies, all this  
while

Ye wonder how this noble Damozell  
So great perfections did in her compile,  
Sith that in salvage forests she did dwell,

So farre from court and royall Citadell,  
The great schoolmaistresse of all courtesy :  
Seemeth that such wilde woodes should far expell  
All civile usage and gentility,  
And gentle sprite deforme with rude rusticity.

2.

But to this faire Belphebe in her berth  
The heavens so favorable were and free,  
Looking with myld aspect upon the earth  
In th' Horoscope of her nativitee,  
That all the gifts of grace and chastitee  
On her they poured forth of plenteous horne :  
Jove laught on Venus from his soverayne see,  
And Phœbus with faire beames did her adorne,  
And all the Graces rockt her cradle being borne.



3.

Her berth was of the wombe of Morning dew,<sup>a</sup>  
 And her conception of the joyous Prime;  
 And all her whole creation did her shew  
 Pure and unspotted from all loathly crime  
 That is ingenerate in fleshly slime.  
 So was this virgin borne, so was she bred;  
 So was she trayned up from time to time  
 In all chaste vertue and true bounti-hed,  
 Till to her dew perfection she were ripened.<sup>b</sup>

4.

Her mother was the faire Chryfogonee,  
 The daughter of Amphisa, who by race  
 A Faerie was, yborne of high degree.  
 She bore Belphœbe; she bore in like cace  
 Fayre Amoretta in the second place:  
 These two were twinnes, and twixt them two did share  
 The heritage of all celestiall grace;  
 That all the rest it seemd they robbed bare  
 Of bounty, and of beautie, and all vertues rare.

5.

It were a goodly storie to declare  
 By what straunge accident faire Chryfogone  
 Conceiv'd these infants, and how them she bare<sup>c</sup>  
 In this wilde forrest wandring all alone,  
 After she had nine moneths fulfilled and gone:  
 For not as other wemens commune brood  
 They were enwombed in the sacred throne  
 Of her chaste bodie; nor with commune food,  
 As other wemens babes, they sucked vitall blood:

---

<sup>a</sup> *Her berth was of the wombe of Morning dew.*] Alluding to Ps. cx.  
 3. "The dew of thy birth is of the womb of the morning." UPTON.  
<sup>b</sup> *she were ripened.*] So the first edition reads: the rest [less correctly] read, "*was ripened.*" TODD.  
<sup>c</sup> *and how them she bare.*] There can be no doubt, as the rhyme shows, that "bare" is right: it is *bore* in the 4to. 1590 alone. C.



## 6.

But wondrously they were begot and bred  
Through influence of th' hevens fruitfull ray,  
As it in antique bookes is mentioned.  
It was upon a Sommers shinie day,  
When Titan faire his beames did display,<sup>d</sup>  
In a fresh fountaine, far from all mens vew,  
She bath'd her brest the boyling heat t'allay;  
She bath'd with roses red and violets blew,  
And all the sweetest flowers that in the forrest grew:

## 7.

Till faint through yrkesome wearines, adowne  
Upon the grassy ground her selfe she layd  
To sleepe, the whiles a gentle flombring fwowne  
Upon her fell, all naked bare displayd.  
The sunbeames bright upon her body playd,  
Being through former bathing mollifide,  
And pierst into her wombe; where they embayd  
With so sweet fence and secret powre unspide,  
That in her pregnant flesh they shortly fructifide.

## 8.

Miraculous may seeme to him that reades  
So straunge ensample of conception;  
But reason teacheth that the fruitfull seades  
Of all things living, through impression  
Of the sunbeames in moyst complexion,  
Doe life conceive and quickned are by kynd:  
So, after Nilus inundation,  
Infinite shapes of creatures men doe fynd  
Informed in the mud on which the Sunne hath shynd.

---

<sup>d</sup> *his beames did display.*] Here the folios, not attending to the poet's custom of making *beames*, *armes*, &c. frequently dissyllables, have printed, under the supposition of amendment,

“When Titan faire his *hot beames* did display.” Todd.



9.

Great father he of generation  
 Is rightly cald, th' authour of life and light;  
 And his faire sifter for creation  
 Minist'reth matter fit, which, tempred right  
 With heate and humour, breeds the living wight.  
 So sprong these twinnes in womb of Chryfogone;  
 Yet wist she nought thereof, but fore affright,  
 Wondred to see her belly so upblowne,  
 Which still increast till she her terme had full outgone.

10.

Whereof conceiving shame and foule disgrace,  
 Albe her guiltlesse conscience her cleard,  
 She fled into the wildernesse a space,  
 Till that unweeldy burden she had reard,  
 And shund dishonor which as death she feard:  
 Where, wearie of long traveill, downe to rest  
 Her selfe she set, and comfortably cheard:  
 There a sad cloud of sleepe her overkeft,  
 And seized every sence with sorrow sore opprest.

11.

It fortun'd, faire Venus having lost  
 Her little sonne, the winged god of love,  
 Who, for some light displeasure which him crost,  
 Was from her fled as flit as ayery Dove,  
 And left her blisfull bowre of joy above:  
 (So from her often he had fled away,  
 When she for ought him sharpely did reprove,  
 And wandred in the world in straunge aray,  
 Disguiz'd in thousand shapes, that none might him be-  
 wray.)

12.

Him for to seeke,\* she left her heavenly hous,

---

\* *Him for to seeke, &c.*] In what Spenser here says of Venus seeking her son, some things are taken from the *Ἔρως δραπετής* of Moschus.



The house of goodly formes and faire aspects,  
Whence all the world derives the glorious  
Features of beautie,<sup>f</sup> and all shapes select,  
With which high God his workmanship hath deckt;  
And searched everie way through which his wings  
Had borne him, or his tract she mote detect:  
She promist kisses sweet, and sweeter things,  
Unto the man that of him tydings to her brings.

13.

First she him sought in Court, where most he us'd  
Whylome to haunt, but there she found him not;  
But many there she found which sore accus'd  
His falshood, and with fowle infamous blot  
His cruell deedes and wicked wyles did spot:  
Ladies and Lordes she every where mote heare  
Complayning, how with his empoyfined shot  
Their wofull harts he wounded had whyleare,  
And so had left them languishing twixt hope and feare.

14.

She then the Cities sought from gate to gate,  
And everie one did aske, did he him see?  
And everie one her answerd, that too late  
He had him seene, and felt the crueltee  
Of his sharpe dartes and whot artilleree:  
And every one threw forth reproches rife  
Of his mischievous deedes, and sayd, That hee  
Was the disturber of all civill life,  
The enemy of peace, and authour of all strife.

15.

Then in the countrey she abroad him sought,

---

JORTIN. This story of Venus losing her son, her seeking him, and the promises made to those who would discover him, Spenser might also have taken from the "Aminta" of Tasso. UPTON.

<sup>f</sup> *Features of beautie.*] So the first edition reads rightly. The rest have conformed to the second edition, *beauties*. TODD.



And in the rurall cottages inquir'd ;  
 Where also many plaintes to her were brought,  
 How he their heedelesse harts with love had fir'd,  
 And his false venim through their veines inspir'd :  
 And eke the gentle Shepheard fwaynes, which sat  
 Keeping their fleecy flockes as they were hyr'd,  
 She sweetly heard complaine, both how and what  
 Her sonne had to them doen ; yet she did smile thereat.

16.

But when in none of all these she him got,  
 She gan avize where els he mote him hyde :  
 At last she her bethought that she had not  
 Yet fought the salvage woods and forests wyde,  
 In which full many lovely Nymphes abyde ;  
 Mongst whom might be that he did closely lye,  
 Or that the love of some of them him tyde :  
 For thy she thether cast her course t' apply,  
 To search the secreet haunts of Dianes company.

17.

Shortly unto the wastefull woods she came,  
 Whereas she found the Goddesse with her crew,  
 After late chace of their embrewed game,<sup>g</sup>  
 Sitting beside a fountaine in a rew ;<sup>h</sup>  
 Some of them washing with the liquid dew  
 From of their dainty limbs the dusty sweate  
 And soyle, which did deforme their lively hew ;  
 Others lay shaded from the scorching heat ;  
 The rest upon her person gave attendance great.

---

<sup>g</sup> *their embrewed game.*] Their game *wet with blood*. UPTON.

<sup>h</sup> *in a rew.*] In a *row*. See also St. 35. Thus Gower, fol. ix :—

“First than, my ordre longeth to

“The vices for to tell on *rewe*.” UPTON.

Gower also uses *row* when it suits his rhyme, and so do Spenser and other poets. “Rew” is the old form ; A. S. *ræwa*. C.



18.

She, having hong upon a bough on high  
Her bow and painted quiver, had unlaste  
Her silver buskins from her nimble thigh,  
And her lanck loynes ungirt, and breasts unbraſte,  
After her heat the breathing cold to taſte :  
Her golden lockes, that late in treſſes bright  
Embreaded were for hindring of her haſte,  
Now looſe about her ſhoulders hong undight,  
And were with ſweet Ambroſia all beſprinckled light.

19.

Soone as ſhe Venus ſaw behinde her backe,  
She was aſham'd to be ſo looſe ſurpriz'd ;  
And woxe halfe wroth againſt her damzels ſlacke,  
That had not her thereof before aviz'd,  
But ſuffred her ſo careleſſly diſguiz'd  
Be overtaken. Soone her garments looſe  
Upgath'ring, in her boſome ſhe compriz'd  
Well as ſhe might, and to the Goddeſſe roſe ;  
Whiles all her Nymphes did like a girlond her encloſe.

20.

Goodly ſhe gan faire Cytherea greet,  
And ſhortly aſked her, what cauſe her brought  
Into that wilderneſſe for her unmeet,  
From her ſweete bowres, and beds with pleaſures  
fraught ?  
That ſuddein chaung ſhe ſtraung adventure thought.  
To whom halfe weeping ſhe thus answered ;  
That ſhe her deareſt ſonne Cupido fought,  
Who in his frowardnes from her was fled,  
That ſhe repented fore to have him angered.

21.

Thereat Diana gan to ſmile, in ſcorne  
Of her vaine playnt, and to her ſcoffing ſayd :  
“ Great pittie ſure that ye be ſo forlorne



Of your gay sonne, that gives ye so good ayd  
To your disports: ill mote ye bene apayd."  
But she was more engrieved, and replide;  
"Faire sister, ill beseemes it to upbrayd  
A dolefull heart with so disdainfull pride:  
The like that mine may be your paine another tide.

22.

"As you in woods and wanton wildernesse  
Your glory sett to chace the salvage beasts,  
So my delight is all in joyfulness,  
In beds, in bowres, in banckets, and in feasts:  
And ill becomes you, with your lofty creasts,  
To scorne the joy that Jove is glad to seeke:  
We both are bownd to follow heavens behests,  
And tend our charges with obeisance meeke.  
Spare, gentle sister, with reproch my paine to eeke;

23.

"And tell me, if that ye my sonne have heard  
To lurke emongst your Nymphes in secret wize,  
Or keepe their cabins? much I am affeard  
Least he like one of them him selfe disguise,  
And turne his arrowes to their exercise.  
So may he long him selfe full easie hide;  
For he is faire and fresh in face and guise  
As any Nimphe; (let not it be envide.)"  
So saying, every Nymph full narrowly she eide.

24.

But Phœbe therewith fore was angered,  
And sharply saide: "Goe, Dame; goe, seeke your  
boy,  
Where you him lately lefte, in Mars his bed:  
He comes not here; we scorne his foolish joy,  
Ne lend we leifure to his idle toy:  
But if I catch him in this company,  
By Stygian lake I vow, whose sad annoy



The Gods doe dread, he dearly shall abyē:<sup>i</sup>  
 Ile clip his wanton wings, that he no more shall flye."

25.

Whom whenas Venus saw so fore displeas'd,  
 Shee inly fory was, and gan relent  
 What shee had said: so her shee soone appeas'd  
 With sugred words and gentle blandishment,  
 From which a fountaine from her sweete lips went.<sup>k</sup>  
 And welled goodly forth, that in short space  
 She was well pleas'd, and forth her damzells sent  
 Through all the woods, to search from place to place,  
 If any tract of him or tidings they mote trace.

26.

To search the God of love her Nymphes she sent  
 Throughout the wandring forest every where:  
 And after them her selfe eke with her went  
 To seeke the fugitive both farre and nere.<sup>l</sup>  
 So long they fought, till they arrived were  
 In that same shady covert whereas lay  
 Faire Cryfogonē in flombry traunce whilere;  
 Who in her sleepe (a wondrous thing to say)  
 Unwares had borne two babes, as faire as springing day.

27.

Unwares she them conceivd, unwares she bore:

<sup>i</sup> *he dearly shall abyē.*] He shall suffer for it, shall pay dearly. TODD.

<sup>k</sup> *From which a fountaine from her sweete lips went.*] The line is perfectly intelligible and strictly grammatical; and so it stands in both the editions published in the lifetime of the poet. The text was afterwards altered in the folios to "*Which as a fountaine,*" &c. but quite needlessly. If we introduced any change, we should prefer Church's suggestion, "*Of which a fountaine,*" &c. strengthened as it is by the expression, "*Of which a storehouse did with her remaine,*" in F. Q. B. ii. C. vi. St. 6; this vol. p. 175. C.

<sup>l</sup> *To seeke the fugitive both farre and nere.*] In the first edition the hemistich "*both farre and nere*" is wanting. It is found in the poet's second edition, and has been admitted into the text of nearly every subsequent edition. TODD. The words wanting are so easily supplied, that it seems strange that they were ever omitted. C.



She bore withouten paine, that she conceiv'd  
 Withouten pleasure; ne her need implore  
 Lucinaes aide: which when they both perceiv'd,  
 They were through wonder nigh of sence berev'd,  
 And gazing each on other nought bespake.  
 At last they both agreed her, seeming griev'd,  
 Out of her heavie swowne not to awake  
 But from her loving side the tender babes to take.

28.

Up they them tooke; each one a babe uptooke,  
 And with them carried to be fostered.  
 Dame Phœbe to a Nympe her babe betooke  
 To be upbrought in perfect Maydenhed,  
 And, of her selfe, her name Belphebe red:  
 But Venus hers thence<sup>m</sup> far away convayd,  
 To be upbrought in goodly womanhed;  
 And, in her litle loves stead, which was strayed,  
 Her Amoretta cald, to comfort her dismayd.

29.

Shee brought her to her joyous Paradize,  
 Wher most she wonnes when she on earth does dwell;  
 So faire a place as Nature can devize:  
 Whether in Paphos, or Cytheron hill,  
 Or it in Gnidus bee,<sup>n</sup> I wote not well;  
 But well I wote by triall, that this fame  
 All other pleasaunt places doth excell,  
 And called is by her lost lovers name,  
 The Gardin of Adonis, far renownd by fame.

30.

In that same Gardin<sup>o</sup> all the goodly flowres,

<sup>m</sup> *But Venus hers thence.*] So the first edition reads; much better than several subsequent editions, *hence*. UPTON.

<sup>n</sup> *Or it in Gnidus bee.*] It is *Gnidas* in the 4to. 1590, but "Gnidus" in all editions afterwards. C.

<sup>o</sup> *In that same Gardin.*] Spenser has placed Cupid and Psyche in this



Wherewith dame Nature doth her beautify,  
 And decks the girlonds of her Paramoures,  
 Are fetcht: there is the first feminary  
 Of all things that are borne to live and dye,  
 According to their kynds. Long worke it were  
 Here to account the endlesse progeny  
 Of all the weeds that bud and blossome there;  
 But so much as doth need must needs be counted here.

31.

It fited was in fruitfull soyle of old,  
 And girt in with two walls on either side;  
 The one of yron, the other of bright gold,  
 That none might thorough breake, nor overstride:  
 And double gates it had which opened wide,  
 By which both in and out men moten pas;  
 Th' one faire and fresh, the other old and dride.  
 Old Genius the porter of them was,  
 Old Genius, the which a double nature has.

32.

He letteth in, he letteth out to wend  
 All that to come into the world desire.  
 A thousand thousand naked babes attend  
 About him day and night, which doe require  
 That he with fleshly weeds would them attire:  
 Such as him list, such as eternall fate  
 Ordained hath, he clothes with sinfull mire,  
 And sendeth forth to live in mortall state,  
 Till they agayn retorne backe by the hinder gate.

---

garden, where they live together, "in stedfast love, and happy state," St. 50. But Apuleius represents this happy state of Cupid and Psyche to have commenced after their reception into heaven. However, their offspring *Pleasure* is authorised by Apuleius. "Sic ecce *Psyche* venit in manum *Cupidinis*; et nascitur illis maturo partu filia quam *Voluptatem* nominamus," Met. i. 6. Spenser has made *Pleasure* the daughter of Cupid in another poem: speaking to that deity, "Hymne to Love,"  
 "There with thy daughter PLEASURE they do play  
 "Their hurtlesse sports." T. WARTON.



## 33.

After that they againe retourned beene,  
 They in that Gardin planted bee agayne,  
 And grow afresh, as they had never seene  
 Fleshly corruption, nor mortall payne.  
 Some thousand yeares so doen they there remayne,  
 And then of him are clad with other hew,  
 Or sent into the chaungefull world agayne,  
 Till thether they retourne where first they grew :  
 So, like a wheele, arownd they ronne from old to new.

## 34.

Ne needs there Gardiner to sett or sow,  
 To plant or prune ; for of their owne accord  
 All things, as they created were, doe grow,  
 And yet remember well the mighty word  
 Which first was spoken by th' Almighty Lord,  
 That bad them to increase and multiply :  
 Ne doe they need with water of the ford,  
 Or of the clouds, to moysten their roots dry ;  
 For in themselves eternall moisture they imply.<sup>p</sup>

## 35.

Infinite shapes of creatures there are bred,  
 And uncouth formes, which none yet ever knew :  
 And every fort is in a fondry bed  
 Sett by it selfe, and ranckt in comely rew ;  
 Some fitt for reasonable fowles t' indew ;<sup>q</sup>  
 Some made for beasts, some made for birds to weare ;  
 And all the fruitfull spawne of fishes hew  
 In endlesse rancks along enraunged were,  
 That seemd the Ocean could not containe them there.

---

<sup>p</sup> *eternall moisture they imply.*] *Wrap up* ; that is, they contain in themselves eternal moisture. Lat. *implico*. CHURCH.

<sup>q</sup> *reasonable fowles t' indew.*] Lat. *induere*, to put on, to be clothed with. See also C. viii. St. 40, of this book. CHURCH.



36.

Daily they grow, and daily forth are sent  
 Into the world, it to replenish more;  
 Yet is the stocke not lessened nor spent,  
 But still remaines in everlasting store,  
 As it at first created was of yore:  
 For in the wide wombe of the world there lyes,  
 In hatefull darknes and in deepe horrore,  
 An huge eternall Chaos, which supplyes  
 The substaunces of natures fruitfull progenyes.

37.

All things from thence doe their first being fetch,  
 And borrow matter whereof they are made;  
 Which, whenas forme and feature it does ketch,  
 Becomes a body, and doth then invade<sup>r</sup>  
 The state of life out of the grieved shade.  
 That substance is eterne, and bideth so;  
 Ne when the life decayes and forme does fade,  
 Doth it consume and into nothing goe,  
 But chaunged is, and often altred to and froe.

38.

The substance is not chaungd nor altered,  
 But th' only forme and outward fashion;  
 For every substance is conditioned  
 To chaunge her hew, and sondry formes to don,  
 Meet for her temper and complexion:  
 For formes are variable, and decay  
 By course of kinde and by occasion;  
 And that faire flowre of beautie fades away,  
 As doth the lilly fresh before the sunny ray.

39.

Great enemy to it, and to all the rest<sup>s</sup>

<sup>r</sup> *and doth then invade.*] Go into. Lat. *invado*. CHURCH.

<sup>s</sup> *and to all the rest.*] Todd says that subsequent editions reject "to;" and it is surplusage both as regards meaning and metre. C.



That in the Gardin of Adonis springs,  
 Is wicked Tyme; who with his scyth addrest  
 Does mow the flowring herbes and goodly things,  
 And all their glory to the ground downe flings,  
 Where they do wither, and are fowly mard:  
 He flyes about, and with his flaggy winges  
 Beates downe both leaves and buds without regard,  
 Ne ever pittie may relent his malice hard.

40.

Yet pittie often did the gods relent,  
 To see so faire thinges mard and spoiled quight;  
 And their great mother Venus did lament  
 The losse of her deare brood, her deare delight:  
 Her hart was pierst with pittie at the sight,  
 When walking through the Gardin them she saw,<sup>t</sup>  
 Yet no'te she find redresse for such despight:  
 For all that lives is subject to that law;  
 All things decay in time, and to their end doe draw.

41.

But were it not that Time their troubler is,  
 All that in this delightfull Gardin growes  
 Should happy bee, and have immortall blis:  
 For here all plenty and all pleasure flowes;  
 And sweete love gentle fitts emongst them throwes,  
 Without fell rancor or fond gealofy.  
 Franckly each Paramor his leman knowes,  
 Each bird his mate; ne any does envy  
 Their goodly meriment and gay felicity.

42.

There is continuall Spring, and harvest there<sup>u</sup>

<sup>t</sup> *them she saw.*] That this must have been what Spenser wrote the rhyme establishes; but all old editions read *spyde* for "saw." It is not impossible that the two corresponding lines originally ended with *tide* and *slide*; but being afterwards altered, "spyde" was forgotten. C.

<sup>u</sup> *There is continuall Spring, and harvest there.*] Among other poets,



Continuall, both meeting at one tyme ;  
 For both the boughes doe laughing blossoms beare,  
 And with fresh colours decke the wanton Pryme,  
 And eke attonce the heavenly trees they clyme,<sup>\*</sup>  
 Which seeme to labour under their fruites lode :  
 The whiles the joyous birdes make their pastyme  
 Emongst the shady leaves, their sweet abode,  
 And their trew loves without suspition tell abroad.

43.

Right in the middest of that Paradise  
 There stood a stately Mount, on whose round top  
 A gloomy grove of mirtle trees did rise,  
 Whose shady boughes sharp Steele did never lop,  
 Nor wicked beastes their tender buds did crop,  
 But like a girland compassed the hight ;  
 And from their fruitfull fydes sweet gum did drop,  
 That all the ground, with pretious deaw bedight,  
 Threw forth most dainty odours and most sweet delight.

44.

And in the thickest covert of that shade  
 There was a pleasaunt Arber, not by art  
 But of the trees owne inclination made,  
 Which knitting their rancke braunches, part to part,

which Spenser consulted in adorning these gardens of Adonis, he did not forget Claudian, "*De Nupt. Hon. et Mariæ*," where there is a description of the garden of Venus :—

" ——— *Æterni patet indulgentia veris :*

" *In campum se fundit apex ———*

" *Vivunt in Venerem frondes, omnisque vicissim*

" *Felix arbor amat.*" UPTON.

<sup>\*</sup> *the heavenly trees they clyme.*] The epithet "heavenly" of the first edit. is *heavy* in subsequent impressions, reminding us of the misprint of *heavenly* for "heavily" in "*Much Ado*," &c. A. v. Sc. 4. (edit. Collier, 1858, vol. ii. p. 81.) In Spenser we feel bound to treat *heavy* as an error; the meaning being that the *lofty* or *heavenward* aspiring trees were loaded with fruit. There is no information in the errata to the 4to. 1590 that "heavenly" is wrong; and we think that it may be right. C.



With wanton yvie twine entrayld athwart,<sup>y</sup>  
 And Eglantine and Caprifole emong,  
 Fashiond above within their inmost part,  
 That nether Phœbus beams could through them throng,  
 Nor Aeolus sharp blast could worke them any wrong.

45.

And all about grew every sort of flowre,  
 To which sad lovers were transformde of yore;  
 Fresh Hyacinthus, Phœbus paramoure  
 And dearest love;<sup>z</sup>  
 Foolish Narcisse, that likes the watry shore;  
 Sad Amaranthus, made a flowre but late,  
 Sad Amaranthus, in whose purple gore  
 Me seemes I see Amintas wretched fate,<sup>a</sup>  
 To whom sweet Poets verse hath given endlesse date.

46.

There wont fayre Venus often to enjoy  
 Her deare Adonis joyous company,  
 And reape sweet pleasure of the wanton boy:  
 There yet, some say, in secret he does ly,  
 Lapped in flowres and pretious spycery,

<sup>y</sup> *entrayld athwart.*] *Twisted* athwart. See the note on *entrayld*, F. Q. iii. xi. 46. TODD.

<sup>z</sup> *And dearest love.*] In Spenser's own editions this hemistich is wanting. It is first found in the folio of 1609; of which edition he who had the care seems to have met with some additions and alterations which, as Mr. Upton observes, could come from no other hand but Spenser's. TODD. It is also in the folio 1611, where Drayton placed a cross in his margin; but what he meant to indicate by it, beyond the imperfectness of the line, does not appear. C.

<sup>a</sup> *Amintas wretched fate.*] The wretched fate of *Amintas*. Some [modern] editions incorrectly read "*Aminta's* wretched fate." *Amintas* here perhaps means Sir Philip Sidney, as Mr. Upton also conjectures; for all the poets lamented his untimely death; and, I may add, he is described by Spenser, in his Elegy on his death, as *one of those lovers who were of yore transformed to flowers*. Mr. Church thinks "*Amin-tas*" is designed for "Tho. Watson, who wrote a Latin poem called '*Amintas*.'" But T. Watson's poem is "*Amintæ GAUDIA*," a pastoral love-poem; and Spenser's allusion is to mournful exequies. TODD.



By her hid from the world, and from the skill  
Of Stygian Gods, which doe her love envy ;  
But she her selfe, when ever that she will,  
Possesseth him, and of his sweetnesse takes her fill.

47.

And sooth, it seemes, they say ; for he may not  
For ever dye, and ever buried bee  
In balefull night where all thinges are forgot :  
All be he subject to mortalitie,  
Yet is eterne in mutabilitie,  
And by succession made perpetuall,  
Transformed oft, and chaunged diverslie ;  
For him the Father of all formes they call :  
Therefore needs mote he live, that living gives to all.

48.

There now he liveth in eternall blis,  
Joying his goddesse, and of her enjoyd ;  
Ne feareth he henceforth that foe of his,  
Which with his cruell tuske him deadly cloyd :<sup>b</sup>  
For that wilde Bore, the which him once annoyd,  
She firmly hath emprisoned for ay,  
That her sweet love his malice mote avoyd,  
In a strong rocky Cave, which is, they say,  
Hewen underneath that Mount, that none him losen may.

49.

There now he lives in everlasting joy,  
With many of the Gods in company  
Which thether haunt, and with the winged boy,  
Sporting him selfe in safe felicity :

---

<sup>b</sup> *him deadly cloyd.*] “Cloyd” is a term used among farriers when a horse is pricked with a nail in shoeing. See Kersey’s Dict. [Fr. *clouer*.] CHURCH. It seems to be connected with *clouted*, which Richardson says means *wounded* in this passage of the Bible, edit. 1551, “I wasted them, and so *clouted* them that they coulde not aryse, but fell under my feet.” In our ordinary version “clouted” is *wounded*. C.



Who when he hath with spoiles and cruelty  
 Ranfackt the world, and in the wofull harts  
 Of many wretches fet his triumphes hye,  
 Thether refortes, and, laying his sad dartes  
 Afyde, with faire Adonis playes his wanton partes.

50.

And his trew love faire Pfyche with him playes,  
 Fayre Pfyche to him lately reconcyld,  
 After long troubles and unmeet upbrayes,<sup>c</sup>  
 With which his mother Venus her revyld,  
 And eke himfelfe her cruelly exyld :  
 But now in stedfast love and happy ftate  
 She with him lives, and hath him borne a chyld,  
 Pleasure,<sup>d</sup> that doth both gods and men aggrate,  
 Pleasure, the daughter of Cupid and Pfyche late.

51.

Hether great Venus brought this infant fayre,  
 The yonger daughter of Chryfogonee,  
 And unto Pfyche with great trust and care  
 Committed her, yfoftered to bee  
 And trained up in trew feminitee :  
 Who no leffe carefully her tendered  
 Then her owne daughter Pleasure, to whom shee  
 Made her companion, and her leffoned  
 In all the lore of love, and goodly womanhead.

52.

In which when she to perfect ripenes grew,

<sup>c</sup> *and unmeet upbrayes.*] Spenser uses "upbrayes" for *upbraidings*, in which he was imitated by Henry More, both requiring the word for a rhyme. "Upbray" as a verb, and "upbrayes" as a substantive, have, we believe, been found in no other writers. C.

<sup>d</sup> *She with him lives, and hath him borne a chyld, Pleasure, &c.*] The allegory is, that true pleasure is the genuine offspring of the Soul, when inspired with true love. Both the fable and allegory of Pfyche and Cupid are mentioned by Fulgentius, "Mythol." L. iii. C. vi. UPTON.



Of grace and beautie noble Paragone,  
She brought her forth into the worldes vew,  
To be th' ensample of true love alone,  
And Lodestarre of all chaste affection  
To all fayre Ladies that doe live on grownd.  
To Faery court she came; where many one  
Admyrd her goodly haveour, and fownd  
His feeble hart wide launched<sup>e</sup> with loves cruel wownd.

53.

But she to none of them her love did cast,  
Save to the noble knight Sir Scudamore,  
To whom her loving hart she linked fast  
In faithfull love, t' abide for evermore;  
And for his dearest sake endured sore  
Sore trouble of an hainous enemy,  
Who her would forced have to have forlore  
Her former love and stedfast loialty,  
As ye may elsewhere reade<sup>f</sup> that ruefull history.

54.

But well I weene, ye first desire to learne  
What end unto that fearefull Damozell,  
Which fledd so fast from that same foster stearne  
Whom with his brethren Timias flew, befell:  
That was, to weet, the goodly Florimell;  
Who wandring for to seeke her lover deare,  
Her lover deare, her dearest Marinell,  
Into misfortune fell, as ye did heare,  
And from Prince Arthure fled with wings of idle feare.

---

<sup>e</sup> *His feeble hart wide launched.*] In the 4to. 1590, "launched" is *launch*; and in the folios it is altered to *launced*. It is evident, if from the measure only, that the terminating syllable of "launched" had fallen out in the press. C.

<sup>f</sup> *As ye may elsewhere reade.*] See F. Q. iii. xi. and xii. UPTON.





## CANTO VII.

*The witches sonne loves Florimell :  
 She flyes ; he faines to dy.  
 Satyrane saves the Squyre of Dames  
 From Gyaunts tyranny.<sup>a</sup>*

I.



LIKE as an Hynd forth singled from the  
 heard,  
 That hath escaped from a ravenous  
 beast,  
 Yet flyes away of her owne feete afeard,  
 And every leafe, that shaketh with the least  
 Murmure of winde, her terror hath encreast ;  
 So fledd fayre Florimell from her vaine feare,  
 Long after she from perill was releast :  
 Each shade she saw, and each noyse she did heare,<sup>b</sup>  
 Did seeme to be the same which she escapt whileare.

2.

All that same evening she in flying spent,  
 And all that night her course continewd ;  
 Ne did she let dull sleepe once to relent,  
 Nor wearinesse to slack her hast, but fled

<sup>a</sup> *From Gyaunts tyranny.*] Misprinted in the 4to. 1590, "From Gynunt, tyranny." "From Gyaunt tyranny" might be right. C.

<sup>b</sup> *she did heare.*] The first edition erroneously reads "*he* did heare." Todd. All the later old impressions correct the blunder. C.



Ever alike, as if her former dred  
 Were hard behind, her ready to arrest;  
 And her white Palfrey, having conquered  
 The maistring raines out of her weary wrest,  
 Perforce her carried where ever he thought best.

## 3.

So long as breath and hable puissaunce  
 Did native corage unto him supply,  
 His pace he freshly forward did advaunce,  
 And carried her beyond all jeopardy;  
 But nought that wanteth rest can long aby:  
 He, having through incessant traveill spent  
 His force, at last perforce adowne did ly,  
 Ne foot could further move. The Lady gent  
 Thereat was suddein strook with great astonishment;

## 4.

And, forst t' alight, on foot mote algates fare  
 A traveiler unwonted to such way:  
 Need teacheth her this lesson hard and rare,  
 That fortune all in equall launce<sup>c</sup> doth sway,  
 And mortall miseries doth make her play.  
 So long she traveild, till at length she came  
 To an hilles side, which did to her bewray  
 A litle valley subject to the same,  
 All coverd with thick woodes that quite it overcame.

## 5.

Through the tops of the high trees she did descry  
 A litle smoke, whose vapour thin and light  
 Reeking aloft uprolled to the sky:

---

<sup>c</sup> *in equall launce.*] In equal *balance*. So Tasso, C. xx. 50:—

“Così si combatteva, e in dubbia *lance*

“Col timor le speranze eran sospese.”

From the Lat. *lanx*. Todd. Spenser's “launce,” i. e. *lanx*, is the dish or receiver hung at each end of the beam of a pair of scales: *balance* probably is *bis*, or *bi-lanx*. C.



Which chearefull signe did fend unto her sight  
 That in the same did wonne some living wight.  
 Eftsoones her steps she thereunto applyd,  
 And came at last in weary wretched plight  
 Unto the place, to which her hope did guyde,  
 To finde some refuge there, and rest her wearie fyde.

6.

There in a gloomy hollow glen she found  
 A little cottage, built of stickes and reedes  
 In homely wize, and wald with fods around ;  
 In which a witch did dwell, in loathly weedes  
 And wilfull want, all carelesse of her needes ;  
 So choosing solitarie to abide  
 Far from all neighbours, that her diuelish deedes  
 And hellish arts from people she might hide,  
 And hurt far off unknowne whom ever she envide.

7.

The Damzell there arriving entred in ;  
 Where sitting on the flore the Hag she found  
 Busie (as seem'd) about some wicked gin :<sup>d</sup>  
 Who, soone as she beheld that suddein stound,  
 Lightly upstart from the dustie ground,  
 And with fell looke and hollow deadly gaze  
 Stared on her awhile, as one astound,  
 Ne had one word to speake for great amaze,  
 But shewd by outward signes that dread her sence did  
 daze.

8.

At last, turning her feare to foolish wrath,  
 She askt, what devill had her thether brought,  
 And who she was, and what unwonted path

---

<sup>d</sup> *about some wicked gin.*] *Contrivance, snare*, abbreviated from *engine* ; commonly used in Spenser's time. See Barret's Dict. 1580, in v. A GINNE OR ENGINE, and the following illustration, " Hangeth his *ginnes*, casses suspendit aranea, Virgil. *Telas infidiosas textit.*" TODD.



Had guided her, unwelcomed, unfought?  
 To which the Damzell, full of doubtfull thought,  
 Her mildly answer'd: "Beldame, be not wroth  
 With filly Virgin, by adventure brought  
 Unto your dwelling, ignorant and loth,  
 That crave but rowme to rest while tempest overblo'th."

## 9.

With that adowne out of her christall eyne  
 Few trickling teares she softly forth let fall,  
 That like to orient perles<sup>e</sup> did purely shyne  
 Upon her snowy cheeke; and therewithall  
 She fighed soft, that none so bestiall  
 Nor salvage hart, but ruth of her sad plight  
 Would make to melt, or pitteously appall;  
 And that vile Hag, all were her whole delight  
 In mischief, was much moved at so pitteous sight;

## 10.

And gan recomfort her in her rude wyfe,  
 With womanish compassion of her plaint,  
 Wiping the teares from her suffused eyes,  
 And bidding her sit downe, to rest her faint  
 And wearie limbs awhile. She, nothing quaint<sup>f</sup>  
 Nor 'sdeignfull of so homely fashion,  
 Sith brought she was now to so hard constraint,  
 Sate downe upon the dusty ground anon;  
 As glad of that small rest as Bird of tempest gon.

## 11.

Tho gan she gather up her garments rent,

<sup>e</sup> *That like to orient perles.*] All editions, except Hughes's, read, "like *two* orient perles," which probably is not as Spenser gave it. CHURCH. We are convinced that Spenser wrote "to," and not *two*. C.

<sup>f</sup> *She, nothing quaint.*] Nothing *nice*, or *curious*. The word occurs in "The Shep. Cal." for October, vol. i. p. 119, as an epithet to Bellona, where E. K. interprets it *strange*, which may be taken as its sense there. It means that Florimell was not *strange*, *dainty*, or *squeamish* in taking her seat on "the dusty ground." C.



And her loose lockes to dight in order dew  
 With golden wreath and gorgeous ornament;  
 Whom such whenas the wicked Hag did vew,  
 She was astonisht at her heavenly hew,  
 And doubted her to deeme an earthly wight,  
 But or some Goddesse, or of Dianes crew,  
 And thought her to adore with humble spright:  
 T'adore thing so divine as beauty were but right.

12.

This wicked woman had a wicked sonne,  
 The comfort of her age and weary dayes,  
 A laefy loord,<sup>g</sup> for nothing good to donne,  
 But stretched forth in ydlenesse alwayes;  
 Ne ever cast his mind to covet prayse,  
 Or ply himselfe to any honest trade,  
 But all the day before the sunny rayes  
 He us'd to slug, or sleepe in slothfull shade:  
 Such laefinesse both lewd and poore attonce him made.

13.

He, comming home at undertime,<sup>h</sup> there found  
 The fayrest creature that he ever saw  
 Sitting beside his mother on the ground;  
 The sight whereof did greatly him adaw,  
 And his base thought with terrour and with aw  
 So inly smot, that as one, which hath gaz'd<sup>i</sup>

<sup>g</sup> *A laefy loord.*] We have the same epithet and noun in "The Shep. Cal." for July, vol. i. p. 81; and E. K.'s explanation of "loord" occurs on p. 89. It means the opposite of *lord*, which has been derived from words which signify high-born: "loord" is low-born, a degraded, worthless man. Some have derived it from the Fr. *lourd*. C.

<sup>h</sup> *He, comming home at undertime.*] "Undertime" would seem here to mean *meal-time*. Tyrwhitt truly says that *undern* was the third hour of the day, viz. 9 o'clock, A.M. and he was inclined to think that *undermele* in Chaucer was after dinner. *Under*, in A. S. means dinner, supper, or indeed any meal. Spenser's "lazy loord" came home in time to eat: that seems what is intended. C.

<sup>i</sup> *which hath gaz'd.*] So Spenser's own editions, of 1590 and 1596: the folios read, "*had* gaz'd." TODD.



On the bright Sunne unwares, doth foone withdraw  
His feeble eyne, with too much brightnes daz'd,  
So stared he on her, and stood long while amaz'd.

14.

Softly at last he gan his mother aske,  
What mister wight<sup>k</sup> that was, and whence deriv'd,  
That in so straunge disguizement therè did maske,  
And by what accident she there arriv'd?  
But she, as one nigh of her wits depriv'd,  
With nought but ghastly lookes him answered;  
Like to a ghost, that lately is reviv'd  
From Stygian shores where late it wandered:  
So both at her, and each at other wondered.

15.

But the fayre Virgin was so meeke and myld,  
That she to them vouchsafed to embrace  
Her goodly port, and to their senses vyld<sup>l</sup>  
Her gentle speach applyde, that in short space  
She grew familiare in that desert place.  
During which time the Chorle, through her so kind  
And courteise use, conceiv'd affection bace,  
And cast to love her in his brutish mind:  
No love, but brutish lust, that was so beastly tind.<sup>m</sup>

16.

Closely the wicked flame his bowels brent,  
And shortly grew into outrageous fire;

<sup>k</sup> *What mister wight.*] What *kind* of creature. Spenser often uses this expression. So, in *F. Q.* iv. xii. 22. "What *mister* malady," i. e. what *kind* of disease. Fr. *métier*; Ital. *mestiere*; à Lat. *ministerium*. UPTON. See also this vol. p. 9. C.

<sup>l</sup> *and to their senses vyld.*] i. e. *vile*: Spenser spells this word *vile*, or *vyle* (St. 19), excepting when he requires it otherwise for the rhyme. The *d* seems to have been introduced when *vile* was followed by another word beginning with a vowel. See also St. 17. C.

<sup>m</sup> *that was so beastly tind.*] "Tind" is *excited*, or *kindled*. We have had the verb already in St. 11 of C. viii. of the preceding book; this vol. p. 219. C.



Yet had he not the hart, nor hardiment,  
 As unto her to utter his desire;  
 His caytive thought durst not so high aspire:  
 But with soft sighes and lovely semblaunces<sup>n</sup>  
 He ween'd that his affection entire  
 She should aread; many resembraunces  
 To her he made, and many kinde remembraunces.

17.

Oft from the forrest wildings he did bring,<sup>o</sup>  
 Whose sides empurpled were with smyling red;  
 And oft young birds, which he had taught to sing,  
 His maiestresse praises sweetly caroled:  
 Girlands of flowres sometimes for her faire hed  
 He fine would dight; sometimes the squirrel wild  
 He brought to her in bands, as conquered  
 To be her thrall, his fellow-servant vild:  
 All which she of him tooke with countenance meeke  
 and mild.

18.

But, past a while, when she fit season saw  
 To leave that desert mansion, she cast  
 In secret wize herselfe thence to withdraw,  
 For feare of mischief, which she did forecast  
 Might by the witch or by her sonne compast.<sup>p</sup>  
 Her wearie Palfrey, closely as she might,  
 Now well recovered after long repast,  
 In his proud furnitures she freshly dight,  
 His late miswandred wayes now to remeasure right.

<sup>n</sup> *and lovely semblaunces.*] Spenser not unfrequently uses "lovely" for *loving*, as in this instance. C.

<sup>o</sup> *Oft from the forrest wildings he did bring.*] Oft he brought wildings; "Sylvestri ex arbore lecta aurea mala," Virg. Ecl. iii. 70. UPTON.

<sup>p</sup> *Might by the witch or by her sonne compast.*] The verb *be* seems understood in this line, which we give from the 4to. 1590; for the reading of the second and later impressions can hardly be right,

"Might be the witch, or that her sonne compast." C.



19.

And earely, ere the dawning day appear'd,  
 She forth issued, and on her journey went :  
 She went in perill, of each noyse affeard,  
 And of each shade that did it selfe present ;  
 For still she feared to be overhent  
 Of that vile hag, or her uncivile sonne ;<sup>q</sup>  
 Who when, too late awaking, well they kent  
 That their fayre guest was gone, they both begonne  
 To make exceeding mone, as they had beene undonne.

20.

But that lewd lover did the most lament  
 For her depart, that ever man did heare :  
 He knockt his brest with desperate intent,  
 And scratcht his face, and with his teeth did teare  
 His rugged flesh, and rent his ragged heare ;  
 That his fad mother, seeing his sore plight,  
 Was greatly woe begon, and gan to feare  
 Least his fraile senses were emperisht quight,  
 And love to frenzy turnd, fith love is franticke hight.

21.

All wayes shee fought him to restore to plight,  
 With herbs, with charms, with counsel, and with teares ;  
 But tears, nor charms, nor herbs, nor counsell, might  
 Asswage the fury which his entrails teares :  
 So strong is passion that no reason heares.  
 Tho, when all other helps she saw to faile,  
 She turnd her selfe backe to her wicked leares ;<sup>r</sup>  
 And by her divelish arts thought to prevaile  
 To bring her backe againe, or worke her finall bale.

<sup>q</sup> or *her uncivile sonne.*] So Spenser's own editions read. The rest read, "or *that* uncivile sonne." TODD.

<sup>r</sup> to *her wicked leares.*] "Leares" are *lessons*. So *leared*, or *lered*, is *learned*. TODD. From the A. S. *læran*: Germ. *lernen*. C.



## 22.

Eftefoones out of her hidden cave she cald  
 An hideous beast of horrible aspect,  
 That could the stoutest corage have appald;  
 Monstrous, mishapt, and all his backe was spect  
 With thousand spots of colours queint elect,<sup>s</sup>  
 Thereto so swifte that it all beasts did pas:  
 Like never yet did living eie detect;  
 But likest it to an Hyena was,  
 That feeds on wemens flesh as others feede on gras.

## 23.

It forth she cald, and gave it streight in charge  
 Through thicke and thin her to pursue apace,  
 Ne once to stay to rest, or breath at large,  
 Till her hee had attained<sup>t</sup> and brought in place,  
 Or quite devourd her beauties scornfull grace.  
 The Monster, swifte as word that from her went,  
 Went forth in haste, and did her footing trace  
 So sure and swiftly, through his perfect sent  
 And passing speede, that shortly he her overhent.<sup>u</sup>

## 24.

Whom when the fearefull Damzell nigh espide,  
 No need to bid her fast away to flie:  
 That ugly shape so sore her terrifide,  
 That it she shund no lesse then dread to die;  
 And her flitt palfrey did so well apply  
 His nimble feet to her conceived feare,

<sup>s</sup> of colours queint elect.] Quaintly, or strangely chosen; motley.  
 UPTON. See note to St. 10 of this canto. C.

<sup>t</sup> Till her hee had attained.] It is "Till her *she* had attained" in the 4to. 1590: above, Spenser represents the monster as of the neuter gender, "It forth she cald;" but in the last line but one of this stanza it is of the male sex, "through *his* perfect sent." In later impressions the text is what we have given. C.

<sup>u</sup> shortly he her overhent.] i. e. overtook: to hent, or hint, is to take. The word has occurred in the same sense in St. 19. C.



That whilest his breath did strength to him supply,  
 From perill free he her away did beare ;  
 But when his force gan faile his pace gan wex areare.

25.

Which whenas she perceiv'd, she was dismayd  
 At that same last extremity ful fore,  
 And of her safety greatly grew afrayd.  
 And now she gan approach to the sea shore,  
 As it befell, that she could flie no more,  
 But yield herselfe to spoile of greedinesse :  
 Lightly she leaped, as a wight forlore,  
 From her dull horse, in desperate distresse,  
 And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sickernes.<sup>x</sup>

26.

Not halfe so fast the wicked Myrrha fled  
 From dread of her revenging fathers hond ;  
 Nor halfe so fast to save her maydenhed  
 Fled fearefull Daphne on th' Ægean strond,  
 As Florimell fled from that Monster yond,<sup>y</sup>  
 To reach the sea ere she of him were raught :<sup>z</sup>  
 For in the sea to drowne herselfe she fond,  
 Rather then of the tyrant to be caught :

Thereto fear gave her wings, and need her corage taught.

27.

It fortun'd (high God did so ordaine)

<sup>x</sup> *And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sickernes.*] That is, she committed her safety, which was then doubtful, to the care of her feet. CHURCH. Sicker is the same as *secure*: "sickernes," therefore, is *security*; a word Spenser has used in C. iv. St. 27 of this book. Sicker, and sickernes were formerly common in our language. C.

<sup>y</sup> *from that Monster yond.*] Respecting "yond," see this vol. p. 321: it here means *outrageous*, perhaps *beyond* nature. C.

<sup>z</sup> *To reach the sea ere she of him were raught.*] Ere she of him, or by him, were *reached*. We have before had "raught" as the past tense of to reach: this vol. pp. 126, 143. "She fond," in the next line, is probably to be understood as she *found* it better, or preferable. Upton took it to mean "she found in her heart." C.



As shee arrived on the roring shore,  
 In minde to leape into the mighty maine,  
 A little bote lay hoving her before,  
 In which there slept a fisher old and pore,  
 The whiles his nets were drying on the sand.  
 Into the same shee lept, and with the ore  
 Did thrust the shallop from the floting strand :  
 So safety fownd at sea which she fownd not at land.

28.

The Monster, ready on the pray to fease,  
 Was of his forward hope deceived quight ;  
 Ne durst assay to wade the perlous seas,  
 But greedily long gaping at the sight,  
 At last in vaine was forst to turne his flight,  
 And tell the idle tidings to his Dame :  
 Yet, to avenge his divelish despight,  
 He sett upon her Palfrey tired lame,  
 And slew him cruelly ere any reskew came.

29.

And, after having him embowelled<sup>a</sup>  
 To fill his hellish gorge, it chaunst a knight  
 To passe that way, as forth he traveiled :  
 Yt was a goodly Swaine, and of great might,  
 As ever man that bloody field did fight ;  
 But in vain sheows, that wont yong knights bewitch,  
 And courtly services, tooke no delight ;  
 But rather joyd to bee then seemen fisch,  
 For both to be and seeme to him was labor lich.<sup>b</sup>

---

<sup>a</sup> *And, after having him embowelled.*] “ Embowelled ” here means *disembowelled*, or more properly, perhaps, *disbowelled* ; as in “ Henry IV.” Pt. i. A. v. Sc. 4. Spenser also uses it, later in his poem, B. vi. C. viii. St. 15, for plunged, or buried, in the bowels :—

“ Or deepe emboweld in the earth entire.” C.

<sup>b</sup> *to him was labor lich.*] Labour alike, or equal. “ Lich ” is an old form of *like* : A. S. *lic* ; Germ. *leich*, and *gleich*. C.



30.

It was to weete the good Sir Satyrane,  
 That raungd abroad to seeke adventures wilde,  
 As was his wont, in forest and in plaine :  
 He was all armd in rugged steele unfiled,  
 As in the smoky forge it was compilde,  
 And in his Scutchin bore a Satyres hedd.  
 He comming present, where the Monster vilde  
 Upon that milke-white Palfreyes carcas fedd,  
 Unto his reskew ran, and greedily him spedd.

31.

There well perceivd he that it was the horse  
 Whereon faire Florimell was wont to ride,  
 That of that feend was rent without remorse :  
 Much feared he least ought did ill betide  
 To that faire Maide, the flowre of wemens pride ;  
 For her he dearely loved, and in all  
 His famous conquests highly magnifide :  
 Besides, her golden girdle, which did fall  
 From her in flight, he fownd, that did him fore apall.

32.

Full of sad feare and doubtfull agony  
 Fiercely he flew upon that wicked feend,  
 And with huge strokes and cruell battery  
 Him forst to leave his pray, for to attend  
 Him selfe from deadly daunger to defend :  
 Full many wounds in his corrupted flesh  
 He did engrave, and muchell blood did spend,<sup>c</sup>  
 Yet might not doe him die ; but aie more fresh  
 And fierce he still appeard, the more he did him thresh.

---

<sup>c</sup> *and muchell blood did spend.*] That is, *much* blood. See the note on *muchell*, F. Q. i. iv. 46, [vol. i. p. 242.] The second and third folios, as Mr. Church has noticed, have converted this Saxon adjective into "*much ill* blood." TODD. It stands "*muchell* blood" in the folios 1609 and 1611, (the first and second,) which are the latest authorities, among the old copies, worth consulting. C.



33.

He wist not how him to despoile of life,  
 Ne how to win the wished victory,  
 Sith him he saw still stronger grow through strife,  
 And him selfe weaker through infirmity.  
 Greatly he grew enrag'd, and furiously  
 Hurling his sword away he lightly lept  
 Upon the beast, that with great cruelty  
 Rored and raged to be underkept;  
 Yet he perforce him held, and strokes upon him hept.

34.

As he that strives to stop a suddein flood,  
 And in strong bancks his violence enclose,  
 Forceth it swell above his wonted mood,  
 And largely overflow the fruitfull plaine,  
 That all the countrey seemes to be a Maine,  
 And the rich furrowes flote, all quite fordonne:  
 The wofull husbandman doth lowd complaine  
 To see his whole yeares labor lost so soone,  
 For which to God he made so many an idle boone.<sup>d</sup>

35.

So him he held, and did through might amate.  
 So long he held him, and him bett so long,  
 That at the last his fierceness gan abate,  
 And meekely stoup unto the victor strong:  
 Who, to avenge the implacable wrong  
 Which he supposed donne to Florimell,  
 Sought by all meanes his dolor to prolong,  
 Sith dint of steele his carcas could not quell;  
 His maker with her charmes had framed him so well.

36.

The golden ribband, which that virgin wore

---

<sup>d</sup> *so many an idle boone.*] "Boone" seems here employed in the sense of prayer. A. S. *bene, petition*. The various editors offer no note, and the passage is not cited in our dictionaries. C.



About her slender waste, he tooke in hand,  
 And with it bownd the beast, that lowd did rore  
 For great despight of that unwonted band,  
 Yet dared not his victor to withstand,  
 But trembled like a lambe fled from the pray :<sup>e</sup>  
 And all the way him followd on the strand,  
 As he had long bene learned to obay ;  
 Yet never learned he such service till that day.

37.

Thus as he led the Beast along the way,  
 He spide far off a mighty Giauntesse  
 Fast flying, on a Courser dapled gray,  
 From a bold knight that with great hardinesse  
 Her hard pursewd, and fought for to suppressse.  
 She bore before her lap a dolefull Squire,  
 Lying athwart her horse in great distresse,  
 Fast bounden hand and foote with cords of wire,  
 Whom she did meane to make the thrall of her desire.

38.

Which whenas Satyrane beheld, in haste  
 He lefte his captive Beast at liberty,  
 And crost the nearest way, by which he cast  
 Her to encounter ere she passed by ;  
 But she the way shund nathemore for thy,  
 But forward gallopt fast ; which when he spyde,  
 His mighty speare he couched warily,  
 And at her ran : she, having him descryde,  
 Her selfe to fight addrest, and threw her lode aside.

39.

Like as a Goshauke, that in foote doth beare  
 A trembling Culver, having spide on hight  
 An Eagle that with plumy wings doth sheare

---

<sup>e</sup> *fled from the pray.*] From the *pray*, i.e. from some wild beast which would have made a prey of her : *præda* for *prædator*. UPTON.



The subtile ayre stouping with all his might,  
 The quarry throwes to ground with fell despight,  
 And to the batteill doth her selfe prepare :  
 So ran the Geaunteffe unto the fight ;  
 Her fyrie eyes with furious sparkes did stare,  
 And with blasphemous bannes high God in peeces tare.

40.

She caught in hand an huge great yron mace,  
 Wherewith she many had of life depriv'd ;  
 But, ere the stroke could seize his aymed place,  
 His speare amidst her sun-brode shield arriv'd :  
 Yet nathemore the steele asonder riv'd,  
 All were the beame in bignes like a mast,  
 Ne her out of the stedfast sadle driv'd ;  
 But, glauncing on the tempred metall, braft  
 In thousand shivers, and so forth beside her past.

41.

Her Steed did stagger with that puissaunt strooke ;  
 But she no more was moved with that might  
 Then it had lighted on an aged Oke,  
 Or on the marble Pillour that is pight  
 Upon the top of Mount Olympus hight,<sup>f</sup>

---

<sup>f</sup> *Upon the top of Mount Olympus hight.*] A strange mistake to think that the Olympic games were performed upon the top of mount Olympus. JORTIN. It is hardly conceivable that Spenser should have made such a blunder ; but mistakes of the printer, by transposing his lines, we have more than once met with : and I am persuaded that the poet wrote thus :—

“ on an aged oke  
 “ Upon the top of mount Olympus hight ;  
 “ Or on the marble pillour that is pight  
 “ For the brave, &c.” CHURCH.

I never yet saw any romance-writer but supposed the Olympic games celebrated on mount Olympus. Sir W. Raleigh, therefore, says, “ These Olympian games took their name, not from the mountain Olympus, but from the city Olympia, otherwise Pisa, near unto Elis.” “ History of the World,” p. 490. UPTON. Upton does not state what edit. of Raleigh’s “ History ” he used, but the passage is not found on either p. 490 in the original folio of 1614. C.



For the brave youthly Champions to assay  
 With burning charet wheelles it nigh to smite;  
 But who that smites it mars his joyous play,  
 And is the spectacle of ruinous decay.

42.

Yet, therewith fore enrag'd, with sterne regard  
 Her dreadfull weapon she to him addrest,  
 Which on his helmet martelled so hard<sup>s</sup>  
 That made him low incline his lofty crest,  
 And bowd his battred visour to his brest:  
 Wherewith he was so stund that he n'ote ryde,  
 But reeled to and fro from east to west.  
 Which when his cruell enemy espyde,  
 She lightly unto him adjoynd fyde to fyde;

43.

And, on his collar laying puiffaunt hand,  
 Out of his wavering feat him pluckt perforce,  
 Perforce him pluckt, unable to withstand  
 Or helpe himfelfe; and laying thwart her horse,  
 In loathly wise like to a carrion corse,  
 She bore him fast away. Which when the knight  
 That her pursewed saw, with great remorse  
 He nere was touched<sup>h</sup> in his noble spright,  
 And gan encrease his speed as she encreast her flight.

44.

Whom when as nigh approaching she espyde,  
 She threw away her burden angrily;  
 For she list not the batteill to abide,  
 But made her selfe more light away to fly:  
 Yet her the hardy knight pursewd so nye

---

<sup>s</sup> *martelled so hard.*] *Hammered.* From Ariosto, C. xlvi. 131. "E sopra gli *martella*." UPTON. Spenser alone uses the word in English, as far as has yet been ascertained. C.

<sup>h</sup> *He nere was touched.*] It is misprinted in the first edition only, "He *were* was touched;" and in St. 42, "*she* was so *stuned*." C.



That almost in the backe he oft her strake;  
 But still, when him at hand she did espy,  
 She turnd, and semblaunce of faire fight did make,  
 But, when he stayd, to flight againe she did her take.

45.

By this the good Sir Satyrane gan wake  
 Out of his dreame that did him long entraunce,  
 And, seeing none in place, he gan to make  
 Exceeding mone, and curst that cruell chaunce  
 Which reft from him so faire a chevisaunce.<sup>i</sup>  
 At length he spyde whereas that wofull Squire,  
 Whom he had reskewed from captivaunce  
 Of his strong foe, lay tumbled in the myre,  
 Unable to arise, or foot or hand to styre.

46.

To whom approching, well he mote perceive  
 In that fowle plight a comely personage  
 And lovely face, made fit for to deceive  
 Fraile Ladies hart with loves consuming rage,  
 Now in the blossome of his freshest age.  
 He reard him up and loofd his yron bands,  
 And after gan inquire his parentage,  
 And how he fell into the Gyaunts hands,<sup>k</sup>  
 And who that was which chaced her along the lands.

47.

Then trembling yet through feare the Squire bespake:  
 "That Geaunteffe Argante is behight,  
 A daughter of the Titans which did make  
 Warre against heven, and heaped hils on hight  
 To scale the skyes and put Jove from his right:

---

<sup>i</sup> *Which reft from him so faire a chevisaunce.*] So the poet's own editions read: all the rest read, "Which reft *him from* so faire, &c." TODD. "Chevisaunce" is, of course, *enterprise*: this vol. p. 241. C.  
<sup>k</sup> *into the Gyaunts hands.*] So the 4to, 1590: later impressions read, "into *that* Gyaunts hands." C.



Her fyre Typhoeus was; who, mad through merth,  
 And dronke with blood of men flaine by his might,  
 Through incest her of his owne mother Earth  
 Whylome begot, being but halfe twin of that berth :

48.

“ For at that berth another Babe she bore ;  
 To weet, the mightie Ollyphant, that wrought  
 Great wreake to many errant knights of yore,  
 Till him Chylde Thopas to confusion brought.<sup>1</sup>  
 These twinnes, men say, (a thing far passing thought)  
 Whiles in their mothers wombe enclofd they were,  
 Ere they into the lightfom world were brought,  
 In fleshly lust were mingled both yfere,  
 And in that monstrous wise did to the world appere.

49.

“ So liv'd they ever after in like fin,  
 Gainst natures law and good behaveoure ;  
 But greatest shame was to that maiden twin,  
 Who, not content so fowly to devoure  
 Her native flesh and staine her brothers bowre,  
 Did wallow in all other fleshly myre,  
 And suffred beastes her body to deflowre,  
 So whot she burned in that lustfull fyre ;  
 Yet all that might not flake her sensuall desyre :

50.

“ But over all the countrie she did raunge  
 To seeke young men to quench her flaming thrust,  
 And feed her fancy with delightfull chaunge :  
 Whom so she fittest findes to serve her lust,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Till him Chylde Thopas to confusion brought.*] This is the line in the 4to. 1590; but later editions have, “ And many hath to foule confusion brought.” Church did not think the emendation Spenser's, and we see no adequate reason for a change not at all noted among the errata of the first impression. C.



Through her maine strength, in which she most doth  
 trust,  
 She with her bringes into a secret Ile,  
 Where in eternall bondage dye he must,  
 Or be the vassall of her pleasures vile,  
 And in all shamefull fort him selfe with her defile.

## 51.

“ Me, feely wretch, she so at vauntage caught,  
 After she long in waite for me did lye,  
 And meant unto her prison to have brought,  
 Her lothsom pleasure there to satisfye;  
 That thousand deathes me lever were to dye  
 Then breake the vow that to faire Columbell  
 I plighted have, and yet keepe stedfastly.  
 As for my name, it mistreth not to tell:<sup>m</sup>  
 Call me the Squyre of Dames; that me beseemeth well.

## 52.

“ But that bold knight, whom ye pursuing saw  
 That Geaunteffe, is not such as she seemd,  
 But a faire virgin that in martiall law  
 And deedes of armes above all Dames is deemd,  
 And above many knightes is eke esteemd  
 For her great worth: She Palladine is hight.  
 She you from death, you me from dread, redeemd;  
 Ne any may that Monster match in fight,  
 But she, or such as she, that is so chaste a wight.”

## 53.

“ Her well beseemes that Quest,” (quoth Satyrane)  
 “ But read, thou Squyre of Dames, what vow is this,  
 Which thou upon thy selfe hast lately ta’ne?”  
 “ That shall I you recount,” (quoth he) “ ywis,”<sup>n</sup>

<sup>m</sup> *it mistreth not to tell.*] It signifies not, it needs not; Ital. *mestiere*, need, occasion. UPON. Properly, “it skilleth not to tell.” C.

<sup>n</sup> *That shall I you recount, (quoth he) ywis.*] The tale of the Squire of Dames is a [brief] copy of the Host’s tale in Ariosto, C. xxviii. T. WARTON. “Ywis” is certainly: see this vol. p. 92. C.



So be ye pleas'd to pardon all amis.  
That gentle Lady whom I love and serve,  
After long suit and wearie servicis,  
Did aske me, how I could her love deserve,  
And how she might be sure that I would never swerve?

54.

" I, glad by any meanes her grace to gaine,  
Badd her commaund my life to save or spill.  
Eftsoones she badd me, with incessaunt paine  
To wander through the world abroad at will,  
And every where, where with my power or skill  
I might doe service unto gentle Dames,  
That I the same should faithfully fulfill;  
And at the twelve monethes end should bring their  
names

And pledges, as the spoiles of my victorious games.

55.

" So well I to faire Ladies service did,  
And found such favour in their loving hartes,  
That ere the yeare his course had compassid,  
Thre hundred pledges for my good desartes,  
And thrice thre hundred thanks for my good partes,  
I with me brought, and did to her present:  
Which when she saw, more bent to eke my smartes  
Then to reward my trusty true intent,  
She gan for me devise a grievous punishment.

56.

" To weet, that I my travaill should resume,  
And with like labour walke the world arownd,  
Ne ever to her presence should presume,  
Till I so many other Dames had fownd,  
The which, for all the suit I could propownd,  
Would me refuse their pledges to afford,  
But did abide for ever chaste and fownd."  
" Ah! gentle Squyre," (quoth he) " tell at one word,



How many fownd'st thou such to put in thy record?"

57.

"In deed, Sir knight," (said he) "one word may tell  
All that I ever fownd so wisely stayd,  
For onely three they were disposd so well;  
And yet three yeares I now abroad have strayd,  
To fynd them out." "Mote I," (then laughing sayd  
The knight) "inquire of thee what were those three,  
The which thy proffred curtesie denyd?  
Or ill they seemed sure avizd to bee,  
Or brutishly brought up, that nev'r did fashions see."

58.

"The first which then refused me," (said hee)  
"Certes was but a common Courtisane;  
Yet flat refusd to have adoe with mee,  
Because I could not give her many a Jane."<sup>o</sup>  
(Thereat full hartely laughed Satyrane.)  
"The second was an holy Nunne to chose,  
Which would not let me be her Chappellane,  
Because she knew, she sayd, I would disclose  
Her counsell, if she should her trust in me repose.

59.

"The third a Damzell was of low degree,  
Whom I in countrey cottage fownd by chaunce:  
Full litle weened I that chasteitee  
Had lodging in so meane a maintenaunce;  
Yet was she fayre, and in her countenaunce

---

<sup>o</sup> *give her many a Jane.*] So Chaucer, "Rime of Sir Topas," v. 3242: "That cost many a *jane*." Many a *jane*, i.e. "much money." Skinner informs us that *jane* is a *coin of Genoa*; and Speght, in his Glossary to Chaucer, interprets "*jane*" *half-pence of Janua* [Genoa]. Chaucer sometimes uses it as a coin of little value; as, "Dear enough a *jane*," "Cl. of Oxenford's Tale," v. 2020, and in other places. Stow has given an account of these *half-pence* [also called "Gallye halfe pence"] at large, "Survey of London," p. 97, edit. 1599, 4to. T. WARTON.



Dwelt simple truth in seemely fashion.  
Long thus I woo'd her with due observaunce,  
In hope unto my pleasure to have won;  
But was as far at last, as when I first begon.

60.

“ Safe her, I never any woman found  
That chastity did for it selfe embrace,  
But were for other causes firme and found;  
Either for want of handsome time and place,  
Or else for feare of shame and fowle disgrace.<sup>p</sup>  
Thus am I hopelesse ever to attaine  
My Ladies love in such a desperate case,  
But all my dayes am like to waste in vaine,  
Seeking to match the chaste with th' unchaste Ladies  
    traine.”

61.

“ Perdy,” (sayd Satyrane) “ thou Squyre of Dames,  
Great labour fondly hast thou hent in hand,  
To get small thankes, and therewith many blames,  
That may emongst Alcides labours stand.”  
Thence backe returning to the former land,  
Where late he left the Beast he overcame,  
He found him not; for he had broke his band,  
And was returnd againe unto his Dame,  
To tell what tydings of fayre Florimell became.

---

<sup>p</sup> *Or else for feare of shame and fowle disgrace.*] In Marston's copy of the 4to. 1590 some person had written in the margin, “ I am of his mind;” which Marston satirically subscribed *quis non?* In the next stanza the letter *k* had dropped out in the word “ backe.” C.





## CANTO VIII.

*The Witch creates a snowy Lady  
like to Florimell;  
Who wrong'd by Carle, by Proteus sav'd,  
is sought by Paridell.*

I.



O oft as I this history record,  
My heart doth melt with meere com-  
passion,  
To thinke how causelesse, of her owne  
accord,  
This gentle Damzell, whom I write upon,  
Should plunged be in such affliction  
Without all hope of comfort or reliefe;  
That sure, I weene, the hardest hart of stone  
Would hardly finde to aggravate her grieve;  
For misery craves rather mercy then reprieve.

2.

But that accursed Hag, her hostesse late,  
Had so enranckled her malicious hart,  
That she desyrd th' abridgement of her fate,  
Or long enlargement of her painefull smart.  
Now when the Beast, which by her wicked art  
Late foorth she sent, she backe retourning spyde  
Tyde with her golden girdle;<sup>a</sup> it a part

---

<sup>a</sup> *Tyde with her golden girdle.*] So the first edition reads; the rest



Of her rich spoiles whom he had earst destroyd  
She weend, and wondrous gladnes to her hart applyde.

3.

And, with it ronning hast'ly to her sonne,  
Thought with that sight him much to have reliv'd;  
Who, thereby deeming sure the thing as donne,  
His former griefe with furie fresh reviv'd  
Much more then earst, and would have algates riv'd  
The hart out of his brest: for sith her dedd  
He surely dempt, himselfe he thought depriv'd  
Quite of all hope wherewith he long had fedd  
His foolish malady, and long time had misledd.

4.

With thought whereof exceeding mad he grew,  
And in his rage his mother would have flaine,  
Had she not fled into a secret mew,  
Where she was wont her Sprighthes to entertaine,  
The maisters of her art: there was she faine  
To call them all in order to her ayde,  
And them conjure, upon eternall paine,  
To counsell her, so carefully dismayd,  
How she might heale her sonne whose senses were decayd.

5.

By their device,<sup>b</sup> and her owne wicked wit,  
She there deviz'd a wondrous worke to frame,  
Whose like on earth was never framed yit;  
That even Nature selfe envide the same,  
And grudg'd to see the counterfet should shame  
The thing it selfe: In hand she boldly tooke  
To make another like the former Dame,

---

read, "her *broken* girdle." But, as Mr. Upton observes, "this famous girdle was loosed from Florimel, yet not *broken*, as the reader may see particularly from F. Q. iv. iv. 15, and the following canto, where the ladies try to gird themselves with this chaste, unbroken, and golden zone." Todd. Yet see "for he had *broke* his band," C. vii. St. 61. C.

<sup>b</sup> *By their device.*] So the 4to. 1590, which there can be no pretext for altering to *advice*, as it stands in subsequent impressions. C.



Another Florimell, in shape and looke  
So lively and so like, that many it mistooke.

6.

The substance, whereof she the body made,  
Was purest snow in massy mould congeald,  
Which she had gathered in a shady glade  
Of the Riphœan hils, to her reveald  
By errant Sprights, but from all men conceald :  
The same she tempred with fine Mercury  
And virgin wax that never yet was seald,  
And mingled them with perfect vermily ;  
That like a lively sanguine it seemd to the eye.

7.

In stead of eyes two burning lampes she set  
In silver sockets, shyning like the skyes,  
And a quicke moving Spirit did arret<sup>c</sup>  
To stirre and roll them like to womens eyes :<sup>d</sup>  
In stead of yellow lockes she did devyse  
With golden wyre to weave her curled head ;  
Yet golden wyre was not so yellow thryse  
As Florimells fayre heare : and, in the stead  
Of life, she put a Spright to rule the carcas dead ;

8.

A wicked Spright, yfraught with fawning guyle  
And fayre resemblance above all the rest,  
Which with the Prince of Darkenes fell somewhyle  
From heavens blis and everlasting rest :  
Him needed not instruct which way were best  
Him selfe to fashion likest Florimell,  
Ne how to speake, ne how to use his gest ;

---

<sup>c</sup> *Spirit did arret.*] *Appoint*, Fr. *arrester*. Thus "*arrester un jour*" is a French phrase, to *appoint* a day. See also Cotgrave's Fr. Dict. in v. *Arrester*. TODD. See likewise this vol. p. 289. C.

<sup>d</sup> *like to womens eyes.*] So the first edition reads. The second edition, and the folios, read, "like a woman's eyes." TODD.



For he in counterfesaunce did excell,  
And all the wyles of wemens wits knew passing well.

9.

Him shaped thus she deckt in garments gay,  
Which Florimell had left behind her late;  
That who so then her saw would surely say  
It was her selfe whom it did imitate,  
Or fayrer then her selfe, if ought algate  
Might fayrer be. And then she forth her brought  
Unto her sonne that lay in feeble state;  
Who seeing her gan streight upstart, and thought  
She was the Lady selfe whom he so long had fought.\*

10.

Tho fast her clipping twixt his armes twayne,  
Extremely joyed in so happy sight,  
And soone forgot his former sickely payne:  
But she, the more to seeme such as she hight,  
Coyly rebutted his embracement light;  
Yet still, with gentle countenance, retain'd  
Enough to hold a foole in vaine delight.  
Him long she so with shadowes entertain'd,  
As her Creatresse had in charge to her ordain'd.

11.

Till on a day, as he disposed was  
To walke the woodes with that his Idole faire,  
Her to disport and idle time to pas  
In th' open freshnes of the gentle aire,  
A knight that way there chaunced to repaire;  
Yet knight he was not, but a boastfull swaine  
That deedes of armes had ever in despaire,  
Proud Braggadocchio, that in vaunting vaine  
His glory did repose, and credit did maintaine.

---

\* *whom he so long had fought.*] It is "*who* he long had fought" only in the 4to. 1590, and perhaps Spenser so wrote. C.



12.

He, seeing with that Chorle so faire a wight,  
Decked with many a costly ornament,  
Much merveiled thereat, as well he might,  
And thought that match a fowle disparagement:  
His bloody speare eftesoones he boldly bent  
Against the filly clowne, who dead through feare  
Fell streight to ground in great astonishment.  
“Villein,” (sayd he) “this Lady is my deare;  
Dy, if thou it gaine say: I will away her beare.”

13.

The fearefull Chorle durst not gaine say nor dooe,  
But trembling stood, and yielded him the pray;  
Who, finding litle leasure her to wooe,  
On Tromparts steed her mounted without stay,  
And without reskew led her quite away.  
Proud man himselfe then Braggadochio deem'd,  
And next to none after that happy day,  
Being possessed of that spoyle, which seem'd  
The fairest wight on ground, and most of men esteem'd.

14.

But, when hee saw him selfe free from poursute,  
He gan make gentle purpose to his Dame  
With termes of love and lewdnesse dissolute;  
For he could well his glozing speeches frame  
To such vaine uses that him best became:  
But she thereto would lend but light regard,  
As seeming fory that she ever came  
Into his powre, that used her so hard  
To reave her honor, which she more then life prefard.

15.

Thus as they two of kindnes treated long,  
There them by chaunce encountred on the way  
An armed knight upon a courser strong,  
Whose trampling feete upon the hollow lay



Seemed to thunder, and did nigh affray  
 That Capons corage : yet he looked grim,  
 And faynd to cheare his lady in difmay,  
 Who seemd for feare to quake in every lim,  
 And her to save from outrage meekely prayed him.

16.

Fiercely that straunger forward came ; and, nigh  
 Approching, with bold words and bitter threat  
 Bad that same boaster, as he mote, on high,  
 To leave to him that lady for excheat,<sup>f</sup>  
 Or bide him batteill without further treat.  
 That challenge did too peremptory seeme,  
 And fild his senses with abashment great ;  
 Yet seeing nigh him jeopardy extreme,  
 He it dissembled well, and light seemd to esteeme ;

17.

Saying, “ Thou foolish knight, that weenst with words  
 To steale away that I with blowes have wonne,  
 And brought throgh points of many perilous fwords :  
 But if thee list to see thy Courser ronne,  
 Or prove thy selfe, this sad encounter shonne,  
 And seeke els without hazard of thy hedd.”  
 At those proud words that other knight begonne  
 To wax exceeding wroth, and him aredd  
 To turne his steede about, or sure he should be dedd.

18.

“ Sith then,” (saide Braggadochio) “ needes thou wilt  
 Thy daies abridge through prooffe of puissaunce,  
 Turne we our steeds ; that both in equall tilt  
 May meete againe, and each take happy chaunce.”  
 This saide, they both a furlongs mountenaunce  
 Retird their steeds, to ronne in even race ;

---

<sup>f</sup> *that lady for excheat.*] As an *eschear* ; as his right, who was lord  
 of the manor, and true owner of all strayed fair ladies. UPTON.



But Braggadochio, with his bloody launce,  
Once having turnd, no more returnd his face,  
But lefte his love to losse, and fled him selfe apace.

19.

The knight, him seeing flie, had no regard  
Him to poursew, but to the lady rode;  
And having her from Trompart lightly reard,  
Upon his Courser sett the lovely lode,  
And with her fled away without abode.  
Well weened he, that fairest Florimell  
It was with whom in company he yode,  
And so her selfe did alwaies to him tell;  
So made him thinke him selfe in heven, that was in hell.

20.

But Florimell her selfe was far away,  
Driven to great distresse by fortune straunge,  
And taught the carefull Mariner to play,  
Sith late mischaunce had her compeld to chaunge  
The land for sea, at randon there to raunge:  
Yett there that cruell Queene avengereffe,  
Not satisfyde so far her to estraunge  
From courtly blis and wonted happinesse,  
Did heape on her new waves of weary wretchednesse.

21.

For being fled into the fishers bote  
For refuge from the Monsters cruelty,  
Long so she on the mighty maine did flote,  
And with the tide drove forward carelesly;  
For th' ayre was milde and cleared was the skie,  
And all his windes dan Aeolus did keepe  
From stirring up their stormy enmity,  
As pittying to see her waile and weepe:  
But all the while the fisher did securely sleepe.

22.

At last when, droncke with drowfinesse, he woke,  
And saw his drover drive along the streame,



He was dismayd ; and thrise his brest he stroke,  
 For marveill of that accident extreame :  
 But when he saw that blazing beauties beame,  
 Which with rare light his bote did beautifye,  
 He marveild more, and thought he yet did dreame  
 Not well awakte ; or that some extasye  
 Affotted had his fence, or dazed was his eye.

23.

But when her well avizing hee perceiv'd  
 To be no vision nor fantasticke sight,  
 Great comfort of her presence he conceiv'd,  
 And felt in his old corage new delight  
 To gin awake, and stir his frosen spright :  
 Tho rudely askte her, how she thether came ?  
 " Ah !" (sayd she) " father, I note read aright  
 What hard misfortune brought me to this fame ;  
 Yet am I glad that here I now in safety ame.

24.

" But thou, good man, sith far in sea we bee,  
 And the great waters gin apace to swell,  
 That now no more we can the mayn-land see,  
 Have care, I pray, to guide the cock-bote well,  
 Least worse on sea then us on land befell."  
 Thereat th' old man did nought but fondly grin,  
 And saide his boat the way could wisely tell ;  
 But his deceitfull eyes did never lin  
 To looke on her faire face and marke her snowy skin.

25.

The sight whereof in his congealed flesh  
 Infixt such secrete sting of greedy lust,  
 That the drie withered stocke it gan refresh,  
 And kindled heat that soone in flame forth brust :  
 The driest wood is soonest burnt to dust.  
 Rudely to her he lept, and his rough hond<sup>s</sup>

---

<sup>s</sup> and his rough bond.] "Hond" rhymes with "withstond" and



Where ill became him rashly would have thrust;  
 But she with angry scorne did him withstond,  
 And shamefully reprov'd for his rudenes fond.

26.

But he, that never good nor maners knew,  
 Her sharpe rebuke full litle did esteeme;  
 Hard is to teach an old horse amble trew:  
 The inward smoke, that did before but steeme,  
 Broke into open fire and rage extreme;  
 And now he strength gan adde unto his will,  
 Forcyng to doe that did him fowle misseeme.  
 Beastly he threwe her downe, ne car'd to spill  
 Her garments gay with scales of fish that all did fill.

27.

The filly virgin strove him to withstand  
 All that she might, and him in vaine revild:  
 Shee strugled strongly both with foote and hand  
 To save her honor from that villaine vilde,  
 And cride to heven, from humane help exild.  
 O! ye brave knights, that boast this Ladies love,  
 Where be ye now, when she is nigh defild  
 Of filthy wretch? well may she you reprove  
 Of falsehood or of slouth, when most it may behove.

28.

But if that thou, Sir Satyran, didst weete,  
 Or thou, Sir Peridure, her fory state,  
 How soone would yee assemble many a fleete,  
 To fetch from sea that ye at land lost late!  
 Towres, citties, kingdomes, ye would ruinate  
 In your avengement and despiteous rage,  
 Ne ought your burning fury mote abate;

---

“fond,” but it is misspelt *band* in the old copies: the broad pronunciation of the letter *a*, in such words as “hand,” “band,” &c. led to the confusion; and to this day the legal orthography of *band* is “bond.” C.



But if Sir Calidore could it presage,  
No living creature could his cruelty assuage.

29.

But sith that none of all her knights is nye,  
See how the heavens, of voluntary grace  
And soveraine favor towards chastity,  
Doe succor send to her distressed cace:  
So much high God doth innocence embrace.  
It fortun'd, whilst thus she stifly strove,  
And the wide sea importuned long space  
With shrilling shriekes, Proteus abroad did rove,  
Along the fomy waves driving his finny drove.

30.

Proteus is Shepheard of the seas of yore,  
And hath the charge of Neptunes mighty heard;  
An aged fire with head all frowy hore,<sup>h</sup>  
And sprinckled frost upon his deawy beard:  
Who when those pittifull outcries he heard  
Through all the seas so ruefully resound,  
His charett swifte in hast he thether steard,  
Which with a teeme of scaly Phocas bound  
Was drawne upon the waves that fomed him arownd.

31.

And comming to that Fishers wandring bote,  
That went at will withouten card or fayle,  
He therein saw that yrkesome fight, which smote  
Deepe indignation and compassion frayle  
Into his hart attonce: streight did he hayle  
The greedy villein from his hoped pray,  
Of which he now did very little fayle,

---

<sup>h</sup> *all frowy hore.*] All *mossy* hoar; for so E. K. interprets *frowie*,  
"The Shep. Cal." July, ver. 111. Where, see the notes [vol i. p. 84].  
The folios have here converted the poet's word into *frory*. Todd.  
We have *frory* in St. 35: but Spenser's epithet might be "*snowy* hore;"  
the old printer having again mistaken the long *f* for *f*. C.



And with his staffe, that drives his heard astray,  
Him bett so fore, that life and sence did much dismay.

32.

The whiles the pitteous Lady up did ryse,  
Ruffled and fowly raid with filthy foyle,  
And blubbred face with teares of her faire eyes:  
Her heart nigh broken was with weary toyle,  
To save her selfe from that outrageous spoyle;  
But when she looked up, to weet what wight  
Had her from so infamous fact assoyld,<sup>i</sup>  
For shame, but more for feare of his grim fight,  
Downe in her lap she hid her face, and lowdly shrigh<sup>k</sup>t.

33.

Her selfe not saved yet from daunger dredd  
She thought, but chaung'd from one to other feare:  
Like as a fearefull partridge, that is fledd  
From the sharpe hauke which her attached neare,  
And fals to ground to seeke for succor theare,  
Whereas the hungry Spaniells she does spy  
With greedy jawes her ready for to teare:  
In such distresse and sad perplexity  
Was Florimell, when Proteus she did see her by.<sup>l</sup>

34.

But he endeavored with speeches milde  
Her to recomfort, and accourage bold,  
Bidding her feare no more her foeman vilde,  
Nor doubt himselfe; and who he was her told:  
Yet all that could not from affright her hold,

<sup>i</sup> *Had her from so infamous fact assoyld.*] So all the editions. The rhyme requires *assoyle*, and I should suppose Spenser gave,

“*Did her from so infamous fact assoyle.*” CHURCH.

<sup>k</sup> *and lowdly shrigh<sup>t</sup>.*] Spenser uses “*shrigh<sup>t</sup>*” both as the past tense of the verb to *shriek*, and as a substantive. C.

<sup>l</sup> *she did see her by.*] So the first edition perspicuously reads. The second reads, *thereby*. TODD. The inversion was not understood: “*she did see her by*” is, *she did see by her*, or *near her*. C.



Ne to recomfort her at all prevayld ;  
For her faint hart was with the frosen cold  
Benumbd so inly, that her wits nigh fayld,  
And all her fences with abashment quite were quayld.

35.

Her up betwixt his rugged hands he reard,  
And with his frory lips full softly kist,  
Whiles the cold yfickles from his rough beard  
Dropped adowne upon her yvory brest :  
Yet he him selfe so busily addrest,  
That her out of astonishment he wrought ;  
And out of that same fishers filthy nest  
Removing her, into his charet brought,  
And there with many gentle termes her faire besought.

36.

But that old leachour, which with bold assault  
That beautie durst presume to violate,  
He cast to punish for his hainous fault :  
Then tooke he him, yet trembling fith of late,  
And tyde behind his charet, to aggrate  
The virgin whom he had abusde so fore ;  
So drag'd him through the waves in scornfull state,  
And after cast him up upon the shore ;  
But Florimell with him unto his bowre he bore.

37.

His bowre is in the bottom of the maine,  
Under a mightie rocke, gainst which doe rave  
The roring billowes in their proud disdaine,  
That with the angry working of the wave  
Therein is eaten out an hollow cave,  
That seemes rough Masons hand with engines keene  
Had long while laboured it to engrave :  
There was his wonne ; ne living wight was seene  
Save one old Nymph, hight Panope, to keepe it cleane.



38.

Thether he brought the fory Florimell,  
And entertained her the best he might,  
And Panope her entertained eke well,  
As an immortall mote a mortall wight,  
To winne her liking unto his delight:  
With flattering wordes he sweetly wooed her,  
And offered faire guiftes t' allure her fight;  
But she both offers and the offerer  
Despyfde, and all the fawning of the flatterer.

39.

Dayly he tempted her with this or that,  
And never suffred her to be at rest;  
But evermore she him refused flat,  
And all his fained kindnes did detest,  
So firmly she had sealed up her brest.  
Sometimes he boasted that a God he hight,  
But she a mortall creature loved best:  
Then he would make him selfe a mortall wight;  
But then she said she lov'd none, but a Faery knight.

40.

Then like a Faerie knight him selfe he drest,  
For every shape on him he could endew;  
Then like a king he was to her exprest,  
And offred kingdoms unto her in vew,  
To be his Leman and his Lady trew:  
But when all this he nothing saw prevaile,  
With harder meanes he cast her to subdew,  
And with sharpe threatens her often did assayle;  
So thinking for to make her stubborne corage quayle.

41.

To dreadfull shapes he did him selfe transforme;  
Now like a Gyaunt; now like to a feend;  
Then like a Centaure; then like to a storme  
Raging within the waves: thereby he weend



Her will to win unto his wished eend ;  
 But when with feare, nor favour, nor with all  
 He els could doe, he saw him felfe esteemd,  
 Downe in a Doungeon deepe he let her fall,  
 And threatned there to make her his eternall thrall.

42.

Eternall thraldome was to her more liefem  
 Then losse of chaſtitie, or chaunge of love :  
 Dye had ſhe rather in tormenting grieve  
 Then any ſhould of falſeneſſe her reprove,  
 Or looſenes, that ſhe lightly did remove.  
 Moſt vertuous virgin ! glory be thy meed,  
 And crowne of heavenly prayſe with Saintes above,  
 Where moſt ſweet hymmes of this thy famous deed  
 Are ſtill emongſt them ſong, that far my rymes exceed.

43.

Fit ſong of Angels caroled to bee !  
 But yet whatſo my feeble Muſe can frame  
 ſhalbe t' advance thy goodly chaſtitee,  
 And to enroll thy memorable name  
 In th' heart of every honourable Dame,  
 That they thy vertuous deedes may imitate,  
 And be partakers of thy endleſſe fame.  
 Yt yrkes me leave thee in this wofull ſtate,  
 To tell of Satyrane where I him left of late.

44.

Who having ended with that Squyre of Dames  
 A long diſcourſe of his adventures vayne,  
 The which himſelfe then Ladies more defames,  
 And finding not th' Hyena to be ſlayne,  
 With that ſame Squyre retourned back againe  
 To his firſt way. And, as they forward went,

---

<sup>m</sup> *was to her more lief.*] It is ſcarcely neceſſary to remind the reader that “ lief ” means *dear* : thraldom was more dear, or more welcome, than loſs of chaſtity. See this vol. p. 8, &c. C.



They spyde a knight fayre pricking on the playne,  
As if he were on some adventure bent,  
And in his port appeared manly hardiment.

45.

Sir Satyrane him towardes did addresse,  
To weet what wight he was, and what his quest;  
And, comming nigh, eftsoones he gan to gesse,  
Both by the burning hart which on his brest  
He bare, and by the colours in his crest,  
That Paridell it was. Tho to him yode,  
And him saluting as befeemed best,  
Gan first inquire of tydings farre abroad;  
And afterwardes on what adventure now he rode.

46.

Who thereto answering said: "The tydings bad,  
Which now in Faery court all men doe tell,  
Which turned hath great mirth to mourning fad,  
Is the late ruine of proud Marinell,  
And suddein parture of faire Florimell  
To find him forth: and after her are gone  
All the brave knightes that doen in armes excell  
To savegard her ywandred all alone:  
Emongst the rest my lott (unworthy) is to be one."

47.

"Ah! gentle knight," (said then Sir Satyrane)  
"Thy labour all is lost, I greatly dread,  
That hast a thanklesse service on thee ta'ne,  
And offrest sacrifice unto the dead:  
For dead, I surely doubt,<sup>n</sup> thou maist aread

---

<sup>n</sup> *For dead, I surely doubt.*] So all the old copies; but Upton very plausibly suggested that we ought to read, "For dead, I *forely* doubt." So in Shakespeare's "Richard III." A. iii. Sc. 7, we find "*fore*" misprinted *sure*. Buckingham ought to tell the citizens—"But *fore* I fear we shall not win him to it." See "Shakespeare," 1858, vol. iv. p. 299. It merits note that Drayton, in his copy of the folio 1611, did not alter



Henceforth for ever Florimell to bee ;  
That all the noble knights of Maydenhead,  
Which her ador'd, may fore repent with mee,  
And all faire Ladies may for ever fory bee."

48.

Which wordes when Paridell had heard, his hew  
Gan greatly chaung, and seemd dismaid to bee ;  
Then sayd : " Fayre Sir, how may I weene it trew,  
That ye doe tell in such uncerteintee ?  
Or speake ye of report, or did ye see  
Just cause of dread, that makes ye doubt so fore ?  
For, perdie, elles how mote it ever bee,  
That ever hand should dare for to engore  
Her noble blood ? The heavens such crueltie abhore."

49.

" These eyes did see that they will ever rew  
To have seene," (quoth he) " when as a monstrous beast  
The Palfrey whereon she did travell flew,  
And of his bowels made his bloody feast :  
Which speaking token sheweth at the least  
Her certeine losse, if not her sure decay :  
Besides, that more suspicion encreast,  
I found her golden girdle cast astray,  
Distaynd with dirt and blood, as relique of the pray."

50.

" Ah me !" (said Paridell) " the signes be fadd ;  
And, but God turne the same to good sooth say,  
That Ladies safetie is fore to be dradd :  
Yet will I not forsake my forward way,  
Till triall doe more certeine truth bewray."  
" Faire Sir," (qd. he) " well may it you succeed ;  
Ne long shall Satyrane behind you stay,

---

"surely" to *soresly*, but placed a cross in his margin, as if to indicate some objection to the line. See also the next stanza. C.



But to the rest, which in this Quest proceed,  
My labour adde, and be partaker of their speed."

51.

"Ye noble knights," (saide then the Squyre of Dames)  
"Well may yee speede in so praiseworthy payne!  
But sith the Sunne now ginnes to flake his beames  
In deawy vapours of the westerne mayne,  
And lose the teme out of his weary wayne,  
Mote not mislike you also to abate  
Your zealous hast, till morrow next againe  
Both light of heven and strength of men relate :<sup>o</sup>  
Which if ye please, to yonder castle turne your gate."

52.

That counsell pleased well : so all yfere  
Forth marched to a Castle them before ;  
Where soone arrayving they restrained were  
Of ready entraunce, which ought evermore  
To errant knights be commune : wondrous fore  
Thereat displeas'd they were, till that young Squyre  
Gan them informe the cause, why that same dore  
Was shut to all which lodging did desyre :  
The which to let you weet will further time requyre.

---

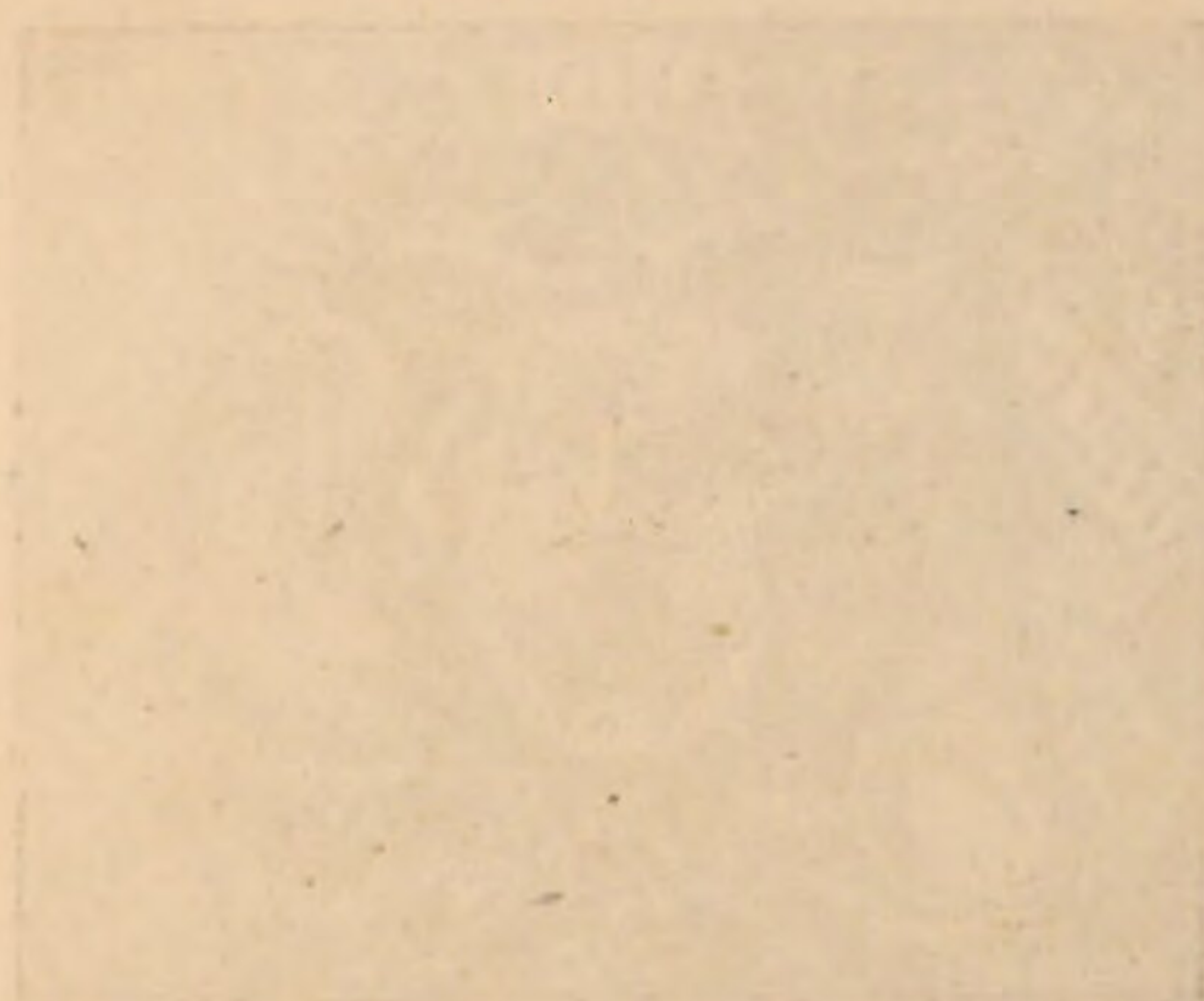
<sup>o</sup> *and strength of men relate.*] Virgil, *Æn.* xi. 182 :—

"Aurora interea miseris mortalibus almam

"Extulerat lucem *referens* opera atque labores."

This verse Spenser had in view ; *referens*, bringing back again : and because *referre* signifies both to *bring back* and to *relate*, he takes the liberty, which jingling rhyme must sometimes excuse, of using *relate* for to *bring back again*. UPTON.



























Spenser, Edmund,

The Works of Edmund Spenser

Bd.: 2

London (1862)

P.o.angl. 394 ib-2

urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10750279-7